

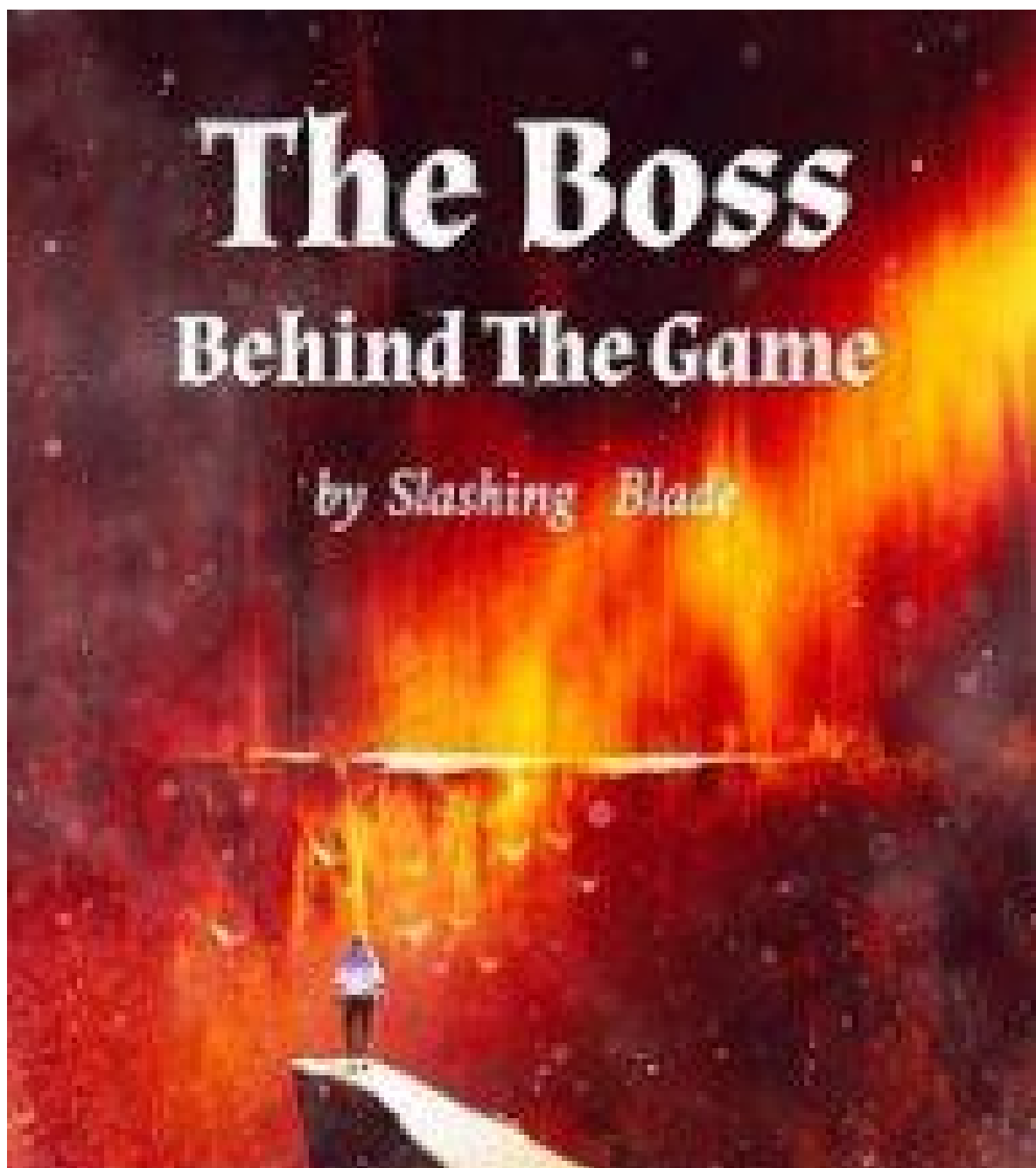
# The Boss

## Behind The Game

by Slashing Blade

# **The Boss Behind The Game**

*Slashing Blade*





Source: <https://boxnovel.com/novel/the-boss-behind-the-game>

Generated by [Lightnovel Crawler](#)

# The Boss Behind The Game Chapter 1-100

## 1. [Volume 1](#)

1. [Chapter 1](#)
2. [Chapter 2](#)
3. [Chapter 3](#)
4. [Chapter 4](#)
5. [Chapter 5](#)
6. [Chapter 6](#)
7. [Chapter 7](#)
8. [Chapter 8](#)
9. [Chapter 9](#)
10. [Chapter 10](#)
11. [Chapter 11](#)
12. [Chapter 12](#)
13. [Chapter 13](#)
14. [Chapter 14](#)
15. [Chapter 15](#)
16. [Chapter 16](#)
17. [Chapter 17](#)
18. [Chapter 18](#)
19. [Chapter 19](#)
20. [Chapter 20](#)
21. [Chapter 21](#)
22. [Chapter 22](#)
23. [Chapter 23](#)
24. [Chapter 24](#)
25. [Chapter 25](#)
26. [Chapter 26](#)
27. [Chapter 27](#)
28. [Chapter 28](#)
29. [Chapter 29](#)
30. [Chapter 30](#)
31. [Chapter 31](#)
32. [Chapter 32](#)
33. [Chapter 33](#)

34. [Chapter 34](#)
35. [Chapter 35](#)
36. [Chapter 36](#)
37. [Chapter 37](#)
38. [Chapter 38](#)
39. [Chapter 39](#)
40. [Chapter 40 - Building An Instance Dungeon](#)
41. [Chapter 41 - The Stone Coffins In The Naraka Realm](#)
42. [Chapter 42 - Fire Gobbling Dragon](#)
43. [Chapter 43 - The Guild Tournament](#)
44. [Chapter 44 - Predestined Archery\\_\(Part I\)](#)
45. [Chapter 45 - Predestined Archery\\_\(Part Ii\)](#)
46. [Chapter 46 - The War Is Coming](#)
47. [Chapter 47 - The Immortal Bird](#)
48. [Chapter 48 - Ao Jian](#)
49. [Chapter 49 - Demonic Sage Of Ten Swords](#)
50. [Chapter 50 - The Cultivator](#)
51. [Chapter 51 - Do You Play Battle Online, Too, Master?](#)
52. [Chapter 52 - Qi Ming Returning To The World](#)
53. [Chapter 53 - The Battle Of Cultivators](#)
54. [Chapter 54 - The Law Of Reincarnation](#)
55. [Chapter 55 - Christmas Battle](#)
56. [Chapter 56 - Sacrifice And Madness](#)
57. [Chapter 57 - The Returning Comrades](#)
58. [Chapter 58 - Destiny Is Incredible!](#)
59. [Chapter 59 - Annals Of Great Battles](#)
60. [Chapter 60 - New Expansion Pack \(Ferocious Waves\)](#)
61. [Chapter 61 - Warship Moira](#)
62. [Chapter 62 - The Fisherman Laboring For Money On Livestream](#)
63. [Chapter 63 - A Misfortune Might Be A Blessing In Disguise](#)
64. [Chapter 64 - : The New Year'S Event](#)
65. [Chapter 65 - Wood Spirit Clan](#)
66. [Chapter 66 - Players' Dyeing Vat Of Influence](#)
67. [Chapter 67 - New Year'S Eve](#)
68. [Chapter 68 - New Year'S Eve Countdown](#)
69. [Chapter 69 - New Year'S Day Treasure Hunt](#)
70. [Chapter 70 - The Cliffs Of Desperation](#)

71. [Chapter 71 - The Seal Of The King Of Beiqi](#)
72. [Chapter 72 - Demonic God\(Part 1\)](#)
73. [Chapter 73 - Demonic God \(Part 2\)](#)
74. [Chapter 74 - Do You Long For Power?](#)
75. [Chapter 75 - Hidden Quest](#)
76. [Chapter 76 - The Demonic God Vs. Hiderigami](#)
77. [Chapter 77 - The Superiority Of The Demonic God](#)
78. [Chapter 78 - The Great Emperor Of Dong Yue](#)
79. [Chapter 79 - : North Sea](#)
80. [Chapter 80 - Inheritance Of The Blood Seed](#)
81. [Chapter 81 - Five Elements Warlock](#)
82. [Chapter 82 - The Gillfish Clan](#)
83. [Chapter 83 - Mental Breakdown](#)
84. [Chapter 84 - Legend Of The Fallen Fish Island](#)
85. [Chapter 85 - The Distressed Gillfish Clan](#)
86. [Chapter 86 - The Expedition Of The Players](#)
87. [Chapter 87 - To Experience What We Went Through](#)
88. [Chapter 88 - Steal Hammer](#)
89. [Chapter 89 - An Manman](#)
90. [Chapter 90 - Tournament Collaboration](#)
91. [Chapter 91 - Son Of The Sea](#)
92. [Chapter 92 - Sea Spirit Body.](#)
93. [Chapter 93 - The Dark Emperor Code](#)
94. [Chapter 94 - These Days Are Unbearable](#)
95. [Chapter 95 - Counterattack By The Rock Ghost King](#)
96. [Chapter 96 - Special Spiritual Material Quest](#)
97. [Chapter 97 - Demolition Traders](#)
98. [Chapter 98 - Xiao Tian'S Request](#)
99. [Chapter 99 - The Excited Fool](#)
100. [Chapter 100 - Joint Operation](#)

# **Volume 1**

# Chapter 1

“Hold on a second, let me get this straight... you’re saying that one of my ancestors ruled over a piece of territory in the underworld, and became one of the twelve underworld monarchs? But since he’s no longer with us, that leaves me to be his successor?”

At the park in Indigo City, Lu Wu was looking at the serious Little Lolita who was sitting on the small wooden bench, his face distorted in confusion.

“Exactly, and since you are the successor, you should seek vengeance for your ancestor. After he passed, his former subordinates turned their backs on him, and they even divided up the land so that each one of them got a piece, robbing you of your inheritance!”

Lu Wu could not stop himself from laughing, “Little one, are you always like this? Have you ever had fun in your life? You remind me of myself when I was your age!”

“I’m not joking around, your ancestor really was the most powerful being in the underworld. In order to expand his territorial space until the entire underworld was his, he set out on a journey to create battle artifacts. Unfortunately, he had lost his life in the process. That’s why you have to carry on his legacy and become the Great Emperor of the Underworld!”

This time, Lu Wu sincerely nodded as he reached out his hand to massage the Little Lolita’s temples, “That said, would you like to help me in this quest and become my right hand man? When the time comes and we have conquered both the underworld and the heavens, we shall be the ruler of the three worlds!”

Little Lolita became extremely thrilled upon hearing Lu Wu’s words. Her face was flushed as she gazed hopefully at him, her head bobbing up and down excitedly.



“Great, now be a good girl and tell me where you live, and I’ll send you home first. I’ll give you a call when I’ve finished preparing my horsemen.”

Doubt was painted all over Little Lolita’s face, “Do you still not trust me?”

Lu Wu resolutely shook his head, “Of course I trust you, but I’ll have to call Emperor Qin to ask for a few dozen horsemen, then we shall set out for the underworld!”

As his words settled in, Little Lolita suddenly fetched a black object from her pocket and stuffed it into Lu Wu’s hand, “This is a Yin Talisman... once you have it, you can travel between Yin and Yang!”

It was a triangular-shaped talisman, and its texture felt like gold. There were even some sort of words carved into it, making it look exceptionally mysterious. Even Lu Wu had to look twice at it.

What followed left Lu Wu in shock, as before his eyes laid a black dot, which grew larger and larger rapidly. A force came from the inside, pulling him closer until he went through.

The feeling of weightlessness rushed through his bones, but just as Lu Wu was still at a complete loss, the end of the black portal suddenly appeared, then he was flung out of it and landed on the ground, buttocks first.

The sky was pitch-black, dark clouds whirled, and the blood moon hung high up in the sky, as blood-colored rain drizzled down onto the world.

The scene in front of him had convinced Lu Wu that he had in fact, went through into the underworld, which had been a myth all along.

He looked back and there was Little Lolita. His lips quivered as he mumbled softly, “The things you said were all true?”

Little Lolita pretentiously placed her hands on her hips and said, “Yes, all of it is true. This region belonged to your ancestor, it was given the name Beiqi, and it’s one of the twelve major regions in the underworld!”

Lu Wu believed her this time, as everything in front of him was just like what Little Lolita had said.

“Then I shall be His Excellency? The one and only ruler of the underworld?” This news was too good to be true. Lu Wu was having a hard time accepting it, but clearly there was no way he would reject such a great offer either.

“That’s right! You will be crowned the new ruler of Beiqi, but before that happens, you ought to work out how you should take back the land that is rightfully yours.”

As Lu Wu recalled what the Little Lolita had said before, about how the former subordinates had divided the territory after his ancestor had died, his focus suddenly sharpened as he said, “Of course, this is a must. Those troublemakers dare to betray my ancestor, they shall be disciplined. The question is, did my ancestor leave anything behind for me, like a unique remarkable feat or something?” Lu Wu was looking at her, his eyes filled with hope as he waited for her answer.

“Nope,” the Little Lolita shrugged.

“You have to know that, every being of the underworld requires time and practice to build up their foundation. Even if you had thousands of years of training, it would still be difficult for you to be on par with your ancestor,” replied Little Lolita honestly.

Lu Wu was taken aback, “Then do we have tens of thousands of horsemen, troops, armored horses, or anything of that sort?”

“Nope, nothing like that. Before your ancestor died, his subordinates had long double-crossed him. Aside from this palace, you’ve got nothing else.”

As she finished speaking, she pointed toward the palace which had burned down ages ago, and was now just an abandoned waste.

“Then I shall grab a gavel and take back what is mine!” Lu Wu’s face was now filled with outrage.

“No wait, you still have me!” Little Lolita announced with complacency as she placed her hands on her hips again.

Lu Wu’s eyes gleamed with hope when he heard this, “Then there’s no doubt that you are quite powerful!”

The Little Lolita shook her head and pouted, “I once fought with a ghost and I was almost gobbled up by it, it was a very dreadful experience!”

Lu Wu’s eyes darkened with indifference. This inheritance is actually just a Little Lolita that has zero fighting skills, not to mention that she’s a troublemaker in the underworld. It would have been right if she had gotten eaten.

Looking at the disappointment written all over his face, the Little Lolita laughed out loud as she fished out a ring from her pocket, “Your grandfather took his last breath when he was still working on those battle artifacts, but I helped him put the finishing touches, so rest assured that these artifacts are for you.”

Lu Wu took over the ring and was flabbergasted. A thin serene blue ray of light reflected from it when the light shone on it, “Is this stuff very powerful?”

The Little Lolita hurriedly nodded, “Yes, extremely. Try it on!”

Lu Wu anticipated what would come next. He wore the battle artifact on his index finger.

A ray of blue light appeared out of nowhere, shrouding Lu Wu’s entire body.

[Initiating battle artifact, scanning user’s identity...]

[Blood scan complete, user identified as descendant of Beiqi’s ruler, officially securing bond of artifact with user...]

Two messages suddenly appeared in Lu Wu’s mind, followed by a manual on battle artifacts.

## Chapter 2

The artifact was made by his ambitious ancestor to conquer the whole of the underworld. According to the instructions, the ring's greatest power was to create an army of undead made from Yin energy found in the underworld, which was not visible to the naked eye. They did not require any matter, but only the presence of spirits. Their bodies could be renewed, which was basically the definition of the undead.

However, in order to make countless Yin soldiers, there was a prerequisite for such power, and that was to have control over a certain number of spirits.

Lu Wu slowly pulled himself back to reality as he had zoned out for quite some time.

“So what do you think? Isn't it a marvelous invention?” asked Little Lolita, feeling pleased with herself.

“Actually, I'd like to know where we can find a bunch of spirits that can be spurred,” Lu Wu pointed out their main problem.

The Little Lolita was shocked when she heard those words, her body became rigid and her eyes were watery, “I... why didn't I think about that? Without any spirits, this artifact will not work at all!”

Lu Wu felt a headache coming as he watched Little Lolita cough up tears. Come to think of it, this ancestor was quite unreliable. The idea of the artifact isn't bad, as for its capabilities... but where on earth will we find a bunch of spirits!? It's completely impractical.

He reached out his hand to massage the Little Lolita's head, and as he opened his mouth to give her a few words of comfort, an idea suddenly flashed through his mind.

“Right, you are also the creator of this version of the artifact, correct?”

Little Lolita rubbed her puffy red eyes, nodding.

“Then is it possible for you to add some extra functions to it?”

Little Lolita lifted her head in confusion, clearly not understanding what he was implying.

Lu Wu took out the Yin Talisman which carried the power to travel between Yin and Yang, then dangled it in front of Little Lolita, saying, “Why don’t you add the function of this object into the artifact?”

“It’s not that difficult, but what’s the purpose?” Little Lolita sobbed spasmodically, as if trying to calm herself down.

Lu Wu smiled, “Don’t you know what I do for a living in the real world?”

As she listened, Little Lolita took out a small notebook from her pocket and flipped it open, “Lu Wu... 23 years old... born in the 365th generation... the descendant of the ruler of Beiqi... has begun an entrepreneurship for three years... currently still a loser... developed a gaming website which has zero users... a singleton to date...”

Lu Wu hurriedly cut her off, “You just have to know that I’m a game developer. So is it possible for you to give an upgrade to this artifact, say, to extradite criminals from earth to the underworld through virtual reality, like how gamers do. They’ll become our undead army, and as long as this is kept going, we shall have however many armies we want!”

The Little Lolita pondered deeply for a moment, then her eyes sparkled, “Great idea! Not to mention that what we’re using are their corpses, so we can form new Yin bodies from scratch, just like how the players respawn in a game.”

Lu Wu was astonished by her reaction, he never expected her to understand the whole picture in such a short time.

“Have you played games before?” asked Lu Wu sincerely.

“Ha! I am a loyal player of World of Warcraft for almost three hundred years now!” Little Lolita once again placed her hands on her hips.

Lu Wu blushed shamefully. Never would he have thought that this Little Lolita was so aged.

“But this task isn’t easy, we shall need a set of systems from a variety of games, such as role-playing, trading, adventure, life simulation, and more...” Lu Wu’s heart sank as he listed out the things they needed.

“You can count on me, this battle artifact shall not only have the power to create an undead army, but also have the ability to create all sorts of things from Yin energy and soul power, covering all the available items found in a typical game.”

“What’s soul power?” asked Lu Wu, his curiosity getting the better of him.

“Soul power has the ability to measure the strength of any beasts in the underworld, equivalent to measuring the willpower of a person who has been practicing. The soul power of every being will disperse after the host has died, and it is far more powerful than Yin energy.”

This filled Lu Wu with high hopes, “Then is it possible for our gamers to loot and absorb the soul power from a corpse after taking its life? If so, then wouldn’t our gamers have the chance to be up-leveled?”

“No problem!” Little Lolita patted her chest with confidence.

“However it would be nice if we could have a part of it to ourselves after our gamers have killed the creatures. This is because the soul power can speed up your training speed, not to mention it can help rebuild the kingdom of Beiqi. Lastly, it can act as a reward for all of our hard work!”

The Little Lolita’s suggestion had been what Lu Wu was planning to say all along, he cracked a smile and proposed, “What do you say we take 20% of it?”

“Let’s make it 30%!”

Both of them burst into laughter.

What's said would be done. After confirming the direction that they were heading, Bei Li, which was the Little Lolita's real name, brought Lu Wu to the royal palace, which was now a wasteland. She pulled open a scorched door right beside a charred pillar and a passage leading to the basement greeted them.

As Lu Wu was entering, he realized that the underground palace was quite spacious, just like a typical one.

There lay all kinds of ancient equipment. It looked as if it was some sort of laboratory.

From the Little Lolita's explanation, Lu Wu finally came to know that this was the very place his ancestor had done his research and development on the artifacts. As for Bei Li, she was the one and only helper of his ancestor, who stood by his research from the beginning to the very end.

As he stepped into the laboratory, Bei Li's look became serious. Lu Wu waited for her to change into a golden suit, which covered her entire body, then passed her the ring. She took it and got to work, pacing back and forth between equipment.

Lu Wu stared blankly at Bei Li as she switched from hammers to electric drills to brushes, testing all kinds of tools on the ring, doing all sorts of shamanistic stuff on it, chanting and reminiscing spells all the way.

After two hours of torment, Bei Li took off her golden helmet and passed the reformed ring to Lu Wu, feeling exhausted.

"This is it?" Lu Wu was having a hard time believing it.

"It wasn't too difficult to add those new functions to it. It now has a built-in server that can extradite gamers, and on top of that, it has its own database settings. Now we can finally put it into practice."

Lu Wu put on the ring skeptically, and the instructions of the artifact appeared once again.

Lu Wu was surprised to see its contents. This was exactly what he had wanted! Not only were the installments made by Bei Li much better than what he had in mind, she had even thought of the method to extradite players into the underworld.

This had left Lu Wu beaming with joy, “Your hard work has paid off!”

“Phew, I told you that I’m excellent! Let’s go and test it out!” Bei Li exclaimed excitedly, though still being worn out.

The new ideas and functions had brought hope to Bei Li, which in turn had changed her perspective toward Lu Wu. With the new functions she had added, she felt that Lu Wu would definitely be able to recreate the glory of the King of Beiqi.

“Yes, let’s go!”

As he said this, he reached out and tugged on Bei Li’s tiny hand.

The originally happy-go-lucky version of Bei Li was now replaced with a mature lady whose face was as red as a tomato. She struggled free from his grasp and ran to the side, “I’m going to change out of this laboratory suit, wait... wait for me!”

After a while of waiting, she finally came out with her black mini skirt on. The gothic Little Lolita version of Bei Li returned to Lu Wu’s side once again.

Lu Wu laughed secretly in his heart when he saw that she had been blushing. He held her hand once more and swiftly activated the newly added functions of the ring. Then they were off, traveling between Yin and Yang.

A maelstrom of darkness formed right in front of their eyes, but Lu Wu was no longer frightened by it. Instead he was willingly sucked into it.



# Chapter 3

He opened his eyes once more, and was greeted by the blazing sun that hung high up in the sky. Lu Wu subconsciously breathed in a mouthful of air from the world of the living, the encounter he had previously felt like a dream.

He looked down and saw that Bei Li was staring rather shyly at their hands which were interlocked together, and he smiled at this.

Lu Wu brought Bei Li back to his home in Indigo City. It was an apartment with three bedrooms, one living room, and one bathroom.

Although he lived alone, the place was spotless and there wasn't even the slightest mess in his bedroom.

He led Bei Li into his bedroom and switched on his computer, then loaded the little gaming site designed by him.

“Little one, can you connect the server you've installed to my gaming site?”

Bei Li nodded her head and climbed onto Lu Wu's chair, then started running her fingers on the keyboard. She pulled up the backend management system of his little gaming site, keyed in the coding of the artifact's server, and while she was at it, she specially added an image.

The image was a circle formation with words written on the inside, making it look extremely mysterious.

Bei Li pressed the enter button and gave a single nod, “Done!”

“It's that easy?” Lu Wu asked suspiciously.

“Yes, I have linked the server to this image, which shows the formation of spirit extradition. As long as the player downloads this little game of yours, which is actually just an empty nutshell, the content of the game will be

sent to the virtual reality headset of the player. Then, the image of the spirit extradition formation will automatically appear in the mind of the player, and his or her spirit will be sucked into the server. From there, it'll be sent straight to the underworld.”

Lu Wu was glad to have Bei Li on his side. With this secured plan, there was no way that the players would know that they were in the underworld, they would think that it was all part of the game.

In this generation where technology was advancing, and since the invention of the virtual reality headset, it has become a high demand for all of the game developer companies to constantly find ways to improve the details of the games.

As long as Lu Wu declared that the simulation of his game was near perfect, no one was going to dig up any problems at all.

“What name do you think I should give this game?” Lu Wu anticipated her reply.

Although he was the true creator of the game, he thought it was best to give the honor of naming it to Bei Li instead.

Bei Li was stunned by his request as she realized she was of much importance to Lu Wu.

“Then we shall name it after the artifact. Let's call it Battle Online. This was actually one of the wildest dreams of the ruler of Beiqi.”

Lu Wu agreed to her suggestion with a strong nod. He lifted her down from the chair, pulled up the backend management system, uploaded an icon for the game and typed in the words ‘Battle Online’ into the empty text box under the title line.

In a split second, Lu Wu's game had been successfully uploaded onto the internet platform.

In order to attract users, Lu Wu had posted that little game of his onto the main page of his website.

Then the two sat like ducks and waited.

An hour passed... two... and just like that three hours had gone by. Bei Li turned to look at Lu Wu and asked, “Why has no one tried to download it?”

Her question put Lu Wu in an awkward position, as he knew that the number of users that visited his website was poor.

Not to mention that a typical small-scale game would only take up tens or hundreds of gigabytes.

Some games that had more than half of all users took up space starting in the terabytes, however that little game of his only took up 800MB, and this first impression was not really appealing to users.

As he was deep in thought, Lu Wu once again pulled up the backend management system and added a few words to the introduction of the game.

“This game has been carefully developed by this website for a period of 10 years and has been tested multiple times, almost achieving a 100% positive feedback. This website clearly states that there is no charge for this game.”

Satisfied with his editing, Lu Wu and Bei Li once again went back to waiting.

One hour... two hours...

Just as the two were beginning to lose their patience, thinking that it was better to wrack their brains for yet another solution, the artifact suddenly blinked, followed by a message which popped up in Lu Wu’s mind.

[Ding! Player Wang Damang has registered into the battle server!]

As she read Lu Wu’s expression, Bei Li immediately grabbed hold of his hand and shut her eyes, searching for the appearance of the new player.

.....

10 minutes ago.

Wang Damang exited the game with a bored face and started the update for the game Atlantis.

Atlantis was currently the most popular game out there. The number of players was practically overflowing. It occupied 8% of the stock market. Its level of simulation has reached 55%. It was rich in content and had a very wide audience, where Wang Damang was one of the players.

After exiting the game, he went to grab some snacks from the fridge, then scrolled through his browser folder and randomly picked a website that featured small games. He decided to play around with them a bit before returning to his computer when the update had been completed.

Coincidentally, his pick landed on Lu Wu's website.

Wang Damang scanned through the website and saw that there were countless posts of game icons. Then, his eyes landed on the most appealing one posted on the main page, and clicked it.

“Pff! Ha! Ha!”

While Wang Damang was reading the introduction, he suddenly choked on his food and coughed it out.

A game of 800MB has reached almost 100% positive feedback, and this was confirmed by the website itself, not to mention the free entry.

Wang Damang's eyes widened, “The boss of this website must be so hungry for money that he's gone mad. He ought to add the fact that you can level up to Level 999 with just one swing of a sword while he's at it!”

He shook his head and was just about to exit the game when he suddenly stopped and recalled the recent news, urging people to report fraud in games.

There was something about a reward for issuing the report.

This made Wang Damang laugh out loud as he thought to examine the game thoroughly, then write a report regarding the matter and hand it in to the internet police.

With this, Wang Damang willingly pressed the button to download the game.

800MB was nothing compared to the current speed of the internet, it was only a matter of seconds before the download was complete. He stuffed the rest of the food into his mouth and put on his virtual reality headset and his set of gaming clothes.

A list of game icons appeared on the screen, which had all been downloaded and played by him.

He reached out his hand and swiped, skimming through the icons until he reached the one for Battle Online. Wang Damang smiled internally, fully preparing himself for the visual impact.

As the game started, the body of Wang Damang in the real world collapsed to the ground.

However, from his view, an icon of a formation appeared right before him and a feeling of weightlessness greeted him. When he finally opened his eyes, he was taken aback by the scene before him.

Under the glow of the red moon, blood-colored rain poured down on him. A gust of wind surrounded him, making him feel as if he was in hell.

Everything before his eyes was so realistic that Wang Damang had to pinch himself to make sure that he was not dreaming. Although he felt a slight pain from that, Wang Damang was still almost convinced that the place was real.

“How can this be, how can an 800MB game create such a realistic virtual world? Unless this game only features this very scene? But such a scene

would still take up more than 800MB of space!”

Wang Damang was stunned by the whole setting before him. He bent down and picked up a fallen leaf, examining its patterns. Unexpectedly, the graphics were so clear and detailed that it left him in a daze once more.

At that moment, the storyline that Bei Li had made up emerged before Wang Damang.

[When the greatest catastrophe of the past tens of thousands of years befell, His Excellency of the underworld, the King of Beiqi, came to resist the disasters and gave up his life to save billions of souls. Sadly, right after the ruler of Beiqi had passed, his subordinates turned their backs on the kingdom, splitting the land of Beiqi into separate territories. As the rightful heir to the throne of Beiqi, it is time for you to step into the light and go on a journey to reclaim glory for your ancestors!]

After the storyline faded away, another instruction came popping into his mind:

[Please choose your character class:]

Three templates of character classes surfaced before Wang Damang’s eyes.

A powerful warrior with an enormous sword, a mage with a staff, and an assassin with a dagger stood in front of him.

Wang Damang was stunned for a moment. Then, he reached out and chose the one with the assassin’s figure.

All of a sudden, a ray of light encircled the figure that had been chosen by Wang Damang, as if it was a flower that was gradually blooming. The figure came alive, like he was being resurrected from the dead, but then the dagger flew free from his grasp, hovering in circles around his body. The killing machine in him suddenly surfaced.

“I live for darkness, I serve for darkness... I carry the Grim Reaper’s scythe wherever I go... I bloom in death for eternity... I am a terminator!”

The voice coming from the figure was cold, leaving Wang Damang with his jaw dropped in shock, as if the person standing in front of him was real.

“This is really cool!”

# Chapter 4

According to Bei Li, the settings of the character class templates were similar to that of the distribution of soul power absorbed when the player kills a being from the underworld.

For instance, when the player has chosen a character class, say, a berserker, the soul power collected when a being is killed will increase the abilities of a player, mostly by their strength.

Same goes to Wang Damang. The terminator he has chosen mainly focuses on strength and agility.

After picking which character class to go with, the surrounding Yin energy merged to form a dagger and a rough cloth, which appeared magically on Wang Damang's body.

Although the new combat equipment was nothing fancy, they required no soul power to function. Lu Wu solely relied on the players to kill as many creatures from the underworld as possible to collect soul power.

Lu Wu's heart suddenly skipped a beat as a message emerged in Wang Damang's head.

[New Quest: Slaughter the ten-headed Wandering Soul. The reward is 5 soul coins.]

Wang Damang was excited when he received the quest. He was already becoming addicted to this well-made game.

He followed the instructions, opened the map, and saw that he was currently in the [Underworld of Beiqi] which was encircled by the field boundary of the [Ghost Mountains]. However, the land further away was shrouded by a dense fog. Meanwhile, the top right corner showed Exploration in Beiqi 0.01% complete.



Standing tall, he gripped his dagger with a heroic spirit and headed to the outskirts.

As he followed the map, he was also scouting his surroundings. He was still in awe of the game's simulation, as the graphics were so fine and detailed that it felt almost impossible.

As he explored further down the path, Wang Damang suddenly heard a muffled whimper coming from afar. It sounded cold and eerie, sending chills down his spine.

Although he knew that it was merely a game he was playing, Wang Damang still walked with wobbly legs toward the direction of the sound.

Out of the blue, a white figure appeared right in front of him.

Wang Damang's presence had also given quite a shock to the Wandering Soul, but with a piercing scream, it pounced toward Wang Damang.

Wang Damang's heart was hammering against his chest when he saw all of this, but after all, he was just a character in this game. With this thought comforting him, he gripped his dagger tightly and threw himself back at the Wandering Soul as well.

"Pow!" he struck the Wandering Soul with his dagger. At that moment, a '-5' in red appeared on top of the Wandering Soul's head, showing the amount of damage inflicted, which was unmistakably set up by Bei Li.

The place where the dagger had landed was replaced by a dark colored stab wound.

Since there was no health bar available, Wang Damang had no idea how many more strikes he would need to successfully kill the Wandering Soul. He moved sideways and dodged the Wandering Soul's attack, then moved to the opposite side and stabbed the Wandering Soul yet again. This time, a value of '-6' emerged.

“Judging from this burning sensation that I’m feeling, the creator of this game must be a total genius!” Wang Damang exclaimed out loud.

The cry of the Wandering Soul turned shrill, but the injuries to Wang Damang had fully healed. He even dared to provoke the Wandering Soul by beckoning it closer.

Relying on his flexibility, Wang Damang excitedly slashed the Wandering Soul repeatedly. The Wandering Soul became more and more transparent, as if it was going to disappear at any moment.

“Take this!” he raised his dagger after dodging yet another attack. Taking big strides forward in the direction of the Wandering Soul, he stabbed it from behind.

At that very moment, Wang Damang’s leg had tripped on a stone. His whole body was suddenly falling abruptly and he landed hard on the ground. A bloody ‘-3’ appeared on top of his head.

“Damn it! Does the game have to be that realistic!” Wang Damang was in shock.

The fact that he had to also take into account the environmental factors while fighting had left Wang Damang rather speechless.

He looked up and before he could pick himself up, he saw the Wandering Soul pouncing on him again, it’s almost-transparent sharp claws tearing him apart.

Bloody numbers popped up one after the other on top of his head, then everything went pitch-black.

[You have been killed by the Wandering Soul]

Lu Wu and Bei Li buried their faces in their hands when they saw the pathetic ending.

Wang Damang took off his virtual reality headset and slammed his fist on his computer desk, “That son of a bitch dares to kill me, I have to go back

and have my revenge!”

Wang Damang whose nostrils were flaring reached straight for the button and re-launched Battle Online.

[You have died in the game, please wait for 3 hours to respawn.]

Wang Damang took off his headset once more, his face ashen.

There’s even a timespan for respawning, and the creators charge no fee for this! How does the creator of this damn game earn for a living?

Wang Damang had gone through this scenario before, but he had hopes for this game. He searched for the game’s release date on the main page, and the date stated was in fact that very same day. He had a hunch that this game was going to go worldwide soon.

A notification popped up at the bottom right corner of his screen, reminding him that the update for Atlantis was completed, but he no longer felt engrossed by it.

As a professional player, he had a sixth sense for gaming. At that moment, he decided to go all-in for the game, betting that it would be definitely be astounding to play.

At this time, the notification from his chat app rang. It was from the members of his clan prompting him to go online, inviting him to tackle the boss stage together.

Wang Damang hesitated, then finally wrote a few words in the group chat: “I’ve found a super fun game to play, so I’ve decided to quit playing Atlantis (tears\_of\_joy.jpg)”

Strike\_Gold: “(ConfusedCat.jpg) Bro, is there a mistake, how can there be a game that’s better than Atlantis?”

Young,Wild&Free: “Don’t talk nonsense. Damang, hurry up and join us in the boss stage, otherwise the ship will sail without you (BloodyKitchenKnife.jpg)”

Wang Damang stared at the lively group chat, he hesitated before sharing the Battle Online game link with the group.

“It’s called Battle Online, if you don’t experience it, you absolutely can’t imagine how fun it is.”

Seeing that Wang Damang had recommended the game himself, a few of them clicked on the link and after going through all of the introductions, the group chat became active once more.

Strike\_Gold: “Authentication complete. If Damang isn’t drunk then he’s gone mad!”

Young,Wild&Free: “Only 800MB?? I thought I had gone blind when I mistook the MB as TB.”

Wang Damang’s eyes grew larger as he read the messages sent by his teammates. Then, he went ahead and ran his fingers through the keyboard: “Stop bro-ing me, hurry up and try out the game, if you all are not satisfied with it, I’ll personally make it up to each and every one of you by giving you guys 10,000 gold coins each!”

Strike\_Gold screenshotted the text.

TheAlmightyBerserker screenshotted the text. “Downloading right now! We’ll be back in five, and will be waiting for the cash to come in (smiley\_face.jpg)”

Under Wang Damang’s persuasion, the new batch of players began entering the game.

.....

This time, Lu Wu gazed steadily at Bei Li, making her feel shy as she lowered her head.

“Little one, why did you set up a timespan for respawning?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

# Chapter 5

“I had to! Although their bodies in the underworld were made from Yin energy, when their souls return to their rightful bodies, it inflicts some small side-effects to the mind, which of course, will subside after resting for two hours.”

Bei Li’s reply left Lu Wu speechless, then his lips curved into a smile as he caressed Bei Li’s head, “You are the best gift my ancestor has ever left for me!”

Bei Li blushed deeply at this, drawing back her head rather shyly.

“Oh right, will the level of the players decline after their bodies made from Yin energy disperse?”

Lu Wu suddenly thought of the key issue. It would be pitiful for the players to lose all their hard work of upgrading their levels when all of it would be lost when they accidentally die.

“Of course not, the soul power will back them up. I have changed the settings of the artifact so that when a player dies, the soul power in them will not be erased. It will be saved into the server of Battle Online and when the player respawns, they will automatically be sent to a new body.”

Lu Wu never thought that this matter would have crossed Bei Li’s mind. He picked up Bei Li excitedly and gave her a big kiss, “Haha, you’re outstanding!”

Bei Li was dazed by that kiss, and seemed as if she was going to collapse at any moment. When Lu Wu saw this, he laughed out loud once more.

At that moment, the artifact continuously gave out signals:

From the messages, there were ten or more players in total that had registered into server. Lu Wu was left astounded.

With Wang Damang's persuasion, a few of his teammates put on their headset and chose the Battle Online game icon. They were fully prepared to prove their friend wrong.

What came after was them experiencing the same shock as Wang Damang when he first entered the game.

The realistic graphics had left them in stunned silence. After choosing the character classes that they favored, all of them received the same quest that Wang Damang had.

A series of exclamations followed as they stared at the clothes on their bodies and the scenery that surrounded them, leaving them with no words.

“Damn, this game is really cool, which company would cook up such a big move? The gaming industry should be prepared to be swept away by this!”

“This really is cool, but I feel that my 10,000 gold coins are getting further away from me! I vaguely wanted to exit this game, but I changed my mind.”

After the big discussion, they hurriedly prepared the group to explore the game.

Wang Damang's heart was filled with resentment when he thought of the remaining one and a half hours to his respawning, he felt like giving the creator a taste of his fist for setting up such a rule.

Meanwhile, the ten or more players were happily containing two Wandering Souls in the game.

Chen Ziyu, “Dear brothers, let me have these two. I've already killed eight of them, let me finish my quest and help increase our team's strength.”

Wang Chao, “Get lost, I already have three in my hands. Do you know how to play by the rules? Or would you like to be punished instead?”

Xu Qiqi, “Since I am the only female on this team, can my dear brothers let me have them?”

The others were indifferent to her pleading, as each of them wanted to increase their own individual strength. They were not so easily tempted by the words of a beautiful face.

The team started quarreling for the two Wandering Souls.

But in the end, it was Chen Ziyu, the strongest player of the team, who had gotten his hands on the two Wandering Souls. Two black lines suddenly emerged from the dead Wandering Souls and made their way into his body.

His experience bar began shooting up.

[Ding! Congratulations, you have leveled up, gained 2 strength.]

[Ding!, Congratulations, you have completed the quest, gained 5 soul coins.]

According to the settings made by Bei Li, whenever a player killed a creature, the soul power within the creature would be separated into three portions.

60% of it would be added to the player's experience. 10% of it would be kept in the player's inventory as soul coins. And the remaining 30% would be collected by the artifact as Lu Wu's private income.

In about half an hour, the players had killed a total of thirty Wandering Souls. Each Wandering Soul would give 3 soul coins to the player, while the remaining 27 soul coins would go to Lu Wu. But among those remaining coins, five had gone to Chen Ziyu as a reward.

Lu Wu willingly made these investments without regrets, because as the players got stronger and stronger, their kills would naturally improve. Thus, his income would eventually increase along with it.

"Damn, I can feel myself getting stronger!" Chen Ziyu was staring at his body in awe, as if he was having a hard time accepting it.

Xu Qiqi, "What do you mean, Brother Yu? Isn't it normal for you to be stronger after leveling up?"

Chen Ziyu was silent for a moment, “This game is really scary. When you level up in other games, your attributes will be increased, but you won’t feel any changes in your body. Instead, you’ll only find that the damages you inflict on the creature will have increased. When you level up in this game, though, you can really feel your body growing stronger, this is incredible!”

Xueli, “Impossible, that’s bullshit. Are you saying that we can experience having actual superpowers in this game?”

Chen Ziyu nodded, “I feel that it’s really possible. The power that is impossible to be possessed in reality can be experienced in a game, this is absolutely incredible.”

Wang Chao could no longer contain himself from saying, “We’ll talk later, the next person that’s going to level up is going to be me.”

“Get lost!” all of them raged in unison.



# Chapter 6

As they were searching for creatures, Chen Ziyu opened the shop to see what was on sale.

[Level 1 Shop]

[Level 2 Shop (Unlocks when Strength reaches Level 20)]

[Level 3 Shop (Unlocks when Strength reaches Level 40)]

A few options appeared.

Chen Ziyu clicked on the Level 1 Shop, and a layout of a shop immediately popped up before his eyes.

Chen Ziyu's eyes were blazing with fire as he looked through all the list of items sold in the shop. He realized that most of the items sold were clearly for mages only, and those that were suitable for other character classes were fewer, but this made him rejoice at his decision of choosing the berserker.

He glanced at his depot and saw that he had 14 soul coins. Chen Ziyu bit his lips as he purchased the Ogre's Wooden Club.

Everyone's curious gaze was on him as an enormous white wooden club appeared out of thin air. Chen Ziyu then reached out and wrapped his fingers tightly around it. A feeling of warmth instantly enveloped his body as he felt his strength intensifying once again.

As he met the envious eyes of his fellow teammates, Chen Ziyu could not help but burst into laughter.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu and Bei Li, who were secretly watching them, also ended up cracking up. The price of every little item that was sold in the shop had been increased by 30% to cover the expenses for the making of the artifact.

In other words, whenever a player purchases an item from the shop, it would partially benefit them. The more items the players purchase, the more income Lu Wu would receive.

Following the map, Chen Ziyu and the team walked speedily for almost three hours before reaching the Ghost Mountains. The fog that was visible on the map had started to disperse, exposing the landscape of the mountains.

Most of the team members had already completed their first quest along the way, and they had even bought new weaponry from the shop.

After experiencing the feeling of having enhanced attributes, everyone's expectation of the game skyrocketed. They became even more eager to find every single hidden feature that this game had to offer.

At this time, the time span for Wang Damang's respawning was already up, and so he entered the game to join the others.

This round, Wang Damang was extremely cautious when he met any Wandering Souls on the road to the Ghost Mountains. As he was in battle, he also took the initiative to observe his surroundings, especially the landform, to prevent any *deja vu*.

This kind of realistic battle would leave gameaholics feeling infatuated. But as he wandered deeper, he bought a new dagger from the shop, which increased his efficiency in slaying creatures.

After entering the premise of the Ghost Mountains, he could see a group of people gathered around an enormous creature of around three meters tall.

As he got closer, the group of people turned out to be his own teammates.

The feeling of resentment filled Wang Damang's heart when he saw this, "These bastards promised me that they would be done in five minutes, but they're still at it after five hours. What happened to us tackling the boss stage in Atlantis?"

As Wang Damang came into view, his teammates finally acknowledged his presence.

“Damang, come over and help us, quick! This creature’s level is too high, we’re having trouble dealing with it!”

Wang Damang, who was planning to just sit back and watch, was bombarded by yet another quest.

[Special creature found, initiating side quests. Players that take part in eliminating powerful netherworld creatures will be awarded a bonus of 3 soul coins, items collected from the battle can be retrieved from the shop!]

The unexpected new quest made Wang Damang decisively join the battle.

The netherworld creature had a pair of bull horns and flesh like a dragon. Its strength was so incomparable that every time it smashed on the ground, it would leave a hole behind. The audience that gathered around dared not interfere, and could only wander around helplessly.

Although Wang Damang had joined the team, the rest still felt that this would take strenuous effort.

Lu Wu, who was quietly observing, turned to Bei Li and curiously asked, “This netherworld creature is considered special? And you created a quest just to assassinate it?”

Bei Li cackled in return, “These netherworld creatures are formed from the aftermath of the Yin soldiers absorbing too many Wandering Souls. They are a mixture of specialities. On their chests, you’ll find a Netherworld Pearl. This very pearl will benefit you greatly! What’s more, it can increase your quality of life!”

Lu Wu was gaping at Bei Li as he finally understood her whole plan. Therefore, he went back to watching the players through the battle artifact.

Clearly the netherworld creatures were much stronger than the Wandering Souls. Luckily the players on the scene were professionals, they were quick

to react. While they dodged the oncoming attacks, they also constantly created multiple wounds on the netherworld creature.

They sustained their position for almost an hour. Everyone was physically and mentally exhausted. Just when they thought they stood no chance against this netherworld creature, the ominous beast finally fell with a loud thud, creating multiple large clouds of haze which then threaded its way into everyone's bodies.

A white light started to twinkle on their bodies, indicating that they had leveled up.

Everyone sighed a breath of relief as they experienced the feeling of their attributes getting stronger.

“Quick, look over there, what's that?” one of the team members piped up.

At this moment, the skin of the netherworld creature came off due to the effect of the artifact, and there lay a black pearl the size of a palm.

Chen Ziyu rushed forward and swiftly picked up the Netherworld Pearl. The message regarding the item instantly followed.

[Netherworld Pearl: can be sold in the shop for 28 soul coins]

At this time, all the others came and gathered around. Their eyes sparkled as they finished reading the message. This was the first item that they have collected from battling a creature, not to mention that the item was quite valuable, “Let's follow the convention of splitting the money amongst ourselves.”

As he was saying, Chen Ziyu pulled up the item list from the shop. When he dragged the Netherworld Pearl into the shop, a light flashed across his eyes and the pearl vanished into thin air. At the same time, 28 soul coins were added into his backpack.

Although each of them did not receive much after splitting, they were still smiling happily.

It has been so long since they experienced this kind of synergy, like back when they had tackled the last boss stage together.

Chen Ziyu glanced at the soul coins he collected then pulled up the shop once more. He chose chainmail to wear, which cost 12 soul coins.

Chen Ziyu's new style left everyone green with envy once more, as their hearts were filled with the urge to level up as soon as possible so that they could have the privilege of having such an outfit as well.

Meanwhile, in the room, Lu Wu was holding the Netherworld Pearl in his hand, seeming somewhat surprised by it, "This stuff can really help strengthen my abilities?"

Bei Li gave a strong nod, "If you ingest it, the soul power within it will gradually improve your ability. Although it doesn't help much now, it will prove useful to you in the long run!"

Lu Wu agreed with her words as he nodded his head, then went ahead and placed the round pearl in his mouth, taking a bite of it.

"Oh... it tastes weird!"

He pictured the Netherworld Pearl as an apple as he gobbled it up, releasing a loud burp in the end. He felt his whole body turning warm, which was quite comforting.

When he finished consuming the Netherworld Pearl, they turned their focus back to the group which was still exploring the Ghost Mountains.

This time, Lu Wu enacted three quests for them in one go. At the same time, he played around with the settings so that the quests would only be triggered when the players entered the premises of the Ghost Mountains.

In other words, future players who entered the Ghost Mountains would automatically receive messages regarding the quests, saving the hassle for Lu Wu to manually enact them every time.

[Side Quest: Retrieve Herbs]:

Every herb collected from Wandering Souls in the mountains will be evaluated and can be sold in the shop. Soul coins awarded according to evaluation

[Side Quest: Creature Hunting, 30 soul coins awarded]:

[Cultivating Side Quest: I am strong, 30 soul coins awarded]:

When a player reaches Level 20, a set of blue pieces of equipment for evaluation will be provided.

The two new quests filled the players with joy once more as they looked forward to seeing their enhanced strength.

Meanwhile, the main quest was still under Lu Wu's consideration.

After all, the players were still considered frail, and if they went for the larger and stronger creatures out there, they would no doubt be throwing straws into the wind. The only plan was to first steer them in the path of getting stronger, and he would then create a main quest for the game.

Initially, the team's plan was to continue hunting in the Ghost Mountains, and at the same time they would keep an eye out for herbs which would be sold later on. However, a sudden message interrupted their game:

[Your time in the game has reached 12 hours. In 5 minutes, please be prepared to be logged out of the game.]

The message left everyone in shock. They did not expect that 12 hours had passed so swiftly right before their eyes.

“Time passed so quickly! It's been 12 hours, but I'm here thinking that I had just entered the game!”

“Is it possible to stay longer? I just need another 1.5 soul coins before I can purchase a Boning Knife. This is absurd!”

However, their pleadings could never counter the settings of the game, hence after five minutes, amongst the complaints of the players, every

single one of them was logged out.

As they returned to reality, they became extremely frantic. As gameaholics, they had never come across anything like this game before, however the limitations of the game had left them in a difficult situation.

The team members who were left with nothing to twiddle with returned to the group chat once more. When they were sharing today's experience in the game, the big boss came out.

Master\_Wang: "Ladies and gentlemen, what were you all up to today. Not a single soul among you guys joined the game, and we're almost to the competitive team match, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and go enhance your strengths. (angry.jpg)"

Strike\_Gold: "Master, what I'm going to tell you next might seem impossible to you, but I'm going to quit the team!"

Young,Wild&Free: "Same here, I have the same thought as well."

Master\_Wang: "All of you want to withdraw yourselves?"

Everyone: "YES!"

Master\_Wang: "May I know the reason behind this?"

Everyone gave a uniform reply: "We can't help from indulging ourselves in another game..."

Master\_Wang: "What game could make you so obsessed with it? Which company does it belong to?"

Chen Ziyu then sent a screenshot of the game's introduction from Lu Wu's website.

Strike\_Gold: "It's this 800MB epic game."

# Chapter 7

After deciding on quitting Atlantis, the gang chose to submit their resignations to the master of the team.

They then settled on a time to gather at a restaurant outside.

“Do you regret making this decision?” Chen Ziyu, as the team leader, asked while he looked at the rest.

Wang Damang spoke, “Captain, we’ve been gaming together for so many years. We are sensitive to the changes in the gaming market. We just felt that the game Battle Online had a huge potential, and that’s why we quit Atlantis firmly without turning back. I don’t think there’s any need to regret that. Moreover, as the first batch of players, we have a significant advantage. Why should we worry about our earnings in the future?”

Xue Li who was secretly eating raised her head, “That’s right, and you won’t believe it, I can’t find the top-up channel. That’s really sad...”

Xue Li said what was on everyone’s mind.

Not only Xue Li, in fact, everyone who was present had thought of topping-up cash to purchase epic equipment.

Who knew that the game really did not have a top-up option, just as stated in the description. They were absolutely speechless.

To them anyhow, as the game developed, the gaming company would also want to make cash. It was only a matter of time until the function was made available.

Moreover, soul coins in the game were extremely rare, so they totally could hoard the coins for sale. Making money was not something to be worried about.



“Then, is everyone thinking of building a guild in this new game, so we can continue to play together?” a smile appeared on Chen Ziyu’s face.

“Of course! We have our own system of dividing the loot after killing a creature anyway. It’s not a problem. Though, there is something I find strange. I’ve searched many gaming platforms without coming across any advertisements of this game at all. What is the company even thinking?”

“Exactly. If I hadn’t accidentally clicked on it, I wouldn’t believe an epic game like this would appear on the homepage of a small gaming site,” Wang Damang spoke immediately after Wang Chao.

Probably the boss who created the game is too rich. They could only draw such an inference.

At the same time, Lu Wu and Bei Li were in the house having a bowl of instant noodles, wolfing down their food.

“Lu Wu, you really are broke!” Bei Li scrunched her face as she took another bite of the noodles.

Lu Wu’s face reddened and he laughed awkwardly, “When the number of players increases, there will be numerous ways to earn money. At that time, I’ll bring you to lavish feasts and raise you into a sturdy and fair woman.”

Bei Li nodded her head, looking adorable. She stirred her noodles with her chopsticks and slurped them loudly.

“By the way, why do you need to eat, too?” as he ate noodles, Lu Wu asked out of curiosity.

“There are physical and spiritual bodies in the underworld. Since I’m a physical being, of course I need to eat,” Bei Li answered as a matter-of-fact.

Lu Wu suddenly realized that Bei Li was always a physical being, and that he could touch her.

After finishing their noodles, they discussed how to promote the game again.

Normally, promotion need enormous sum of capital to support

Battle Online currently had no options for microtransactions. The expense was humongous while they had no income.

Therefore, the duo had to seek other methods to find a way without any cost. Lu Wu was surfing through several gaming platforms in hopes of finding some sort of special marketing event.

After going through ten or more sites, Lu Wu actually did find a free promotion event held by a large gaming platform.

“The Best New Game’s Player Killer List”

In hopes of seeking the best new game of the year, Platform173 is starting a voting event to promote new games. All certified and registered gaming websites are welcomed to pick a self-made game to compete in the Platform173 Player Killer List Contest. All contesting games will be evaluated by our game evaluators by a total score of 10 during the event period.

As long as the 173 game evaluators voted that achieve a score of eight and above will be given a homepage promotion on the platform.

Lu Wu and Bei Li saw the announcement and exchanged glances, both exuberant.

To be recommended on the homepage of a huge gaming site like Platform173 would definitely direct a considerable traffic flow to the game.

Most importantly, the event was unbelievably free of charge.

Of course, it would only happen provided their game could achieve a score of eight, the minimum score to be recommended.

Nonetheless, Lu Wu was not worried about that.

A game that felt a hundred percent realistic did not exist in the current market. He was absolutely confident in winning the top three prizes, or

even the championship!

As he saw that the registration deadline was only three days away, Lu Wu clicked on the participate button at once. He sent the details and certification of his small gaming site and waited for a reply.

The customer service department of Platform173 was efficient. Lu Wu's message was soon replied to, and he received a link for his game to be reviewed.

Clicking on the link, Lu Wu entered the details of his website and registered an account. At the same time, he uploaded Battle Online to the review page.

A prompt then popped up:

The content is under review. You will receive a reply in three to five days. Thank you for your patience.

After completing everything, Lu Wu and Bei Li discussed the optimization of the game.

Their discussion lasted for three hours. Lu Wu and Bei Li had a piece of draft paper as they planned the main quest of the game.

A main quest would of course be based on the battle theme and developed accordingly.

Recalling his old ancestor's great ambition, boldness grew in Lu Wu. As long as the game was popular enough, he would own a countless, inexhaustible source of undead players that served him. While the players would have become more powerful, he would not just go for the mere Land of Beiqi, but the entire underworld!

Bei Li who was familiar with the landform of Beiqi was his army adviser. She reminded Lu Wu of the several powers he had to be cautious of.

According to Bei Li, the King of Beiqi owned an army that consisted of three Ghost Kings and ten Ghost Generals. The demise of the king was

followed by the segregation of the entire Beiqi into thirteen regions by the said powers.

The Mansion of the Dead was located in the East region, occupied by a Ghost General named Cha Na.

Therefore, how to snatch the land back from Cha Na was the main starter quest Lu Wu was considering.

Lu Wu set the main quest to start at Level 15. After all, if the player's level was too low, they would not be able to kill even a ghost soldier, which in turn causes them to be unable to even form a large scale combat power.

At the same time, both of them contemplated the design of the non-player characters, or NPCs.

To produce the NPCs who would improve the playability of the game was easy. Converging a body using battle artifacts was all that was needed. The important part was how to endow the NPCs with intelligence.

NPCs played a crucial role in making the game outstanding, and the key was to bestow them with autonomy.

Lu Wu was not able to tackle the problem, so he could only throw it to the game developer, Bei Li.

Much to Lu Wu's surprise, Bei Li patted her chest confidently.

“Just leave it to me. It isn't that difficult. You know, the underworld is the abode of creatures. We can find those who are newly born in the underworld, who haven't attained intelligence. Then, we can modify them by using the artifacts to recombine their souls. With this, we can bestow them with a new memory and mission.”

“Where can we find souls like these?” Lu Wu was astonished.

“The creatures that have died will be randomly born in the underworld, so anywhere will be a possibility. We can totally release a quest so that the players can find newborn ghosts for our NPCs!”

“Sure!”

# Chapter 8

Lu Wu nodded, using his consciousness to release a new quest in the game:

“Perpetual Quest: Soul Collector”

Seek ghosts who are newly born in the underworld. Upon discovery, they can be sold at the shop at a rate of 100 soul coins per soul.

At the same time, in order for the players to understand newborn ghosts, Lu Wu asked Bei Li to design pictures and link them to the quest list. The players would be able to discern the souls more easily.

The reward of the quest was the best out of all. Quests that solely depended on luck like this also made the game more interesting.

Whether it would be a lucky day or not solely depended on the player’s looks.

It was the third day since the game was uploaded.

During that time, the number of players in Battle Online had increased to 48. Many of them played the game because of Chen Ziyu, Wang Damang, and the gang’s recommendation. They were the gang who wanted to build the first guild in the game.

Basically, everyone who had not tried the game yet was highly dubious of it. However, only those who had played the game would realize how modernized and playable the game truly was. Nobody could bear to stop playing the game once they had the experience.

Lu Wu and Bei Li, who often observed the players’ every move via the artifacts, also understood Chen Ziyu and the gang’s thoughts. They planned to include the guild option in the next optimization.

In order to check on the players more conveniently, Lu Wu and Bei Li went to the underworld once again. He asked Bei Li to forge a subring of the battle ring in the laboratory.

The ring could not survive on its own, but depended on the existence of the master ring. New options of checking on players and releasing quests were also included, and Bei Li was officially the gamemaster of Battle Online.

...

Mu Qingshui was a professional game evaluator at Platform173. His job scope was to try out all sorts of new games and write reports of his experience, then post them onto the website. Although his pay was rather high, he was bored.

Exiting another game again, Mu Qingshui took off the virtual reality headset and massaged his head, looking reluctant, “What are the authors of these mediocre creations that could flood the streets even thinking? I can’t believe they want to participate in the New Game’s Player Killer List Contest. What a waste of my time!”

He then launched the webpage, gave an evaluation score of 2 under the previous game, and ditched it into the eliminated list.

As he scrolled through the table of games to be evaluated, Mu Qingshui was frustrated seeing more than a hundred games pending.

Glancing at the other game evaluators who were doing their jobs, Mu Qingshui took a deep breath. He clicked on the table and chose the next pending game according to order.

“Hmm?”

He originally planned to test out the game by playing it right away, but the description of the game left him dumbfounded.

A simulation game of just 800 megabytes? Are you kidding me?

Mu Qingshui found it ridiculous. Even a game like that had the courage to partake in the contest. The authors really did not know their place at all. It seemed like he had to propose setting higher participating requirements next time.

When he read the description, Mu Qingshui was about to give a score of 1 then place it in the eliminated list.

Nonetheless, he recalled the company's rule of a minimum of a ten minute test run per game. Mu Qingshui sighed as he loaded the game into his virtual reality headset and put it on to start his test play.

However, what happened next invoked him to question his life.

The moment he entered into the underworld, the surroundings and the slight breeze were so surreal as though he had traveled into a new world in a split second.

After choosing his character class, Mu Qingshui was completely won over by the game opening. He was planning to quit the game after playing for some time, but he explored the world in the game instead, finding pleasure in it.

One hour... two hours... five hours passed by as time slipped away quickly. He was so immersed in the game that he forgot he still had many other games to evaluate.

On the way to the Ghost Mountains, he was lucky enough to come across a newborn ghost as described in the quest panel, and he was rewarded with 100 soul coins. He was exuberant because of that.

After he had sold it to the shop, he bought a blue dagger, which improved his efficiency of creature killing significantly.

He had chosen the character class of a berserker. When his attributes increased, Mu Qingshui could experience a sense of flying while he walked, just like in the movies.



His exploration went on until an alert about the twelve-hour playing time limitation popped up. He was then exited by force.

An annoyed Mu Qingshui clenched his teeth with fury, “Dang! I was going to kill the Warrior of Wreckage with a single blow! Who the heck was the one who set the time limit? I’m gonna give him a bad review!”

Mu Qingshui took off his virtual reality headset visibly annoyed, but he was then stunned – the evaluators around him had already gone home and a new shift had started. It was already 3 AM.

“Shoot! Today’s evaluation tasks...” Mu Qingshui felt his teeth ache. As a professional game evaluator, he was so attached to a game that he forgot about his work.

Nevertheless, Mu Qingshui was impressed with the game and was speechless. He gave a score of 10 for the evaluation.

He spent half an hour writing the evaluation report for the game and posted under it. Then, he put the game into the re-evaluation list.

In order to ensure the fairness of the competition, all games must be reviewed once by every evaluator, and the average score would be taken. That was why Mu Qingshui’s evaluation data alone could not determine whether a game could go into the next round.

Mu Qingshui was effervescent as he felt he had discovered a precious treasure.

Whipping out his phone, he hesitated and wavered before he called the boss of Platform173 with gritted teeth.

Ring... ring...

The phone rang seven or eight times before someone picked it up, “Hello?”

“Hello boss, I’m a game evaluator from Platform173, my name is Mu Qingshui!” Mu Qingshui introduced himself at once.

Wu Guoyi was stunned upon hearing that the caller was a game evaluator from his subordinate's company. He glanced at the time on his phone, his mood worsening, "What is it? Also, how did you get my phone number?"

"Please don't be mad yet, boss. I only want to report to you a possible opportunity that can expand Platform173 quickly. We can overpower other gaming platforms and become number one."

Wu Guoyi who was about to get mad found it ridiculous. It was a good thing for workers to be concerned about the development of the platform, but it was also rude to call someone at this hour. Besides, can't you just inform your supervisor first?

Nevertheless, Wu Guoyi did not speak his mind. He gave it a thought and decided to listen on to the weird worker.

"Alright, I'm all ears!"

Mu Qingshui felt even vivacious, speaking in a determined manner, "Boss, you probably know about our new game contest, right?"

"Of course, it was I who proposed the event!"

He was a gaming aficionado. Due to his passion, the thought of setting up a gaming platform blossomed within him, which led to the rise of the largest gaming platform in the country. The evaluation event was proposed by him and implemented with the board of directors' consent.

"Boss, we've found a treasure this time! During the evaluation, I discovered a game that feels almost 100% real. I test-played the game for a whopping twelve hours without spotting any flaws. Moreover, the leveling up in this game is completely different from other virtual reality games. It is an epoch-making recreation!"

Upon hearing the news, Wu Guoyi's expression became sullen. He switched on the bedside lamp and sat up.

"What game is it? Which gaming company is the producer from?"

Sensing that Wu Guoyi was interested, Mu Qingshui answered hastily.

“It is produced by a small gaming platform. The name of this game is Battle Online. What’s more, a very bizarre thing about this game is its data pack – it’s only the size of 800 megabytes. I couldn’t believe it either after evaluating it.”

Wu Guoyi who heard him almost thought that Mu Qingshui had gone nuts, having conducted too many evaluations.

800 megabytes was around the size of a single item in a virtual reality game. It was a total joke for it to be the size of an entire game.

Drawing a deep breath, fury burned in Wu Guoyi again, “What is your name?”

“Boss, my name is Mu Qingshui, and my work ID is #387!”

“Good, you can go to the finance department to clear your accounts tomorrow!”

Mu Qingshui who was exuberant suddenly snapped back to reality, just like a bucket of cold water had been poured onto him.

Realizing that he was about to be fired, Mu Qingshui was anxious, “Please, boss, if you have the equipment around you, you can try out the game! If what I have said wasn’t true, I will resign myself without having you fire me!”

# Chapter 9

Wu Guoyi hung up immediately at Mu Qingshui's unreasonable request.

Turning off the table lamp, Wu Guoyi wanted to continue sleeping at first, but Mu Qingshui's words were repeating themselves in his mind.

As he couldn't fall asleep, Wu Guoyi finally turned on the lamp and walked into the reading room.

He rubbed his eyes and turned his computer on. When the machine was booted up, he logged into the admin page of Platform173, and clicked on the list of games pending verification.

Among the hundred plus games, it took him quite a while to find the one named Battle Online mentioned by Mu Qingshui.

Just like what Mu Qingshui said, the game was surprisingly small, only 800 megabytes. Wu Guoyi was still for a moment, before he took down the VR headset, connected it to the PC, and downloaded the game into it.

With an intention of testing the waters, Wu Guoyi entered the game.

When the game booted up, Wu Guoyi's eyes were wide open. The graphics were perfect, just like what Mu Qingshui said.

Wu Guoyi, still doubtful, continued to search far and wide in the game for bugs like invisible walls and such.

He spent the whole night playing, until he entered the Ghost Mountains and met a netherworld creature. He was knocked out with one hit and it was game over.

After quitting the game, he was still quite excited. A moment of contemplation passed before he fished out his phone from his pocket and called the platform's manager.

The manager of Platform173, who picked up the phone freaked out. Usually, Wu Guoyi would not call him.

“Sun Chi, find out who developed Battle Online right now, immediately, at this instant! Then, send me their contact information.”

Manager Sun was a little puzzled, but he immediately received the task.

He did not dare delay his boss’s order, so he quickly logged into the backend portal of the website.

But when he found the game, he noticed that only the developer’s website was noted down, with no mention of their telephone numbers. This made him anxious.

Thankfully, they had a verification mailbox. He quickly typed a short paragraph and sent it to Lu Wu.

After that, he waited for the reply.

At the same time, Lu Wu was having a meal with Bei Li at a store by the road. His phone vibrated.

When he took out his phone, he realized that he had received an email from Platform173.

Feeling excited, Lu Wu opened the email.

Sadly it wasn’t to notify that his game had been verified. It was an email asking for his contact number.

While he wasn’t sure why they needed it, he still sent his number over.

Looking at Bei Li who was chowing down her food voraciously, Lu Wu smiled gently and slipped his phone back into his pocket. He rubbed her head, suddenly feeling sorry for Bei Li because she had to follow him through the many difficult days.

Pacing around the room anxiously, Sun Chi finally saw the notification of the long awaited reply, and he quickly clicked on it.

He saw the numbers that his boss wanted. He immediately exhaled in relief, and forwarded the number to his boss, Wu Guoyi.

Just like Sun Chi, Wu Guoyi was sitting in his reading room, smoking. The ashtray was filled with cigarette butts to the brim. His red eyes were a sign of a sleepless night.

But Wu Guoyi was still very excited, because he knew that this was a chance for the platform to rise.

After reading Sun Chi's message, he immediately called Lu Wu without any hesitation.

“Hello, may I know who this is?” a young voice answered.

Wu Guoyi inhaled deeply, and said, “Hello, are you the owner of Battle Online? I am in charge of Platform173, and I have something to discuss with you. Are you available?”

Lu Wu was surprised, but thought that there were some issues with his game that the platform wanted to talk about. “Alright, no problem, I will be there soon!” he replied.

“It's alright, I can come to you. Where are you?” Wu Guoyi asked quickly.

From these words, Lu Wu realized that his game was being recognized, and was subtly expecting more. He then sent his location to Wu Guoyi.

Wu Guoyi was still excited after he hung up the phone. He was going to arrange a flight, but he realized that Lu Wu was also in Indigo City.

He quickly contacted his driver to pick him up. He changed his clothes, tidied himself up, and left his home hurriedly.

Within twenty minutes, he arrived at the place shown on the navigation app.

There was an old restaurant in the distance. Confirming that the location coordinates on his phone were correct, he left the car and walked toward the restaurant.

It was noon, so there was quite a number of patrons. Looking around, Wu Guoyi couldn't tell which one was Lu Wu, so he took out his phone to make a call.

Then, he saw Lu Wu who was picking up the phone.

Wu Guoyi took a step forward, "Nice to meet you... I'm Wu Guoyi... we talked on the phone!"

Lu Wu was shocked. He did not expect Wu Guoyi to arrive so soon. He stood up and shook Wu Guoyi's hand.

"Hello, how may I help you?"

# Chapter 10

“May we speak privately?” Wu Guoyi looked around. Obviously, it wasn’t a place suited for business conversations.

“Come on! Let me finish first!” when she heard that they were leaving, Bei Li was very reluctant. She had been having instant noodles with Lu Wu for a few days now, so it was difficult to part with the proper meal she was having now.

“This girl is...?”

“Ah, this is my younger sister!” Lu Wu replied.

Since Bei Li did not want to leave, Wu Guoyi resorted to temptation, “Hey, little girl, why don’t we go somewhere else? The food is even more delicious there!”

“Really!?” It was super effective, Bei Li turned her head with shining eyes.

“Of course!” Wu Guoyi laughed.

Only then did Bei Li reluctantly put down her chopsticks. She then held Lu Wu’s hand and went into Wu Guoyi’s car.

In the car, Lu Wu was quietly amazed. Is Platform173 so wealthy? He is just a manager but he can afford a limited edition Maglev Racer!

Wu Guoyi valued this meeting very much. He booked a dining room in the Palace Hotel, the finest in Indigo City. He even bought a bottle of wine worth more than his apartment.

Lu Wu’s jaw dropped when he saw the menu. He must be damn rich!

When all the dishes were served, Wu Guoyi smiled and finally asked Lu Wu, “May I know which prestigious studio developed this game?”



Lu Wu was stunned. He really could not answer this. There wasn't a studio, there were just two people on the team, the Old Ancestor and Bei Li. Moreover, he himself was merely a coordinator.

“Confidential, huh? It's alright! Come, drink!” Wu Guoyi smiled awkwardly, thinking hard on how to frame the question.

Facing a table full of dishes, Bei Li had long began eating, and Lu Wu wasn't shy either. Whenever Wu Guoyi offered him a toast while he was eating, he would drink a little.

“Hey, Wu. Do you plan to sell your game?” Wu Guoyi finally entered the main topic when his face was beet red from the alcohol.

“Don't worry, we will give you a fair price!” Wu Guoyi continued as he seemed to have thought of something.

You sly fox, Lu Wu whispered in his heart. As expected, Wu Guoyi was aiming for his game.

“We've put a lot into developing this game, so we don't really plan to sell it,” Lu Wu rejected his offer tactfully.

“Ten billion, what do you say?”

Taking a deep breath, Lu Wu calmed his agitated mind, “We started doing this because of our passion, we don't care about...”

“Fifteen billion!”

The price made Lu Wu's heart beat quickly. It was an irresistible offer.

Although Lu Wu was penniless, he wasn't a myopic person. He knew that if this game becomes a hit, it would generate profits way beyond that.

Moreover, he couldn't sell it even if he wanted to. The underworld was real. The entire game was created by the battle artifact bound to Lu Wu's body. No one else could use it.

“Honestly speaking, our team has no intention to sell this game. If you’ve played it, I am sure you are very clear on how advanced it is. If we only compare its realism, it basically trashes all other VR games in the market. So, in our opinion, our game is worth way more than that.”

Lu Wu had clearly presented his stance.

“Actually, we can still discuss the price further...” Wu Guoyi could not help sighing.

“How about, no!” Bei Li, with a mouth stuffed full of food looked up, too, and said while chewing.

He thought that the developer of this game should be a young man who is easy to tempt with money. But he didn’t expect Lu Wu to be this firm. This triggered Wu Guoyi to think about how he should maximize his profit on the platform next.

“Why don’t you release your game on our platform, and if you promise to become exclusive to us, I can give you this amount,” Wu Guoyi pointed a finger up.

“Then, what benefits do you want?”

If a game is released on a major platform, they would usually be charged a percentage of their revenue. Just like how the apps on the app stores are charged a percentage of each micropayment as service fees.

“Nothing else! If you release exclusively on our platform, I can give you a hundred million!”

Wu Guoyi’s condition was indeed attractive. Lu Wu understood what Wu Guoyi was after, and that was traffic on his platform.

If his game was exclusively released on Platform173, and becomes a hit, players would flock to his platform for Battle Online. This was Wu Guoyi’s goal.

If it was just a game, Lu Wu might have agreed to Wu Guoyi's tempting proposition.

However, he had to consider the underworld.

He promised Bei Li to reclaim Beiqi, and even to conquer the entire underworld. In that case, the number of players would be a decisive factor.

If he agreed to Wu Guoyi's request, it would no doubt inhibit the development of Battle Online.

“You may release my game, but I cannot promise you anything else. That would restrict our game's development. Our goal is the entire world, so we need to release it on as many platforms as possible to promote this game!”

When Wu Guoyi saw Lu Wu's blazing eyes and heard his ambition of making it popular all over the world, he was stunned.

He did not expect that both his ideas would be rejected. He felt unpleasant because he wanted to profit from the game as it wasn't released yet, but he failed miserably.

“Mr. Wu, I have a suggestion. Would you like to listen?”

“Sure, go ahead!”

“Your main goal is to gain traction and traffic for your platform with our game. If so, our game can be released exclusively on your platform for two months. We will not work with other platforms in this period. But you have to promote our game on your main page during these two months.”

Lu Wu had his reasons for this suggestion.

Battle Online is a game in its toughest stage, the beta stage. Using this chance to propel their name, their player base would increase through further recommendations. In the later stages, they would not even need to promote their game themselves anymore. Naturally, more and more players would join to try it out.

It was the same for popular games such as League of Legends and PlayerUnknown's Battlegrounds.

Wu Guoyi was surprised by this new hope. He followed with a smile, "You are a terrific businessman, but I accept your proposition. I am willing to bet that your game will be a hit!"

"It's a deal!" Lu Wu smiled and raised his glass. After clinking his glass with Wu Guoyi's, he emptied its contents into his mouth.

Then they talked about the game's content. Lu Wu had researched this with Bei Li beforehand, so he was able to answer easily.

However, Lu Wu did not say a word about the main storyline development, only saying that it was confidential.

Wu Guoyi was disappointed. After all, it had been a long time since Wu Guoyi had played any games. And after playing this one, he had a nostalgic desire to play again.

But not knowing was good, too, as exploration is part of the experience.

Wu Guoyi felt that this talk was a success. After finishing their meal, Wu Guoyi paid the bill and left. He told Lu Wu that during the two months of promotion on their main page, they will air their cinematic trailer regardless of their sales ranking. So, he asked Lu Wu to prepare the CG trailer.

The happiest one of them all was indubitably Bei Li, as she stuffed herself with food the entire time. Looking at the tall stack of crab shells, Lu Wu could not believe that it was all the work of a petite girl.

Rubbing her tummy, Bei Li burped and said, "Yay, I'm full!"

Seeing Bei Li's innocent smile, Lu Wu felt sorry that he couldn't provide more to her.

But he knew that all these were temporary. The future is his era.

# Chapter 11

After finishing dinner, Lu Wu took Bei Li home.

When he thought of the CG trailer, he started to worry.

First of all, he had no funds to hire a professional CG production team. Secondly, how could he present the beauty of this game using a trailer? This was also an important consideration.

Without any ideas, Lu Wu was forced to ask Bei Li who was lying on the bed while looking like a dejected young girl.

At this moment, Bei Li looked like a prodigy in Lu Wu's eyes. She knew everything and could do anything. Even though she had a flat chest, she could be considered as his second divine artifact.

Bei Li also did not disappoint Lu Wu. After thinking for awhile, she had an idea.

It was simple. It required the battle artifact, but no production team. The shooting can be done completely in the underworld. The backdrop would be created using Yin energy, and an epic background could be materialized with zero cost.

Lu Wu thought for a moment, and felt that this could work.

This method could even recreate the actual graphics in the game. It would look like a recording of an actual playthrough, making it more attractive.

After confirming their methodology, Lu Wu and Bei Li started to discuss the story of their trailer.

They spent an afternoon talking about it. After confirming the outline of the story, Lu Wu held Bei Li's hand and arrived at the Mansion of the Dead.

Looking at the dilapidated palace, Lu Wu waved his hand, immediately activating the artifact's ability. A huge amount of Yin energy rushed in from all directions, gathering above the Mansion of the Dead.

Within a moment, a tumbling dark cloud was formed. It descended steadily before covering the entire dilapidated building while it continued to solidify.

Very quickly, a grand, majestic building appeared before them.

Huge black statues stood majestically before the gates while the tall black stupas touched the skies. The two huge gates were guarded by burly giants born of Yin energy. It was a sight to behold.

Now, Lu Wu floated upward as the Yin energy supported him from below. He stretched his hand again, and Yin energy gathered around his body densely, materializing into a shiny black armor.

Clouds of Yin energy were rolling in front of Lu Wu. Countless scary ghosts and monsters were formed within. These monsters were as tall as mountains! They had wings on their backs and terrifying faces.

“Turn it on!” Lu Wu instructed Bei Li who was beneath, holding the VR headset.

Receiving her instructions, Bei Li nodded vigorously, and turned the headset to record. She aimed the camera at Lu Wu as a flower of Yin energy bloomed beneath her, elevating her.

The story officially began.

On top of the dark clouds, countless scary demons were bellowing and screaming, rushing toward the ground in hordes.

At the same time, an angry roar came from within the dark clouds.

“King of Beiqi, do you think you can protect your people? The entire lands of Beiqi will soon be mine!”

Immediately, a heavy dark fog appeared. A humongous dragon head peeked out of the fog, its red eyes staring still at the land.

“Then we shall battle!” Lu Wu replied coldly.

“Will the mighty men of Beiqi go to war!?” Lu Wu raised his hand and beckoned those behind him.

“War! War! War!”

As the heavy footsteps were heard, Yin soldiers clad in full armor emerged from the dark fog.

Several tens of thousands of Yin soldiers raised their weapons and challenged the monsters in the air. There was not a single shred of fear in their eyes, but an endless desire to battle.

“Kill the enemies with me!” as Lu Wu cried out, all of the Yin soldiers levitated.

“War! War! War!”

A pitch black wind passed by. The flag of Beiqi was flying wildly in the air as the battle began.

It was a bitter fight. Dark figures fell off the sky unceasingly as severed limbs piled up on the ground. Countless soldiers sacrificed their lives, while the opposing army of monsters continued to suffer heavy losses under the Beiqi Army’s persistent resistance.

At the end of the battle, the Black Dragon King itself entered the fray, battling against the battered Lu Wu.

The battle between two bosses stirred up terrible gusts of wind. The dark clouds around them were ripped apart by slipstreams, revealing the blood red moon that hung tall above the skies.

But the Black Dragon King clearly had the advantage. When the victory was about to be decided, Lu Wu yelled out loud, and his body started to

burn with black flames. He became a ball of fire and rushed toward the terrified Black Dragon King.

Suddenly, the Black Dragon King's cries echoed in the air. The huge flames spanned a thousand miles, burning innumerable monsters, turning them into fireballs, and sending them down below.

The Beiqi Army ultimately won this battle, but they lost their leader, the King of Beiqi.

The awesome Mansion of the Dead was also lit up by the falling sparks, and burned brightly, declaring the death of its master.

A rain of blood descended from the skies. Countless soldiers kneeled and bowed their heads down in remembrance of the great king who gave up his own life for the Land of Beiqi.



# Chapter 12

“Cut!” Bei Li shouted with excitement.

Lu Wu emerged in the sky again, and descended hurriedly.

The props and backgrounds reverted to Yin energy and were blown away, returning to their original state.

The magnificent backdrops created using Yin energy were super realistic, but they were all empty shells. They weren't real, but they were amazing props for the shoot.

Lu Wu walked to the side of Bei Li, who was still excited. He took the headset from her outstretched arms and put it on.

The CG trailer started playing, and the scene started to develop from Bei Li's point of view.

Seeing the graphics, even Lu Wu, the lead actor, was shocked. The rendering and effects were way better than other animations out there.

Also, since it was shot in real-time, Bei Li was constantly running around in the battlefield. The viewers were given a first-person view to see the fight for themselves.

More importantly, Bei Li was always at the right spots, capturing the gallant warriors' determination, and the King of Beiqi's somber sacrifice at the end.

They planned to do a few takes and pick the best. But Lu Wu was completely satisfied after watching the product, and decided not to waste any more time.

So, he dragged Bei Li back to the world of the living.

After copying the trailer onto his computer, he opened an editing software to do some video cutting and post production. They were ultimately satisfied after watching the final version.

Wu Guoyi did ask Lu Wu to send himself a copy of the CG trailer when it's done, as a reference.

After all, a good trailer could attract many players. As a professional game developer, Wu Guoyi could give some pointers on what's lacking in a trailer.

Lu Wu attached the trailer and sent it to Wu Guoyi through email.

Then, Lu Wu took out the Default Soul he picked up from the Player's Market.

It shone a neon green in his hand, and the soul within it was still dancing around. Lu Wu began to think about the first NPC's settings.

NPCs are obviously important in a game. Other than affecting the players' experience, an interesting NPC might even get a player fanbase.

This was a challenge to Lu Wu, who had been in this industry for a few years.

In order to design this NPC well, Lu Wu began to study about NPCs, and read about a few NPCs with good reception from gamers. Only after discussing with Bei Li did he start to set up this NPC.

As it was a Default Soul, it was a pure soul. Lu Wu used 100 soul coins to activate it and shaped it into a humanoid.

Instantly, a black-robed, white-haired handsome young man appeared before Lu Wu.

After observing his work carefully, Lu Wu nodded with satisfaction.

A body materialized purely from soul coins was clearly stronger than one from Yin energy. Even as a newborn, its stats were equal to a Level 10

player.

But there was a fly in the ointment. The man's eyes were dull, seemingly soulless.

Thus, Lu Wu used his artifact to implant memories and his duties as an NPC into the depths of the man's soul.

After studying about NPC settings extensively, Lu Wu finally completed the setting of his first NPC. He named him Lu Mo, literally Lu's demon.

In the game's lore, he is the King of Beiqi's adopted son.

For the players, Lu Mo is like the chief of the beginner's village in other games. His role is to enlighten the players on some basic knowledge regarding the Land of Beiqi. Other than that, once they reach Level 20, they can pay 50 soul coins to Lu Mo if they wished to form a guild.

Of course, since Lu Mo is an NPC with a real soul, he has his own independent consciousness. Other than the necessary settings of an NPC, he also has his own hobbies and thoughts.

This would create many uncertainties and thus, increase the playability of the game.

After being sent to the underworld, Lu Mo started wandering around the Mansion of the Dead. Whenever he turned to look at the ruins of the mansion, his face would reveal a sliver of sadness.

After finishing all these matters, Lu Wu opened his notebook filled with his ideas on the back stories.

For now, the gaming experience should be great. But there was a lot to improve on the game's content, such as job skills and NPC development.

Lu Wu even planned that when the player count reached a certain amount, he would release some expansion packs, and several of them are battlefields that would make fighting more interesting.

But these were only ideas floating around in Lu Wu's mind. He had yet to do any real planning.

At the same time, Wu Guoyi, who was having a meeting at Platform173's headquarters, received the trailer sent by Lu Wu.

At first, Wu Guoyi wanted to wait until the meeting was over before he took a look. But when he saw that Lu Wu was the one who sent it, he paused the meeting, and played the video immediately.

When he saw the thousands of Yin soldiers battling the monsters from the skies, the Beiqi flag that stood tall and proud in the wind, and the final sacrifice of the king, he could not help slamming his hand onto the table.

“Excellent!”

# Chapter 13

His subordinates gave him a strange look. Wu Guoyi immediately sent the trailer to the computer in the meeting room.

“Wear your headsets and watch this trailer.”

Everybody was confused, but they still took up the VR headsets provided beside every seat.

These headsets were often used in meetings since they usually discussed about the platform, game development, and game testing. So they needed the headsets to try out various games. But this was their first time watching a trailer using the headsets.

When he saw that everyone had their headsets on, Wu Guoyi put on his own, and told his assistant to play the trailer.

At the start, the title ‘Battle Online’ was golden-lettered, emerging from the darkness slowly.

The darkness was broken apart, revealing the underworld. A gigantic black dragon came down from the skies while leading countless monsters. It roared at the armored man to show its authority in the land.

When thousands of Yin soldiers appeared from the black fog following Lu Wu’s cry, they were all excited, looking forward to Lu Wu defeating the giant dragon.

The battle scenes that followed were less of a CG short, and more of an epic war movie. The atmosphere was rendered into the video perfectly.

At the end, when the King of Beiqi turned into a ball of fire and plunged toward the dragon, everyone was held in suspense, as if they themselves were part of the Beiqi Army.

In the finale, the world turned into a sea of fire. Sparks lit the Mansion of the Dead on fire and burned the entire land. All the soldiers bowed down their heads and knelt on one knee, paying respect to the deceased King of Beiqi. As the image dimmed, the title 'Battle Online' emerged on the screen once again.

“Actual gameplay footage,” was what the trailer ended with.

Taking off their headsets, the meeting room turned noisy. Everyone was asking what kind of game was this, and how their graphics could be so amazing.

But many of them doubted if the video was taken from actual gameplay footage because it was way too realistic. There wasn't a single game with this level of quality in the market.

Also, having better graphics on cutscenes or trailers was common practice in the industry.

But undeniably, this trailer had conquered their hearts.

Wu Guoyi smiled mysteriously, “You will know very soon. This game will be on our main page in a few days. You can try it out then. I'm sure you won't be disappointed!”

The meeting continued after that, but on and off they thought about the amazing CG trailer they just watched.

After the meeting ended, Wu Guoyi lit up a cigarette, and furrowed his brows.

Lu Wu had wanted some advice on what to improve in the trailer.

But honestly, he experienced the game first hand, so he knew that the trailer was absolutely actual gameplay footage. So, he was frustrated as he did not know what to comment.

But he still took out his phone and gave Lu Wu a call.

When the call went through, Wu Guoyi answered with a smile, “Hey, I saw your trailer. I can’t believe you did it so quickly! Did you actually prepare it beforehand?”

Hearing this, Lu Wu admitted to Wu Guoyi’s suspicions, since it was unconvincing if he said he dished out the trailer in a day right after Wu Guoyi suggested it.

“Frankly, I can’t believe that nobody knows about your team. Your skills are on top of the world! Can you introduce them to me?”

Lu Wu was in an awkward place. He couldn’t tell Wu Guoyi that he had already met the whole team which comprised of him and Bei Li.

So he kind of danced around the topic.

After awhile, Wu Guoyi suddenly said, “Lu Wu, honestly there’s nothing wrong with your trailer at all, but you lack one thing besides this.”

Lu Wu was stunned. “What is it?” he asked.

“There’s no music. The graphics and the battle sound effects were perfect. But there was no music to uplift the atmosphere. If you want to make your game a hit, background music is one of the most important factors. That’s what you lack.”

Wu Guoyi’s precise opinion made Lu Wu realize their problem. A trailer without background music was a huge problem.

Furthermore, this extended to the other theme songs in the game, which Lu Wu hadn’t thought about.

Unfortunately, Lu Wu was unfamiliar with music, so he asked for Wu Guoyi’s advice.

“Haha, that’s easy! To make a theme song, hire a songwriter and lyricist to make a song. Then, get a pop star to be your singer!”

It was simple for Wu Guoyi to make a suggestion, but they would have to incur expenses to hire someone to compose music and write songs for them, not to mention the heavy expenses of inviting a big artist. It was absolutely impossible for Lu Wu to afford the expenses based on his current budget.

Therefore, Lu Wu decided to abandon the plan for the time being. He will consider the theme song when he is flush with cash after the game development grows in magnitude.

Wu Guoyi was very surprised to hear that Lu Wu had no intention to create a theme song and the background music for the trailer's battle scene. However, Lu Wu was doing it for the purpose of giving an honest-to-goodness experience for the players.

Wu Guoyi had nothing much to say about this, he simply thought that Lu Wu had quite a different way of thinking and never would have thought that Lu Wu was simply doing so because he didn't have any money.

After all, in his opinion, although the game development team did not have ample funds in creating a game of such scale, they could not have been short of money to create a theme song.

After hanging up the call, Wu Guoyi logged in to the admin page of Platform173 and went through the fifteen games that were selected and given a score of more than eight by the game evaluators.

Among these, there were three games that had been given a higher score than 9 by the game evaluators.

They were Battle Online – 10, Natural Evolution – 9.2, and The Rise of Protoss – 9.1.

The look on Wu Guoyi's face said he had expected it when he saw that Battle Online was at the top of the rank. All the eight game evaluators had given a perfect score, unanimously believing in the potential of this game.

Since the evaluation was out, Wu Guoyi made the decision right away to let the players vote and rank the Player Killer charts for these fifteen games,



starting from tomorrow.

On the first day of the promotion event, they would obviously start with the three games that received the highest score and complete the promotion event of all fifteen games in five days. After that, they would have to wait for half a month for the final evaluation.

Of course, Wu Guoyi had informed Lu Wu in advance about the news, leaving Lu Wu and Bei Li excited. They believed that, based on the quality of the game, they would absolutely gain many die-hard fans.

Meanwhile, in the general headquarters of Tamron Game Studios, downtown Shenkai City.

“Boss, look, the game evaluation on Platform173 is out!” a small man with spectacles said excitedly while looking at the message on the account on Platform173.

“Holy shit, boss, we got a score of 9.2!”

The man who was known as the boss quickly walked over to the monitor upon hearing that, and a grin rose onto his face when he saw the number 9.2.

It had taken them a total of seven years to come out with Natural Evolution. They had invested an enormous effort in the game.

What lay behind the score was their painstaking efforts of working against the clock, day and night.

“It seems like the number one game” the man was just about to say that the number one ranking was in the bag before he realized that there was actually another game above his game.

“Battle Online, a score of 10!” the smile on Li Tianxia’s face suddenly froze.

He sent away the employee and sat in front of the computer with an uncertain expression on his face.

Li Tianxia was of the view that the game developed by his game studio would be ranked first for sure. However, there was actually another game that received a perfect score. Li Tianxia was unable to accept this for a while, he even suspected that there was an inside story behind this activity. He could not believe that his game would lose to another!

He opened the homepage of Battle Online to have a look. It further affirmed his speculation that there was an inside dope when he saw the brief introduction of the game that received a perfect score. It was written almost 100% real in the introduction.

He took out his phone immediately, flipped through the contact list and gave Wu Guoyi a call when he found his number.

Ring... ring...

The phone got through after a while.

“Younger Brother Li, we haven’t gotten in touch for a long time, how come you have the time to call me today?” Wu Guoyi’s joyful smile could be heard from the phone.

“Older Brother Wu, I treat you as my brother and participated in the game evaluation activity that you planned, but you manipulated from behind the scenes instead. You seriously have no regard for me at all!” Li Tianxia said in a low tone while suppressing his anger from bursting out.

Wu Guoyi was stunned at first when he heard about that, then a fire of anger rose inside him. He thought the person in charge of the activity that he planned was manipulating under the table, which was something that he absolutely could not tolerate.

“Tell me what’s going on, Younger Brother. I will definitely give you an explanation if there’s really something wrong on my side!”

Li Tianxia’s anger reduced after Wu Guoyi gave him the promise, he then opened his mouth and said, “You should know that our team spent seven years developing Natural Evolution, right?”

“Of course, how can I not know about the treasured-sword that your Tamron Game Studios have spent seven years to sharpen? I remember that your game was ranked in the top ten game expectations chart last time.”

“Since you know about it, can you please explain to me what’s the matter with the game, Battle Online!”

Wu Guoyi suddenly came to understand the reason why Li Tianxia called him. He did not know whether to cry or laugh in his mind, “Younger Brother Li is saying that you feel unjust and is not convinced that Battle Online should be ranked first?”

“I would be convinced if the game was well-developed, but the game has a total size of 800 megabytes with an introduction saying that it is almost 100% real, yet you rank it the first and even shamelessly gave it a perfect score. I just want to know how much benefits this game has given to you that you have to promote it in this way. Aren’t you afraid that this will ruin the authority of your platform?”

Li Tianxia spat out everything he wanted to say in one breath.

Wu Guoyi burst into loud laughter at this moment, “Younger Brother Li, I finally understand why you’re being so angry. Alright, since all the games in the top three will be released to the homepage of the platform for promoting them, why don’t you download the game and try? If you’re still of the opinion that this game doesn’t deserve the score of 10, I’ll take it down from the platform myself and put your game as number one. What do you think?”

“I’ll leave the discretionary power to you. I’m showing a lot of sincerity, right?” Wu Guoyi smiled and continued saying.

Li Tianxia intended to raise hell to Wu Guoyi at first but was left in confusion, “Older Brother Wu, what exactly do you mean?”

“You won’t believe me no matter how much I say. The game will be launched on the platform tomorrow, just give me a reply after you have

experienced the game yourself. That's it, I've got something else to do. I will hang up now."

Li Tianxia's eyebrows were frowning after Wu Guoyi hung up the phone.

He could tell from Wu Guoyi's tone that he seemed to have no suspicions about this ranking. Besides, apparently he had a lot of faith in Battle Online that he even told him to experience the game. Li Tianxia was unable to make sense of this situation.

Nonetheless, Li Tianxia did not believe that the game developed by his own team would lose.

He would feel better if he were to lose to The Rise of Protoss made by Devil Wolf Studios. After all, many players were anticipating this game when it was still in the development stage. Besides, the public often compared these two games as they would be launched at the same time to see which game was better.

Li Tianxia was in a complete disbelief as he had lost to a game with an introduction that looked extremely unreal, and that was never heard before. This was mainly owing to the reason that all the games with big productions would have been advertised publicly before launching.

"It's launching tomorrow, right? I would like to see how excellent this game actually is!"

# Chapter 14

This day was undoubtedly a difficult day for Li Tianxia. He was still at the studio even though it was already eleven o'clock at night, smoking while waiting for the online promotion event of the new games on Platform173.

Unlike Li Tianxia, many players on Platform173 were keeping an eye on the changes of the website at the same time.

Two big games would be officially released to the public today, which was a joyous event for the players. They were ready to enter into the games and experience it as soon as the games were released.

But apparently they were only anticipating the two games with good potential, which were Natural Evolution and The Rise of Protoss. They had no feelings toward Battle Online as it was just a random unknown game.

When the sound of the clock striking midnight echoed throughout the city, Li Tianxia and all the hopeful players clicked the button to refresh the webpage.

[First day of the Battle of New Games, today's recommended games are as follows:]

Battle Online (10)

Natural Evolution (9.2)

The Rise of Protoss (9.1)

Big red words appeared on the homepage of the website, but everyone was surprised to see the ratings.

In their opinion, this event of the battle of new games is supposed to be the contest between Natural Evolution and The Rise of Protoss, what the hell is this Battle Online that received a perfect score?

Driven by curiosity, they clicked on the game as they wanted to see the brief introduction and evaluation of the game.

100% similar to reality? Is this real?

Everyone was baffled upon seeing the introduction, they quickly scrolled down the page to see the comments of the evaluators on this game.

Seeing these game evaluators were very famous influencers in the gaming community. Their highly complementary remarks had certainly incited the curiosity of the players.

As a result, many players clicked to download the game out of a strong desire to know more about it.

Meanwhile, Li Tianxia was browsing through the comments from the game evaluators right now with an uncertain expression on his face. How could he believe that a game with a total size of 800MB was able to achieve the dreadful 100% real virtual reality? This truly was a complete joke in his eyes.

Then, he chose to download the game. He put on his headset and began his experience in the game.

The CG scene that was implanted at the beginning of the game appeared before him in an instant. Numerous ferocious skulls of monsters could be seen among the swirling clouds in the gloomy sky.

All the players who entered the game were undoubtedly amazed by the realism of the scene.

As the story developed, 10,000 Yin soldiers appeared, their feet stomping in unison. When the players witnessed this, their enthusiasm was ignited.

An epic battle began at this moment.

When the CG ended with the world looking as though it had turned into a sea of fire, the game officially began and the panel to choose their character class appeared before them.

Li Tianxia was just like all the other players, being in a state of astonishment at this point in time.

In the opinion of Li Tianxia, the making of the trailer was more than 800MB! What kind of crazy company is this? How exactly did they manage to compress it to a size of 800MB? This is totally against common sense.

In order to take a closer look at it, Li Tianxia chose to be a Berserker and officially began the game.

After entering the game, he noticed that he was surrounded by a swarm of players who just got into the game as well. Right now, they were standing around and pointing fingers at the Mansion of the Dead that had been burned and fallen into ruin.

“The great King of Beiqi, let me carry on your unfulfilled wish and recreate the glory of your past!” shouted a youth who was standing beside Li Tianxia right now. He was staring at the Mansion of the Dead that had fallen into ruin, his face full of grief and indignation.

“Seven, cut it off, let’s go and find the boss quickly. This game is so freaking amazing, I’m afraid that we won’t be able to kill and steal later when the number of people increases,” the youth with the middle-school syndrome still wanted to express his speech but was pulled away by his teammate. They hurriedly ran out.

Li Tianxia looked around and fell into silence. Now only he understood the reason of Wu Guoyi saying those words back then. Although he was a professional, he still found this game unbelievable.

He would not dare to even think about achieving 100% realism in a game with the current capability of technology.

However, he had to believe it as such a game really existed before him now.

At this moment, Li Tianxia’s mentality had changed from feeling unfair to exploring and learning in the game.

Following the instructions of the quest, he followed behind the large number of players and started running toward the direction of the Ghost Mountains according to the map.

However, the popularity of the game was obviously way beyond his imagination. He could not even complete the initial quest of hunting and killing ten Wandering Souls as the place was filled with people roaming around looking for Wandering Souls.

More than a dozen people would surge forward whenever they found a Wandering Soul. Li Tianxia was dumbfounded at the sight of this as he was totally unable to kill or steal anything.

Unlike Wang Damang and his team, many new players were as good as dead when they were facing the Wandering Souls alone. Such a creature like a Wandering Soul was in fact stronger than using Yin energy to cohere into a player. If you did not have a robust physique and were simply fighting hand to hand, even a Berserker who was initially quite powerful, would not be a match for the Wandering Soul.

A ray of white light kept appearing from time to time, indicating that the players were killed by the Wandering Soul and exited the game.

In spite of that, there were still a large number of players entering the game.

Li Tianxia had to find another way to complete the beginner's quest. He broke away from the crowd and walked to the side.

His thought was certainly correct as he found a Wandering Soul that was alone in no time. A feeling of excitement filled his heart, he raised his sword and charged toward the Wandering Soul.

Although Li Tianxia was not as strong as those professional players in terms of combat skills, he was fully able to dodge the attacks from the Wandering Soul as it was not agile enough.

Looking at the Wandering Soul turning more and more transparent and going to disappear soon, a sense of satisfaction rose inside him. He had



completely forgotten his true purpose of entering the game.

Just when he wanted to strike heavily with the sword in his hand and reap the life of the Wandering Soul, a silhouette suddenly emerged on the other side and knocked him so brutally that he fell down on the floor. A bloody number of -5 appeared on his head.

Right when Li Tianxia was confused about what actually was going on, another two silhouettes appeared behind him. They took out a dagger at the same time and stabbed him mercilessly in the neck.

-8

-9

[You have been killed by player Ye Xue'er!]

The screen gradually darkened, the dying Wandering Soul was reaped by the sword of a Berserker who knocked him into the air.

The two female assassins turned around and made faces at his dead body.

My kill was stolen! And I'm dead!

Li Tianxia was dumbfounded at this moment.

After logging out of the game, Li Tianxia still remained in a state of disbelief.

I was a victim of a kill and steal, and not only that, I myself was killed in the process?

A gush of rage burst out from the bottom of his heart as he tried to log into the game once more.

[Player, you have died in the game and entered the three-hour respawning period!]

“Damn, the creator of this game must have been insane to make such a setting!” Li Tianxia was dumbfounded.

As he was recollecting his thoughts, he suddenly remembered the reason he played, and how he had gotten himself into the game.

Li Tianxi took a deep breath. He realized that the game itself was quite menacing. It had made an experienced game developer like himself be so caught up in the game without him even realizing it.

He pulled up the main page of Platform173 and pressed on Battle Online once more. This time, he found that several new blurbs of feedback from other players had appeared below the page of the game.

Li Tianxia fell silent as he read the many messages that flooded the page.

He sighed as he moved his mouse to the top right corner of the page, where the voting area was, then placed his vote under Battle Online.

This time he was thoroughly satisfied. Initially, he felt so confident in his game Natural Evolution that he and his team spent so many years creating. But after having a go at Battle Online, it was nothing compared to his own game.

He exited the page twice and returned to the main list, then pulled up the page for Natural Evolution. Li Tianxia realized that just like the previous one, this game was crammed with good reviews at the bottom of the page. However, this was not enough to cheer him up, because deep down he knew that if these loyal players of his ever tried out the game Battle Online, they would immediately pack up and leave without ever looking back.

There was no doubt he was feeling miserable for he had come across an outstanding opponent. Li Tianxia felt his shoulders sink, as if a large boulder of stress was pinning him down, making him feel helpless.

.....

At this moment, Lu Wu and Bei Li's eyes were dead set on the main page of Platform173, their hearts hammering against their chests as they watched the number of votes bounce higher and higher.

Meanwhile, the artifact was sending notifications about players registering into the game relentlessly. As the number of messages were overloading, Lu Wu immediately created a screening system so that only the number of online players were displayed.

Their game had been on Platform173 for less than two hours, but the number of players who logged into the game had reached 30,213, including 29,864 online players. According to the statistics from the artifact, the fraction of offline players were mostly logged out of the game after dying.

In other words, the players who stayed after their first go at the game had terrifyingly reached 100%.

This clearly had caused Lu Wu and Bei Li to weep tears of joy.

Lu Wu could not imagine the terrifying undead army that he was going to have from the hundreds and thousands of people playing his game. When the time comes, he would take back the whole of Beiqi without so much as lifting a finger.

However, his phone started ringing, breaking his train of thought. He picked it up and saw that the number belonged to Wu Guoyi.

“Brother Wu, what’s up?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“My dear brother, you’ve got to help me this time!”

When he heard such a serious tone coming from him, Lu Wu instantly thought that something must have gone wrong with the game, and so he asked hastily, “What happened?”

“Sigh, I’ll only get worked up if I talk about it. At the beginning, there were only a few players around, and I could still freely go online and battle the Wandering Souls. However, there were a whole bunch of players in the

game today, and when I was killing a Wandering Soul, someone killed me and stole it, tell me, how can I not be upset about that?”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu could not help but crack up, and here he was worrying that it was some important matter, but it was only Wu Guoyi being a victim of player killing and stealing, and had even died in the process.

“Brother Wu, what are you trying to say?”

“Soul coins. I need soul coins. Brother, can you please give me some to upgrade my outfit? I’m going to seek vengeance! This isn’t hard for you, right!?”

Lu Wu was stunned by his request, he never planned on giving away free soul coins in the game, as the coins benefited him greatly as well. However he owed Wu Guoyi a huge favor for helping him, so he did not have the heart to turn him down, “Brother Wu, to be honest, the development of the game is now on the right track, so the only way soul coins can be harvested is from killing creatures. My hands are tied, and so are my team’s. Luckily, before the game was set on this track, I had personally left behind 100 soul coins. I’m giving these to you, but in the future there won’t be any more!”

When Wu Guoyi heard this, he agreed without hesitation, and his mood immediately lightened.

“But brother, are you saying that your team is no longer calling the shots after the game is already developing on the right track?”

This day was undoubtedly a difficult day for Li Tianxia. He was still at the studio even though it was already eleven o’clock at night, smoking while waiting for the online promotion event of the new games on Platform173.

Unlike Li Tianxia, many players on Platform173 were keeping an eye on the changes of the website at the same time.

Two big games would be officially released to the public today, which was a joyous event for the players. They were ready to enter into the games and

experience it as soon as the games were released.

But apparently they were only anticipating the two games with good potential, which were Natural Evolution and The Rise of Protoss. They had no feelings toward Battle Online as it was just a random unknown game.

When the sound of the clock striking midnight echoed throughout the city, Li Tianxia and all the hopeful players clicked the button to refresh the webpage.

[First day of the Battle of New Games, today's recommended games are as follows:]

Battle Online (10)

Natural Evolution (9.2)

The Rise of Protoss (9.1)

Big red words appeared on the homepage of the website, but everyone was surprised to see the ratings.

In their opinion, this event of the battle of new games is supposed to be the contest between Natural Evolution and The Rise of Protoss, what the hell is this Battle Online that received a perfect score?

Driven by curiosity, they clicked on the game as they wanted to see the brief introduction and evaluation of the game.

100% similar to reality? Is this real?

Everyone was baffled upon seeing the introduction, they quickly scrolled down the page to see the comments of the evaluators on this game.

Seeing these game evaluators were very famous influencers in the gaming community. Their highly complementary remarks had certainly incited the curiosity of the players.

As a result, many players clicked to download the game out of a strong desire to know more about it.

Meanwhile, Li Tianxia was browsing through the comments from the game evaluators right now with an uncertain expression on his face. How could he believe that a game with a total size of 800MB was able to achieve the dreadful 100% real virtual reality? This truly was a complete joke in his eyes.

Then, he chose to download the game. He put on his headset and began his experience in the game.

The CG scene that was implanted at the beginning of the game appeared before him in an instant. Numerous ferocious skulls of monsters could be seen among the swirling clouds in the gloomy sky.

All the players who entered the game were undoubtedly amazed by the realism of the scene.

As the story developed, 10,000 Yin soldiers appeared, their feet stomping in unison. When the players witnessed this, their enthusiasm was ignited.

An epic battle began at this moment.

When the CG ended with the world looking as though it had turned into a sea of fire, the game officially began and the panel to choose their character class appeared before them.

Li Tianxia was just like all the other players, being in a state of astonishment at this point in time.

In the opinion of Li Tianxia, the making of the trailer was more than 800MB! What kind of crazy company is this? How exactly did they manage to compress it to a size of 800MB? This is totally against common sense.

In order to take a closer look at it, Li Tianxia chose to be a Berserker and officially began the game.

After entering the game, he noticed that he was surrounded by a swarm of players who just got into the game as well. Right now, they were standing around and pointing fingers at the Mansion of the Dead that had been burned and fallen into ruin.

“The great King of Beiqi, let me carry on your unfulfilled wish and recreate the glory of your past!” shouted a youth who was standing beside Li Tianxia right now. He was staring at the Mansion of the Dead that had fallen into ruin, his face full of grief and indignation.

“Seven, cut it off, let’s go and find the boss quickly. This game is so freaking amazing, I’m afraid that we won’t be able to kill and steal later when the number of people increases,” the youth with the middle-school syndrome still wanted to express his speech but was pulled away by his teammate. They hurriedly ran out.

Li Tianxia looked around and fell into silence. Now only he understood the reason of Wu Guoyi saying those words back then. Although he was a professional, he still found this game unbelievable.

He would not dare to even think about achieving 100% realism in a game with the current capability of technology.

However, he had to believe it as such a game really existed before him now.

At this moment, Li Tianxia’s mentality had changed from feeling unfair to exploring and learning in the game.

Following the instructions of the quest, he followed behind the large number of players and started running toward the direction of the Ghost Mountains according to the map.

However, the popularity of the game was obviously way beyond his imagination. He could not even complete the initial quest of hunting and killing ten Wandering Souls as the place was filled with people roaming around looking for Wandering Souls.

More than a dozen people would surge forward whenever they found a Wandering Soul. Li Tianxia was dumbfounded at the sight of this as he was totally unable to kill or steal anything.

Unlike Wang Damang and his team, many new players were as good as dead when they were facing the Wandering Souls alone. Such a creature like a Wandering Soul was in fact stronger than using Yin energy to cohere into a player. If you did not have a robust physique and were simply fighting hand to hand, even a Berserker who was initially quite powerful, would not be a match for the Wandering Soul.

A ray of white light kept appearing from time to time, indicating that the players were killed by the Wandering Soul and exited the game.

In spite of that, there were still a large number of players entering the game.

Li Tianxia had to find another way to complete the beginner's quest. He broke away from the crowd and walked to the side.

His thought was certainly correct as he found a Wandering Soul that was alone in no time. A feeling of excitement filled his heart, he raised his sword and charged toward the Wandering Soul.

Although Li Tianxia was not as strong as those professional players in terms of combat skills, he was fully able to dodge the attacks from the Wandering Soul as it was not agile enough.

Looking at the Wandering Soul turning more and more transparent and going to disappear soon, a sense of satisfaction rose inside him. He had completely forgotten his true purpose of entering the game.

Just when he wanted to strike heavily with the sword in his hand and reap the life of the Wandering Soul, a silhouette suddenly emerged on the other side and knocked him so brutally that he fell down on the floor. A bloody number of -5 appeared on his head.

Right when Li Tianxia was confused about what actually was going on, another two silhouettes appeared behind him. They took out a dagger at the



same time and stabbed him mercilessly in the neck.

-8

-9

[You have been killed by player Ye Xue'er!]

The screen gradually darkened, the dying Wandering Soul was reaped by the sword of a Berserker who knocked him into the air.

The two female assassins turned around and made faces at his dead body.

My kill was stolen! And I'm dead!

Li Tianxia was dumbfounded at this moment.

After logging out of the game, Li Tianxia still remained in a state of disbelief.

I was a victim of a kill and steal, and not only that, I myself was killed in the process?

A gush of rage burst out from the bottom of his heart as he tried to log into the game once more.

[Player, you have died in the game and entered the three-hour respawning period!]

“Damn, the creator of this game must have been insane to make such a setting!” Li Tianxia was dumbfounded.

As he was recollecting his thoughts, he suddenly remembered the reason he played, and how he had gotten himself into the game.

Li Tianxi took a deep breath. He realized that the game itself was quite menacing. It had made an experienced game developer like himself be so caught up in the game without him even realizing it.

He pulled up the main page of Platform173 and pressed on Battle Online once more. This time, he found that several new blurbs of feedback from other players had appeared below the page of the game.

Li Tianxia fell silent as he read the many messages that flooded the page.

He sighed as he moved his mouse to the top right corner of the page, where the voting area was, then placed his vote under Battle Online.

This time he was thoroughly satisfied. Initially, he felt so confident in his game Natural Evolution that he and his team spent so many years creating. But after having a go at Battle Online, it was nothing compared to his own game.

He exited the page twice and returned to the main list, then pulled up the page for Natural Evolution. Li Tianxia realized that just like the previous one, this game was crammed with good reviews at the bottom of the page. However, this was not enough to cheer him up, because deep down he knew that if these loyal players of his ever tried out the game Battle Online, they would immediately pack up and leave without ever looking back.

There was no doubt he was feeling miserable for he had come across an outstanding opponent. Li Tianxia felt his shoulders sink, as if a large boulder of stress was pinning him down, making him feel helpless.

.....

At this moment, Lu Wu and Bei Li's eyes were dead set on the main page of Platform173, their hearts hammering against their chests as they watched the number of votes bounce higher and higher.

Meanwhile, the artifact was sending notifications about players registering into the game relentlessly. As the number of messages were overloading, Lu Wu immediately created a screening system so that only the number of online players were displayed.

Their game had been on Platform173 for less than two hours, but the number of players who logged into the game had reached 30,213, including

29,864 online players. According to the statistics from the artifact, the fraction of offline players were mostly logged out of the game after dying.

In other words, the players who stayed after their first go at the game had terrifyingly reached 100%.

This clearly had caused Lu Wu and Bei Li to weep tears of joy.

Lu Wu could not imagine the terrifying undead army that he was going to have from the hundreds and thousands of people playing his game. When the time comes, he would take back the whole of Beiqi without so much as lifting a finger.

However, his phone started ringing, breaking his train of thought. He picked it up and saw that the number belonged to Wu Guoyi.

“Brother Wu, what’s up?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“My dear brother, you’ve got to help me this time!”

When he heard such a serious tone coming from him, Lu Wu instantly thought that something must have gone wrong with the game, and so he asked hastily, “What happened?”

“Sigh, I’ll only get worked up if I talk about it. At the beginning, there were only a few players around, and I could still freely go online and battle the Wandering Souls. However, there were a whole bunch of players in the game today, and when I was killing a Wandering Soul, someone killed me and stole it, tell me, how can I not be upset about that?”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu could not help but crack up, and here he was worrying that it was some important matter, but it was only Wu Guoyi being a victim of player killing and stealing, and had even died in the process.

“Brother Wu, what are you trying to say?”

“Soul coins. I need soul coins. Brother, can you please give me some to upgrade my outfit? I’m going to seek vengeance! This isn’t hard for you,

right!?”

Lu Wu was stunned by his request, he never planned on giving away free soul coins in the game, as the coins benefited him greatly as well. However he owed Wu Guoyi a huge favor for helping him, so he did not have the heart to turn him down, “Brother Wu, to be honest, the development of the game is now on the right track, so the only way soul coins can be harvested is from killing creatures. My hands are tied, and so are my team’s. Luckily, before the game was set on this track, I had personally left behind 100 soul coins. I’m giving these to you, but in the future there won’t be any more!”

When Wu Guoyi heard this, he agreed without hesitation, and his mood immediately lightened.

“But brother, are you saying that your team is no longer calling the shots after the game is already developing on the right track?”

# Chapter 15

“That’s right, other than the amazing graphics designed by us, the internal programs are left to run by itself, even I myself don’t know what’s happening there. So brother, be prepared to be blown away!”

When the words settled in, Wu Guoyi took a few steps back and breathed in a mouthful of air, “Brother, when you get the chance, you have to let me meet your team... I’d like to see what kind of mysterious beings they are that they can be so capable!”

Lu Wu hung up after exchanging a few more words. He took a glance at Bei Li, who was nibbling away at her biscuit, then shut his eyes.

When Lu Wu checked his balance once more, there were only about 2,000 soul coins left. He searched for Wu Guoyi’s name and after double checking that the details were right, he transferred 100 soul coins to Wu Guoyi’s account.

After the three-hour respawning period was over, Wu Guoyi logged into the game once more and was surprised to find an extra 100 soul coins in his backpack. He instantly went to the shop and purchased a blue Python Sword for the price of 100 soul coins.

The faces of the players that were involved in his death still lingered in Wu Guoyi’s mind, and his heart filled with hatred at the thought of them. Holding tightly onto his artifact that was emitting a ray of blue light, he rushed toward the direction of the Ghost Mountains once more.

Coincidentally, he bumped into Li Tianxia on the way there, who was also there for retaliation.

After the two started a conversation with each other, both of them found that their murderers were indeed from the same group. And so they teamed up and charged toward the Ghost Mountains, vowing to avenge their deaths.

In order to take revenge, they avoided any direct contact with the Wandering Souls. As they continued their journey, they finally met the three players, two ladies and a man, at the entrance of the Ghost Mountains. They were the gamers who often killed other players and practiced stealing their potential kills.

Li Tianxia was extremely resentful when he saw the three players and intended to confront them directly. However, he was stopped by Wu Guoyi.

“Younger Brother Li, you should not act impulsively. They killed us and stole from us, so now we only have to retaliate. We have the upper hand now as we are currently out of their sights and have the chance to ambush them at the right time!”

Li Tianxia thought that Wu Guoyi’s advice made sense. Besides, he reckoned that it would be a better means for payback.

Therefore, the two of them shadowed the three players, occasionally concealing themselves with random objects.

Possessing the blue weaponry and having joined the game two days earlier than the rest of the players, Wu Guoyi’s level was considerably ahead of the other players. Hence, he was rather confident in fighting against the three players although he was alone with Li Tianxia.

It was unsurprising that Ye Xue’er and her company did not notice the two indignant men who were stalking them. They were absorbed in player killing and were excited to look for new targets.

It was evident that the number of players was reducing as they were drawing near the Ghost Mountains. However, they encountered two players who were working hand in hand to fight a Warrior of Wreckage. They immediately put on an evil wicked grin as they discreetly approached the two players, planning to kill and steal two players at the crucial moment.

Time quickly went by. When the Warrior of Wreckage was almost dying, Ye Xue’er and her friends were ready to take action.

As always, the Berserker went forward to block the two players while the two female assassins snuck behind their backs, preparing to ambush them.

The trick worked perfectly. The players fixed their eyes on the Warrior of Wreckage and were utterly oblivious to the presence of Ye Xue'er and her company. In a blink of an eye, the two gamers were knocked over. Before they could react, Ye Xue'er and her partner had already aimed at the vital parts of their bodies, struck an attack and killed them mercilessly.

Unfortunately, they did not have sufficient time to celebrate before two Berserkers who were hiding behind a nearby bush, showed themselves, each carrying a big sword in their hands.

Appalled, they stared at the two berserkers who were charging headlong at them and ruthlessly slashed the Berserker of their team.

-18

-7

The points of damage appeared right after the attack. Their Berserker was killed within a second and was now lying on the floor lifelessly.

Seeing that Ye Xue'er and her friend were still in a daze, Wu Guoyi unsparingly cut the Warrior of Wreckage open and took away the creature's experience points. Then, he exchanged gazes with Li Tianxia and charged at Ye Xue'er and her partner.

Apparently, Ye Xue'er did not foresee that she would be ambushed. When she finally recomposed herself, Wu Guoyi and Li Tianxia were already standing right before her.

However, Ye Xue'er was not frightened. She immediately lifted her dagger and stabbed it at Wu Guoyi's neck.

She was staggered to find that Wu Guoyi did not have the intention to dodge her attack at all. Instead, Wu Guoyi quietly suffered the attacks from both Ye Xue'er and her partner simultaneously.

-12

-21

Two damage points popped up in synchrony.

When Wu Guoyi lifted his luminous blue sword that was glowing brightly, Ye Xue'er was thrown into panic. Then, her surroundings slowly turned dim before the death notification eventually appeared.

After he killed Ye Xue'er, Wu Guoyi turned around and joined Li Tianxia to kill the other female assassin. They broke out in laughter as they showed their middle fingers to Ye Xue'er's dead body.

As she continued to watch the scene, Ye Xue'er was so upset that she trembled with rage. She swore to herself that she would definitely give tit for tat.

In a certain mansion that was located at Indigo City, a lady, who was dressed in a long pink dress, sat quietly on the bed. Her long purple hair drooped down elegantly, resembling a beautiful waterfall. She looked extremely ravishing and graceful.

After a brief moment of shock, Ye Xue'er regained her composure. She grit her teeth as her face was painted over with absolute grumpiness.

She lowered her head to look at the virtual reality headset, feeling immensely bitter.

Revenge! I need to take revenge!

Furious, Ye Xue'er took out her mobile phone to dial a number.

Before long, the call was connected.

“Xue'er? How can I help you?”

After a long night of work, Ye Chen sounded rather exhausted.



“Brother, someone bullied your younger sister and they were really awful!”  
Ye Xue’er threw a fit.

Upon listening to that, Ye Chen was stunned. Quickly, he was blasted by anger. After all, Ye Xue’er was the family’s favorite child. The man who tormented her was definitely trying to look for trouble.

“Tell me his name, Xue’er. I’ll vanquish him!” Ye Chen said in a menacing yet cold tone.

“He is a strong man. Bring more men over and I’ll wait for you at home!”

“Sure. I’ll bring my men over. You just wait for my arrival.”

Ye Chen hung up before he rudely pushed off the woman who was clutching his arm. She gave Ye Chen a confused stare as he hurriedly put on his clothes.

After he was dressed, Ye Chen took out his mobile phone to contact his friends.

I don’t care how strong you are. How dare you bully my sister? I’ll make sure you get the comeuppance you deserve.

Enraged, Ye Chen left his house and gathered all his male friends in front of a clubhouse. After a brief discussion, they decided to put on red bandanas on their arms to avoid accidentally injuring their own members. Together, they headed for the mansion.

When they arrived at the mansion, Ye Chen’s ferocious look terrified the butler.

Meanwhile, Ye Xue’er was already waiting at the hall of the mansion.

Upon seeing Ye Xue’er, Ye Chen approached her worriedly, “Xue’er, are you alright?”

“No, I’m not. I’m very angry right now!” Ye Xue’er sulked.

“I’ve brought along my men. Tell me. Who bullied you? We’ll finish him!”

Ye Xue’er was astonished when she saw almost a hundred men standing behind Ye Chen with weapons in their hands, “Do we need this many people?”

“You told me that the man was strong. I am afraid that we might not be able to defeat him. Therefore, I summoned more men to send aid.”

“You’re indeed my good brother!” Ye Xue’er squinted her eyes and put on a grin. Then, she pointed at some metal boxes that were placed nearby and ordered the butler, “Uncle Mu, distribute the items. Each of them gets one of these!”

“Sister, what’s this? We are all equipped with our own weapons!” Ye Chen was puzzled.

“The knives are useless. You need this!”

Ye Chen’s heart skipped a beat when he heard Ye Xue’er’s words, assuming that his younger sister had laid her hands on some restricted firearms. This must be something big, he thought.

However, they were all dumbfounded when they received the virtual reality headsets.

Just like the others, Ye Chen was stupefied. Do we need a virtual reality headset to fight?

“Sister, can you explain the situation to me? What happened?” Ye Chen asked, appearing extremely confused.

“Oh. Two shameless men kill-stole me in the game and killed me. Don’t you think that’s infuriating?”

“Yes, it is.”

“Yes. That’s very infuriating! So, are you going to help me?”

Ye Chen was completely flustered. However, he knew no other way to please his willful sister other than pampering her unconditionally.

“What are you waiting for? Get online, choose your character classes and we’ll assemble in the game. Then, you should all follow my younger sister to kill the man. You’ll be the one to get punished if you fail to take revenge on my sister’s behalf!”

Ye Chen glared and yelled at the awkward crowd.

# Chapter 16

With the large group of people, they were at an advantage. After Ye Xue'er resurrected her character, the team successfully located Wu Guoyi and Li Tianxia under Ye Xue'er's lead. They surrounded Wu Guoyi and Li Tianxia before they effortlessly killed the two of them.

Naturally, the two big men of the game were upset. They immediately gathered some of their employees and other players who had been killed by Ye Xue'er to form a team in order to counter the attack.

The first ever extensive conflict in Battle Online had begun. Both of the squads continued to grow bigger and stronger, all determined to vanquish their opponents.

The next day, Lu Wu was woken up by Bei Li as she hurriedly dragged him in front of the computer.

"What happened?" Lu Wu, half-awake, asked in confusion as he rubbed his eyes.

"Read the comments in the game!" Bei Li said as she put on a grim expression.

Lu Wu fixed his gaze on the monitor and was baffled to see the swamp of comments. His eyes were wide in shock when he read them.

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: "I'm calling for soul coins and offering 500 for one. Besides, the Association of the Guardian Angels is recruiting!"

Watermelon\_Taro: "I need soul coins urgently and will pay for all the soul coins you can offer. All the players who have soul coins please message me privately!"

A\_Mammoth (aka Li Tianxia): "Association of the Guardian Angels is rubbish. They kill the innocents. Bar the association! Everyone is welcome

to join the Avengers!”

Peppa\_Boar: “I’m offering 600 for one to buy all the soul coins. I want to kill all the idiots from the Association of the Guardian Angels.”

The comments flooded the entire page while new comments continued to show up.

Other than the fight between Ye Xue’er’s Association of the Guardian Angels and Wu Guoyi’s Avengers, all the other players were trying to purchase soul coins.

Lu Wu ran through the comments and realized that the price of soul coins had skyrocketed from 100:1 to 1:700 within merely a few hours under Ye Xue’er’s influence.

Even with this price, a lot of players who were trying to spend money in-game found no place for them to spend it in.

“We’re going to be rich!” Bei Li’s eyes were beaming with joy.

At this instant, she was already imagining the unlimited supply of delicious food she was going to have, almost drooling.

Lu Wu was very astonished as well. Based on his knowledge, soul coins were considerably scarce in this game. He did not expect that the morale of the players would be pumped up so significantly.

For the past few days, an innumerable number of gamers had joined this platform. Other than paying the players who had completed their quests, Lu Wu had earned almost ten thousand soul coins for himself. In short, he would be able to obtain seven million in cash if he sold off all his soul coins.

Being overwhelmed with joy, Lu Wu was feeling a little light-headed.

However, when he recomposed himself, he weighed the entire scenario. Eventually, he decided not to put all his soul coins on sale. Although this

was going to notably improve the players' abilities, the soul coins were equally useful for him, too.

According to Bei Li, they had to spend at least 50,000 soul coins in order to rebuild Beiqi's Mansion of the Dead. In fact, his soul coins were barely sufficient. However, he reckoned that he would also be able to survive his coming days if he was prudent enough to spend his soul coins wisely.

After he pondered over the situation, Lu Wu decided to trade 500 soul coins in exchange for cash, but definitely not with his official identity.

However, Lu Wu wanted to get a gist of the background story before he put his soul coins on sale.

"It has only been a night since I last checked the game. What actually happened?" Lu Wu asked curiously.

Being someone who forwent her sleep and kept her eyes on the game uninterrupted, Bei Li, the game master, was very familiar with the whole incident.

She giggled and said, "While you were fast asleep, two new forces have risen in the game. One is the Association of Guardian Angels that was founded by Ye Xue'er, while the other was the Avengers under the lead of Wu Guoyi."

"They have declared war because of all the player killings that happened before and have been fighting the whole night. Now, they have finally confronted each other and are determined to find out the final winner. Whenever they meet any player who has formed an alliance with their enemy, they will attack them unsparingly!"

"Due to the heated fight, the soul coins have quickly become important resources because the players need the soul coins to upgrade their skills within a short period of time and I reckon that both the parties are backed by some wealthy men. Subsequently, the battle blew up."

Upon hearing her explanation, Lu Wu was shocked. He did not expect to witness a civil war before the main quest had even started.

However, Lu Wu had no intention to interfere, thinking that the fight might not necessarily be a bad thing. It could actually motivate the players and make the game more intriguing.

“Lu Wu, Lu Wu. Hurry up and think of a way to sell your soul coins!” Bei Li clutched and swung Lu Wu’s arm.

“Hmm. But I can’t do it with my official identity.”

“Then, sell it as a user,” Bei Li suggested succinctly.

Lu Wu shared the same thought as Bei Li. After a brief discussion, Lu Wu put on the virtual reality headset, clicked on Battle Online’s icon and logged into the game.

Lu Wu chose a mage as his character class.

It was difficult being a mage at the beginning of the game. Other than the Yin energy Bomb, which was just a basic skill, a mage was not equipped with any other damaging skills.

However, Lu Wu understood that this character class had great potential.

Actually, Lu Wu and Bei Li were already working on the skills of the character classes.

But, before they could debut the skills, Lu Wu was required to rebuild Beiqi’s Mansion of the Dead. According to Bei Li, in the Sutra depository within the Mansion of the Dead, there were many journals regarding the spells of the underworld and books which discussed the Art of War.

When Beiqi’s Mansion of the Dead was restored, he could enter the cultivating technique into the artifact and added another new skill to the shop’s skill purchasing column. Then, the players would be able to develop their skills effectively.

The mage, a relatively weak character class, would usually surpass the other character classes toward the end of the game. That was also the reason why a mage always carried better equipment compared to the other character classes.

However, he needed some time to collect 50,000 soul coins. For now, he could only fight through the initial stage of the game with pure force.

After he chose his character class, Lu Wu officially logged into the game as a player in a sackcloth with a black wand in his hand.

He checked his bag and realized that the game master, Bei Li, had granted him 500 soul coins.

Lu Wu threw a quick glimpse at the Mansion of the Dead that had now turned into a ruin before he promptly began his journey to find the important client following Bei Li's orders.

Ye Xue'er was undoubtedly the one who needed the most soul coins at this moment. Therefore, she was naturally Lu Wu's first and foremost targeted client.

Being an authorized user, Lu Wu easily located the blinking purple label on the map.

That was Bei Li's way to guide Lu Wu to Ye Xue'er's live location.

At this instant, Ye Xue'er led the team of hundreds to the entrance of the Ghost Mountains, planning to vanquish all the players of the Avengers.

Lu Wu exited the newbie zone, made sure that he was alone before he summoned a cloud of Yin energy to rapidly send him to Ye Xue'er's current location.

When he was hundreds of meters away from Ye Xue'er, he dismissed the cloud of Yin energy. Not wanting to be conspicuous, he decided to approach Ye Xue'er by foot.



When Lu Wu arrived before the crowd, hundreds of pairs of eyes were fixed on him.

“Boy, are you a member of the Avengers?” a berserker stopped him in his tracks.

“I’m here to find Ye Xue’er. I want to sell her my soul coins!”

“You’re looking for me?” Ye Xue’er jumped off the tree and landed right in front of Lu Wu.

Looking at Ye Xue’er, whose equipment was mostly blue, Lu Wu put on a faint grin and said, “I heard that you’re interested in buying soul coins. I have some to sell!”

“How much do you have? I want all of them. Quote me a price.”

“How about one for 700? I suppose that’s the current market rate.”

“Fine. How much do you have? I want them all!” Ye Xue’er agreed with completely no contemplation.

“I have 500 of them!” Lu Wu gently smiled.

“What?”

# Chapter 17

Ye Xue'er was expecting a few soul coins, but never 500, and thought that she had misheard the man.

“How many soul coins did you say you have?” Ye Xue'er repeated the question in disbelief.

“I have 500 soul coins! I'll sell you all of them if you are capable of paying the cost!” Lu Wu said as he grinned.

Noticing Ye Xue'er's doubtful expression, Lu Wu took a step forward and opened his transaction column. He showed her all the available soul coins before he promptly cancelled the transaction.

“Do you believe me now?”

Looking at the 500 soul coins listed in the balance column, Ye Xue'er was astonished. After all, she had barely earned 60 soul coins from all the fights she went through to beat the creatures. However, this guy, who carried only the basic equipment, actually had an asset of 500 soul coins. It was only natural for her to be shocked.

“Yes, I will buy all of them!” Ye Xue'er said in a firm tone.

“Sure. Let's head to the transaction website. The page is secured.”

“That's not necessary. Just give me your account number and I'll transfer it to you immediately.”

Lu Wu was astounded by her words as that was not a minor transaction. 500 soul coins were worth 350,000 real dollars.

But, if Ye Xue'er trusted him, Lu Wu was absolutely fine with closing the deal outside the transaction website. Without much hesitation, Lu Wu provided Ye Xue'er with his bank account number.

“Benzi, transfer the money to him!” Ye Xue’er yelled the command at a girl who was standing next to her.

The girl, who was addressed as Benzi, quickly nodded before she vanished into thin air.

A brief moment later, the girl returned. “Xue’er, I’ve transferred the money to him,” she reported.

Ye Xue’er nodded in acknowledgement before she told Lu Wu, “I’ve transferred the money to you. You can check your bank account!”

Lu Wu shook his head, “If you trust me, I’ll trust you, too. I’ll give you the soul coins now.”

As he finished his words, Lu Wu opened the transaction column and sent 500 soul coins to Ye Xue’er.

Of course, 350,000 dollars was a huge amount and Lu Wu naturally could not blindly trust Ye Xue’er. Bei Li had already informed him about the successful transaction and Lu Wu was only pretending to be unconcerned about the money.

After she collected the soul coins, Ye Xue’er gleefully visited the shop, picked a red superior leather coat and put it on immediately.

In a blink of an eye, a colorful light flashed across Ye Xue’er’s body. When she reappeared, she was already wearing the exquisite and elegant gown.

Seeing that Lu Wu was about to leave, Ye Xue’er blocked him with her hand.

“Is there anything else?”

“How did you earn all of those soul coins? Did you complete a hidden quest or something?” Ye Xue’er was dying to know.

“Oh. There’s a quest for the soul collectors. While I was loitering around, I was lucky enough to have picked up five default souls and I sold them in

the shop.”

Initially, Ye Xue'er intended to find out how he activated the hidden quest. But, Lu Wu's answer had certainly caused her to be flustered.

How much luck does one need in order to achieve this?

“I'll take my leave if there's nothing else. I want to take a stroll and try my luck again. Maybe I can pick up a few more default souls.”

Once again, Lu Wu's words silenced the crowd.

Followed by Lu Wu's departure, Ye Xue'er turned to ask her members, “Have any of you caught a default soul before?”

They shook their heads.

At this moment, a man ran out of the Ghost Mountains, appearing extremely perturbed.

“Sister Xue'er, our brothers have been ambushed!”

Ye Xue'er straightened her face when she heard the man, “Were they attacked by the Avengers again?”

“No. They were assaulted by the NPC of the game!”

Shocked, Ye Xue'er spoke, “Tell me exactly how it happened!”

“When our team of ten was looking for the players of the Avengers within the Ghost Mountains, we met a troop of ghost soldiers who were riding on wolves. They were all wearing armor while their pupils were filled with fierce burning fire, appearing exceptionally terrifying and menacing. When they met the ten of us, they wanted to know which Ghost General we were working for.”

“Then, how did you answer?”

“I said that we were the King of Beiqi’s descendants. Then, they began to chase after us and attack us. Before long, all the members of our team were killed. I was the only one who was fortunate enough to have escaped through the underground tunnel.”

Upon listening to this, Ye Xue’er was reminded about the story that was introduced during the opening of the game. It seemed like all the Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals who used to be subordinates of the King of Beiqi had begun to rebel against the King of Beiqi.

If that was the case, Ye Xue’er could understand why her peers were attacked when they revealed their identities as the King of Beiqi’s descendants.

“Brothers, let’s head to the Ghost Mountains and kill the traitors!” Ye Xue’er said in a frigid tone.

Having watched the opening story before, Ye Xue’er bore intense hatred toward the traitors. She understood how the King of Beiqi sacrificed for the billions of creatures living in the Land of Beiqi. However, not only were they not grateful, they actually had the audacity to betray the King of Beiqi. For Ye Xue’er, they were committing an unpardonable felony.

Moreover, Ye Xue’er reckoned that the ghost soldiers could possibly activate some hidden quests.

Then, the horde of hundreds fearlessly marched toward the Ghost Mountains.

After Lu Wu logged out of the game, he quickly checked his phone.

A total amount of 350,000 dollars has been transferred to your account ending with numbers, 6573. Your current balance is 351,236.

“Delicious food... delicious food...” Bei Li’s eyes were beaming with joy and excitement.

This was easy money. Looking at the balance of the soul coins that continued to increase, Lu Wu felt gratified.

To celebrate their first paycheck, Lu Wu brought Bei Li to the best hotel in town for an expensive and delicious meal. Besides, he bought a bag of tidbits for Bei Li, the glutton. Bei Li, who was easily pleased, grinned gleefully and her eyes formed crescent shapes.

The sun had set when Lu Wu returned home. He sat down in front of the computer and browsed through the main page of Platform173 to check the status of the poll that was made for the games.

Just as he foresaw, Battle Online was significantly leading the poll. The number of participating players continued to increase and had already surpassed 80,000.

At this moment, Lu Wu's primary concern was to collect the soul coins. He was in a hurry to accumulate 50,000 soul coins in order to unleash all the power of the skills.

Actually, many gamers possessed soul coins. But, he had to figure out how to make these players spend the soul coins.

Lu Wu was undecided, not knowing if he should declare war against the Ghost General of the East. Once there was a war, people would definitely begin to spend a significant amount of soul coins.

After some deliberation, Lu Wu shook his head and decided to give up this idea. Although the number of players had hit 80,000, their ability did not allow them to beat the troop of ten thousand ghost soldiers. Constant loss could deflate the players' morale and ruin their gaming experience.

As he mulled over the situation, an idea hit Li Wu. With the help of the artifact, Lu Wu created a quest for the players with Level 15 and above.

[Reconnaissance Quest: Head to the east of the Mansion of the Dead to check out the Ghost General's territory. The reward will be decided by the total covered area.]

The quest was undeniably challenging as the strongest player was still no match for a normal ghost soldier.

However, the players had an advantage as they were invincible. It was the best means to send the players to ascertain the strength of the ghost armies. Then, Bei Li could scrutinize the players' status and report back to him.

Lu Wu intended to design a stratagem after he got the gist of the whole situation.

An hour after the quest was released, many players were already on their way to the Mansion of the Dead, intending to attempt the quest.

Just when Lu Wu was feeling proud and happy of his decision, a public notification appeared.

[Congratulations to Chen Ziyu for the establishment of the Great Dragon Guild. We are recruiting all talents across the game to build a renowned Beiqi hand-in-hand!]

Lu Wu was greatly surprised by the swift appearance of the first guild. He had never expected that Chen Ziyu, one of the pioneer players, would reach Level 20 so quickly.

So, he shut his eyes and shifted his gaze toward the underworld.

There was a great bunch of players surrounding the Mansion of the Dead in the underworld, and right in the middle of these players, there Chen Ziyu stood proudly beside the NPC, Lu Mo.

Chen Ziyu was full of excitement at that moment. To create the first guild ever, he and his brothers had been training to level up at the Ghost Mountains for days and nights. In the end, they successfully collected 50 soul coins and that was how they got to create the guild.

Right after the guild was activated, there was an additional option for guilds on his function panel. As long as the players were in the same guild, they were able to view the location of other players of the guild. At the same

time, the guild chat room was unlocked and this has no doubt helped a lot in their team formation and development.

“Big brother, recruiting anyone?”

“Big brother, please guide me. I have no better skills other than spending money in-game!”

“Permission to join the guild, please accept my request!”



# Chapter 18

A group of rookies was circling Chen Ziyu, eager to join his guild for protection. Yet, Chen Ziyu smiled as he checked each of the requestor's message and accepted only powerful players with more than Level 10.

After around an hour of reviewing the messages, Chen Ziyu turned his head around to face the NPC, Lu Mo who had a spectacular aura but little expression on his face.

“Big Brother Lu, how much do you know about the Ghost General Cha Na, who forcibly occupied the East Side of Beiqi?”

Hearing the mention of the Ghost General Cha Na from Chen Ziyu, Lu Mo's expression turned vengeful, “My stepfather's cultivation toward Cha Na went to waste. For his own benefits, he chose betrayal! I can't wait to kill him with my own hands!”

As compared to the other NPCs, Chen Ziyu felt that Lu Mo, who often lingered around the Mansion of the Dead, was more like a human with flesh, blood, and feelings.

“Big Brother Lu, we must avenge the betrayal. Do you have more details on the situation at the East Side? I would like to go there and have a look myself!”

Lu Mo deepened his gaze toward Chen Ziyu and sighed, “The Ghost General Cha Na has 100,000 ghost soldiers under his flag. He has great power and has taken over the East Side through the Liuli District of the Acheron Sea. If you were to investigate, please take care of your own safety and don't try to be a hero!”

Chen Ziyu nodded solemnly and immediately sent a voice message to the guild chat, “To all members in the Great Dragon Guild who are above Level 15, please gather at the Mansion of the Dead after dinner. Let's complete the exploration quest together!”

Wang Chao: “For the King of Beiqi’s glory!”

...

Seeing the replies in the guild’s chat room, Chen Ziyu grinned slightly and went offline. He planned to have a quick dinner so he could arrange the guild formation to prepare for their very first team quest.

After Chen Ziyu left, quite a number of people gathered around Lu Mo.

They were mostly female gamers. As they were totally mesmerized by Lu Mo’s handsome look, they could not stop bothering Lu Mo and chatted with him.

For the past few days, Lu Mo had been pretty popular among the vast number of female gamers. Besides, there were memories of the Land of Beiqi implanted into Lu Mo and with these, he had helped a lot of the players with their questions so he could pass as a village head of the newbies village.

To enrich the pleasure of gaming among the players, the second NPC had already been created by Lu Wu.

The name was Mysterious Merchant. The identity setup of this NPC was a lucky merchant who had been wandering around the Land of Beiqi. Any player who found this merchant would be able to purchase rare items that could not be found in any of the shops.

After browsing through the everyday lives of the gamers, Lu Wu shifted the God’s Eye toward Ye Xue’er who had bought some soul coins.

As the Ghost Mountains appeared in front of his eyes, Lu Wu’s gaze froze.

Because deep in the forest, there was unexpectedly a troop of ghost soldiers who were riding on wolves.

From the looks of these ghost soldiers, Lu Wu remembered the Ghost Wolf Riders from Cha Na’s army that was introduced by Bei Li earlier.

At that moment, deep in the woods of the Ghost Mountains, Ye Xue'er and a hundred men were charging toward the Ghost Wolf Riders. However, there was an obvious gap between the power of both parties, so many players were being killed continuously.

Despite that, the players were not backing out. Instead, under the command of Ye Xue'er, the players kept on going forward again and again like maniacs, until they finally dispersed the formation of the Ghost Wolf Riders.

“Kill all these Beiqi betrayers!” along with Ye Xue'er's deafening cries, players from the Guardian Angels charged forward again, surrounding the Ghost Wolf Riders at the center and struck them fiercely.

Finally, amidst the crazy ambush from the players, a few of the Ghost Wolf Riders could not take the attacks anymore and fell from their wolves. All that welcomed these riders then were heartless strikes and thrusts right where they had fallen.

“They are running away. Circle them now, we can't let any of them leave this place!”

Seeing that the Ghost Wolf Riders had already given up on the battle and were trying to leave, the players naturally would not let them go. They should know that many of their brothers had perished just to kill these Ghost Wolf Riders.

There was a lot of hullabaloo as the crowd formed a circle and trapped the Ghost Wolf Riders right on the spot.

Accompanied by the howls of the giant wolves, the players repeatedly pulled back their circle, and the few Ghost Wolf Riders looked terrified.

They could not seem to comprehend the reason why there were so many uncommon ghosts. On top of that, these ghosts had claimed themselves as the King of Beiqi's descendants.

After the death of the King of Beiqi, all the subordinates should have betrayed the clan, but the appearance of these people was extremely weird.

“Not one is to be forgiven! Kill!” with Ye Xue’er’s roars, the players speedily pulled back their circle again. The berserkers on the frontline accepted the Ghost Wolf Riders’ stabs and strikes with their bodies as they were so eager to cut the betrayers that they did not mind dying from the attacks.

Amidst the madness, the small troop of Ghost Wolf Riders finally fell apart. As the last Ghost Wolf Rider was struck down by Ye Xue’er’s attack, the entire troop of Ghost Wolf Rider bit the dust.

The players cheered and Ye Xue’er grinned blissfully.

“Hey, something is coming out from the ghost soldiers!”

At that time, the corpses of the Ghost Wolf Riders were disintegrated by the artifacts and only their armor and weapons were left on the ground.

“Wow, Level 10 White Armor, Level 10 Blue Sword!”

Seeing that the items dropped were artifacts that could be worn, the crowd quickly went into an uproar as everyone tried to squeeze forward to pick up the items.

Yet, Ye Xue’er did not stop them, because she knew that the players deserved it. Besides, she already had a full set of Level 10 Red Armor on, so she couldn’t care less for these common items.

After the distribution, Ye Xue’er turned to face the crowd and swung her dagger boldly, “Brothers, you may have your meal now. After dinner, let’s depart to Liuli District on the East Side and look for more ghost army betrayers to kill. By then, we will have Blue Weaponry for everyone. As soon as I reach Level 20, I will create a guild. We will be the first guild ever in this game. Are you all confident!”

“Yes!”

# Chapter 19

Around eight at night, Chen Ziyu started to form his troop in the guild's live chat. Soon, there were nearly 200 players whose powers were all Level 15 and above who gathered at the Mansion of the Dead.

“Depart!”

With Chen Ziyu's command, the troop of 200 men marched toward the East Side.

The Liuli District of the East Side was not that far from the Mansion of the Dead. Besides, the gamers' physical fitness had increased, so it was as easy as pie to go on this journey.

Whenever they ran into any Wandering Souls or other living things of the underworld along the way, the team would strike them down with ease. They were advancing zealously, with only one thought in mind and that is to kill the Ghost General Cha Na.

According to the map, the players of the Great Dragon Guild spent half an hour to reach the border between Liuli District and the Mansion of the Dead.

Stepping into the boundary of Liuli, the gamers were astounded by the brighter color of the sky. Just moments ago, the sky was raining blood, but now it was gone. The stones on the ground were colorful and there were white specks shaped like snowflakes in the air. The sight was entirely different from that in the Mansion of the Dead.

Amidst the surprise at the different landscape designs, the gamers began to feel alert.

They knew that this was the domain of the Ghost General Cha Na. Although they were among 200 other men, they were already mentally prepared to die before departing on this exploration journey. Besides, Lu

Mo had already warned them about the 10,000 strong vicious ghost army under Cha Na's flag.

“Let's go, and be careful. Notify each other if there are any unusual happenings!”

The troop continued to move along as Chen Ziyu waved his hand in the air.

As they proceeded, the players noticed that the ghosts in Liuli District were all in animal forms and not human forms. Regardless, they were ferocious. They had encountered several wolf packs along the way and it took the players much effort to destroy them.

Another thousand meters into the journey, they marched over a slope, and the players were so absorbed by the scenery. All of a sudden, Chen Ziyu motioned for everyone to keep low.

All that could be seen below the slope was the Ghost Rider Camp.

“Be mindful, don't get caught. The camp is huge!” Chen Ziyu warned in the guild live chat.

Hearing that, the players popped up their heads to observe the situation in the camp.

There were several zombie wolves that had eyes blazing with emerald flames wandering around the campsite and a number of ghost soldiers hustling about, moving something around.

“About 2,000... this should be an outpost. There are too many ghost soldiers, we won't make it. Let's change the direction of attack!”

Seeing the huge number of the ghost army, Chen Ziyu was frightened secretly as he prepared to reroute with his brothers. At the same time, one of the zombie wolves that was nearest to them twitched its nose, sniffed the air, and its blazing eyes turned to stare at the hills where Chen Ziyu and his team were hiding.

“Howl!”

With the cries of the wolves, numerous ghost soldiers lifted their heads and looked toward the direction of Chen Ziyu and his team who were scouting the horizon.

“Stupid dog, howl at your grandfather!”

With their whereabouts exposed, Wang Damang was extremely frustrated by the annoying zombie wolf. So, he picked up a rock, threw it at the zombie wolf and the rock hit right in its face.

Unsatisfied, Wang Damang tried to pick up another rock but was stopped by Chen Ziyu with a tug, “Damang, stop being stubborn. They are coming at us, we should run!”

Wang Damang shifted his gaze and saw that a few of the ghost soldiers had already jumped onto their zombie wolves and started to gather around, obviously preparing to suppress them.

“Brothers, run!” with Chen Ziyu’s command, the players quickly turned around and ran for their lives.

Then, the ghost soldiers in the camp gathered together and accompanied by the roars of the Ghost Supreme Commander, they advanced toward the direction of Chen Ziyu and his team.

In terms of speed, the ghost soldiers riding on zombie wolves were obviously faster than the players. With dust flying in the air, the Ghost Wolf Riders were catching up on the players.

Rays of bloodthirstiness were glistening in those eyes which were blazing with emerald flames. As ghosts, they were craving for a massacre.

“Fuck! I’m not running anymore. Let’s fight these betrayers to the death!” at that moment, Wang Damang shouted furiously as he turned around and charged toward the Ghost Wolf Riders.

“Yeah, charge!”

“Charge! What is there to be scared of, I’ll still be a man after three hours!”

Chen Ziyu knew that they could never outrun the wolves, so with a stern face, he turned to face the Ghost Rider Army, “Brothers, kill!”

With Chen Ziyu’s command, the players stopped and together, they turned to face the Ghost Rider Army.

“Charge!”

“Kill!”

The Ghost Wolf Riders appeared shocked by the return of the players. They could not seem to understand why they had not run away. Did they not want their lives anymore?

“Rumble!”

The players went against the Ghost Rider Army directly, and instantly, men and horses fell. Things fell into an uproar.

Combat broke loose instantaneously. They were all players above Level 10, so, when in combat with the Ghost Wolf Riders they still had hopes in winning, but their number was at a disadvantage. A huge number of players were killed amongst the tumult.

Nevertheless, the viciousness of the players surprised the Ghost Wolf Riders. They could not understand the craziness of these living things. Their fighting styles were regardless of their own lives. They did not even bother to defend but repeatedly went against them.

Chen Ziyu’s eyes turned red from seeing the continuously falling comrades. He shifted his body and locked target on a Ghost Wolf Rider. With a step forward, he cut fiercely at the rider’s skull with his giant sword.

...

Not far from the combat, Ye Xue’er was staring into the turmoil with questions in her eyes, “What’s happening there?”

“Sister Xue’er, it seems like a fight has broken loose!”



Ye Xue'er became curious after hearing that, so with a swing of her arm, her troop increased their paces forward.

When they finally got a clear view of the two parties who were fighting, Ye Xue'er's expression deepened.

“Sister Xue'er, it's a combat between players and the ghost army. We need to help!”

“Nonsense, brothers, charge and kill all the Beiqi betrayers!”

Following the pace of Ye Xue'er, her troop of a few hundred men charged toward the scene of combat fiercely.

“Big boss, there's backup!”

Chen Ziyu turned his head around after hearing the news, and abruptly saw the approaching Ye Xue'er and her men.

“Brothers, thanks for the help!” Chen Ziyu shouted as he struck a Ghost Wolf Rider to the ground.

“You're welcome!” Ye Xue'er answered him with a shout and with a swift duck to the side, she rushed toward the Ghost Rider Camp.

The reinforcement of the hundred men troop did reduce the pressure on the Great Dragon Guild, but the power of the Ghost Wolf Riders was indeed very strong. So anyhow, they were still at a disadvantage.

As they were being forced into a corner, another troop advanced from the side and knocked into the Ghost Wolf Rider's belly side vigorously.

“The Avengers troop has arrived to assist. Brothers, let us kill!” along with the roar of Wu Guoyi, another troop of a hundred men appeared and joined the fight.

The battle of four forces instantly caused a clamor at the scene.

Wu Guoyi, who was in the middle of a battle, coincidentally bumped into Ye Xue'er who was striking a Ghost Wolf Rider.

“Kill the enemy first, we'll deal with our revenge later!” Wu Guoyi spoke.

“Agreed!” Ye Xue'er answered coldly.

# Chapter 20

Faced with the vicious Ghost Wolf Riders, the players had momentarily put away any personal grudges against one another as they formed an unprecedented team.

They showed no sign of fear, even though their numbers could barely compare with the Ghost Wolf Riders.

Accompanied by their battle cries, the players lunged at the Ghost Wolf Riders once again.

“Annihilate the traitors of Beiqi even if it means sacrificing our own lives! This is for our honorable deaths!”

Ye Xue'er's gaze was fixated on the Ghost Supreme Commander at a distance ahead. Clad in heavy armor, he was riding on a Fire Demon steed. With a swift leap, Ye Xue'er launched an attack towards it.

As he saw the oncoming attack from Ye Xue'er, the Ghost Supreme Commander revealed a look of disdain as he reached behind his back and wrapped his hand around a gigantic sword.

“Die!”

Just as Ye Xue'er's silhouette burst out before the enemy, the sword slashed out abruptly with an eruptive energy, striking her head-on. The visuals before her eyes slowly began to fade into darkness.

[You have been killed by the Ghost Supreme Commander, three hours of cooldown to respawn!]

“Xue'er!”

Ye Chen, who was greatly surrounded at that time, was enraged when he saw that his younger sister had been killed. He bellowed in anger as he

dashed toward the Ghost Supreme Commander.

Having seen Ye Chen charging down the lines of enemies, his comrades had also advanced forth to assist him in slaying the enemies before them.

“To bring down the enemy troops, we must first eliminate their commander! My brothers, do not fear death, we’re bringing the Ghost Supreme Commander down with us!” aware of the situation, Chen Ziyu let out a roar too as his team immediately swerved to follow Ye Chen’s charge toward the Ghost Supreme Commander with murderous intent.

Right when they were rushing like madmen in the direction of the Ghost Supreme Commander to secure a kill, the three forces reached a consensus, that even should they die they will bring down one of the commanders of the ghost clan with them.

Upon their clash of confrontation, many players who did not purchase weapons from the shop had their starter weapons shatter from being overused. However, they maintained their composure by continuing the fight using rocks picked up from the ground, or even with only bare hands.

The Ghost Wolf Riders were stunned by their crazed battle stance, of all the battles that they have fought, this was the first time they met such a deranged bunch.

Along the countless deaths of many players, the Ghost Wolf Riders were losing many of their fighters as well.

The battle grew fiercer as it persisted, even the Ghost Supreme Commander had no room to let down his guard.

Eventually, with the players hacking persistently at the enemy lines, a path leading toward the Ghost Supreme Commander had been cleared out.

Although the players were surging towards him, the Ghost Supreme Commander was unfazed. Instead, he brandished his sword and slashed forward forcefully. In a sweeping flash of the dark blade, the players were wiped out.

“How powerful!”

Chen Ziyu’s face darkened when he saw the capabilities of the Ghost Supreme Commander.

“Take him down in numbers, forget the other Ghost Wolf Riders, just kill the commander!” Wu Guoyi roared as he led a charge toward the Ghost Supreme Commander.

Faced with the onslaught of hundreds of players, the Ghost Supreme Commander’s green irises constricted as his pupils narrowed. It was followed by multiple forward slashes of his sword which had once again decimated the advancing players.

Yet again, the players could not be scared away as they continued pouncing toward the Ghost Supreme Commander in a clamor of angry shouts.

Under such circumstances, the Ghost Supreme Commander finally could not hold out against the players’ extreme close-quarter combat and was surrounded in the middle.

A clattering frenzy of attacks were launched against him. Even players who had lost their weapons were attempting to clamber on top of the demon steed to bite at the Ghost Supreme Commander.

Though the players’ attacks were violent, they were still facing off a Boss Level creature whose strength and capabilities far surpassed theirs. As anger boiled in the eyes of the Ghost Supreme Commander, a green glow appeared, encircling his body.

“Roar!”

Following the Ghost Supreme Commander’s furious roar, the green light diffused in a sudden eruption and the surrounding players were completely blasted away.

At this moment, the Ghost Supreme Commander had gone insane. His sword was raised before the blade lashed out, killing all the players around

him. At the same time, his demon steed had reared up only to stomp down with such force that shook the ground, knocking most of the players off balance before they fell to the ground.

The Ghost Wolf Riders around them had also taken this opportunity to break into the players' lines, killing the players as they went.

Because of that, many players died and went into respawn cooldown.

When there was only one player left, the Ghost Supreme Commander gave a wave of his hand which immediately halted the attacking Ghost Wolf Rider Army.

As he rode atop his demon steed, the Ghost Supreme Commander stared down at Wang Damang, his tall figure looming over the last remaining player.

“Tell me why did you guys come here!”

“Say, big guy, did you think that I would be afraid of a bunch of traitors like you?” Wang Damang kicked the front leg of the demon steed but ended up staggering backwards.

“I can spare you, if you tell me the reason you guys came here!” the Ghost Supreme Commander stared at Wang Damang coldly as he questioned again.

“I am a descendant of the King of Beiqi. As for our reason for coming here, it's obvious that we've come for your damned head!”

Wang Damang's reply made the Ghost Supreme Commander glower icily, “The King of Beiqi is dead, how would he have any descendants, you dare lie to me!”

After hearing those words, Wang Damang saw no point in saying anything else. He took a step forward and without warning, he leapt upwards, a dagger in his hands as he attempted to maim the Ghost Supreme Commander's head with all his might.

Clang!

His attack struck the Ghost Supreme Commander's helmet, to which the commander was not affected in any way and had merely tilted his head.

Reflected in Wang Damang's widened eyes, the Ghost Supreme Commander reached his right hand outwards with a powerful sweep and caught Wang Damang mid-air by his neck.

“Last chance!”

“You think I'm scared? I'll be good as new in three hours,” Wang Damang struggled to lift his dangling legs and aimed a kick at the Ghost Supreme Commander's chest.

Crack!

The Ghost Supreme Commander did not give anymore chances. He swiftly wrung the boy's neck until it snapped.

# Chapter 21

Lu Wu, who had been spectating for the entire duration of the battle, quit the God's Eye view when he saw that Wang Damang had died.

From this battle, Lu Wu realized that he had underestimated the power that Cha Na, the Ghost General, was capable of.

This was just a Ghost Supreme Commander but even the strongest group of players on his side had no chance of retaliating. Which meant that if it was the strongest Ghost General, Cha Na himself, he could probably annihilate all the players on his own.

Seems like the players will require further development. For now, conquering Eastern Liuli is out of the question.

After some thought, Lu Wu opened the gaming website of Platform173 and clicked in to Battle Online's discussion area.

Peppa\_Boar: "I'm freaking pissed, this Ghost Supreme Commander is way too tanky, even a few hundred players couldn't take him down. I can't accept this, our Great Dragon Guild will continue recruiting members while we prepare for revenge in a few days!"

Strike\_Gold: "The Great Dragon Guild is recruiting members, our guild has discovered the ghost clan traitors and we need more fighters."

Ye\_Xue'er\_is\_the\_cutest: "Guardian Angels are recruiting members, we vow to kill the traitors of Beiqi. Our guild will reward capable players by assisting players with their equipment."

Finding\_Light: "This battle was intense, I could feel my fighting spirit burning. Does anyone have any spare soul coins? Buying at a high price, time to spend cash."



Invincible\_Loneliness: “Buying soul coins at 1:800, don’t hide them, highest price in history, no limit.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Cool! At least I’ve touched the Ghost Supreme Commander’s damn head, I’m feeling ecstatic.”

At the end of the battle, the players who went into respawn cooldown were spamming the discussion area like mad.

Not only were the prices of soul coins soaring, the big three guilds have also started to recruit strong players.

Many players who were clueless about the battle had also taken to the discussion area to enquire about the details of the fight. The number of comments were flooding the screen at a rate of hundreds of comments per second.

It was supposed to be an exploration quest, but the Big Three Guilds had forced it into a head-on battle.

From the fight, many players came to the realization of just how strong the Ghost General Cha Na’s powers were. Having that experience, the players were more united in joining forces, even player killer fights in the wild had reduced.

The reason was simple. The leaders of the three biggest guilds, which currently consisted of the strongest players, had had a discussion.

The battle had undoubtedly left them reeling, therefore, they had decided to temporarily put aside competing against one another. Instead, they were resolved to join forces in order to destroy the Ghost Camp situated at the forefront of Liuli District.

The peaceful development around the Ghost Mountains had led to overcrowding since huge amounts of players gathered there to hunt and advance their skills.

Luckily, the Ghost Mountains had a unique map where ghost-type creatures would keep respawning as the game refreshes, allowing players to kill monsters non-stop.

Going deeper into the Ghost Mountains, stronger creatures would appear, such as vengeful spirits, evil spirits and white-haired zombies. It was extremely challenging for the players, though it could be said that they were suffering happily.

Simultaneously, the rise of Battle Online had attracted plenty of gold farmers.

Especially with soul coins having a rate of 1:800, it was exceptionally tempting.

However, what boggled the minds of these gold farmers was how the game could not be opened in multiple windows. In fact, it was impossible to lend an account to another player. No matter what kind of tricks they had up their sleeves, they could not crack this game.

Lu Wu had even noticed that some businessmen in the black market of online games were offering premium prices for a type of crack tool in hopes of running multiple accounts in Battle Online.

Countless cyber hackers had also tried their hands, but to no avail. The game remained with having zero cheats and zero trade bots. Such outstanding results further boosted the game's popularity.

Lu Wu had full confidence about this matter, for Battle Online accounts were verified through soul-binding, so it was impossible to cheat unless the player had two souls.

At the same time, Lu Wu and Bei Li took in the suggestions by the players in the discussion area and went down into the underworld once more.

With the help of his multi-talented assistant, Bei Li, the headset was paired with the server. Thus, the issue where players found it difficult to record videos in-game was solved.

The introduction of this feature also helped in publicizing the game. By enabling players to post their videos on various streaming platforms, the game had gained more publicity.

The numbers of players had increased rapidly, hitting the 150,000 mark. Because of that, there were also more technical players.

There were three technical players in the forum who had caught Lu Wu's attention, one of them was a player by the name of Na Lanlan who drew a map of the Ghost Mountains, depicting the monsters in different regions of the mountain and their weaknesses.

The image had solved the troubles faced by many newbies in the game.

Another player called Dwarf\_King had also used the newly introduced feature of video recording to upload clips of the maps which he had scouted and explored onto the forum dedicated for Battle Online in the gaming website, Platform173.

Inside the Dwarf\_King's maps, the map fog which shrouded the nearby zones around the Mansion of the Dead was absent. Instead, there were four zones of wilderness, consisting of the Ghost Mountains where all the players were already familiar with, Langya Scorched Earth Zone which was at the West, and further in front were the Cliffs of Desperation as well as the Death Forest.

Dwarf\_King's post had topped the discussion area of Battle Online for quite awhile. It garnered the attention of many players while stirring up their spirits to become stronger in the game.

The final player went by the name of One\_Punch\_One\_Kick. According to him, he was a fireman who had lost an arm and a leg during a fire rescue mission. He was devastated as the unfortunate event affected him greatly, to the point where he attempted to commit suicide.

When he accidentally stumbled across Battle Online, he was moved to tears upon experiencing the game. The realistic sensation made him think that his

arm and his leg were back, which greatly astonished him. It was the first time since he lost his limbs that he was able to feel their existence again.

At the end of the post, One\_Punch\_One\_Kick gave his sincere thanks to the game developers of Battle Online.

His post moved the hearts of many players, but at the same time made people realize that Battle Online was freakishly realistic. It could even make a crippled person experience what it was like to feel their limbs again.

Not only were players comforting the original poster, One\_Punch\_One\_Kick, there were also players who expressed their gratitude because they too have found solace among people who had experienced similar misfortune. They found a place where they could be complete.

Once again, Battle Online had gained even more fans.

A lot of players had also requested in the forum for a top-up feature. They were hoping for the operators of Battle Online to quickly launch the top-up portal to enhance their gaming experience.

Moreover, Wu Guoyi had personally called in to enquire about this very matter.

There was nothing Lu Wu could do about it, his soul coins were barely enough to construct the Mansion of the Dead. If he launched the top-up portal, no doubt all 20,000 soul coins in his possession would be gone in a matter of seconds.

For that reason, Lu Wu could only make up excuses such as keeping the game free-to-play would be better for the ongoing development of the game and there would be lesser differences in terms of strength between the players.

Lu Wu was starting to feel the pressure from Battle Online's rising popularity.

Right now, the gaming experience might be flawless but the content was not enriching. He would need to quickly design more ways for an interesting gameplay.

After going through the suggestions of players, Lu Wu felt that he was a step closer to his ideals for Battle Online.

# Chapter 22

Firstly, this game style did not need to be a fighting game, it could be freestyle or a relaxing kind of game.

For instance, if they could take back Liuli District from Cha Na in the future, then players who enjoy fishing could totally fish in the Underworld Sea by Liuli District.

As claimed by Bei Li, the Underworld Sea was filled with plenty of rare fish, some with the ability to enhance players' Soul Strength.

Aside from selling it at the shop, players could consume it to enhance their strength.

Additionally, at the bottom of the Cliffs of Desperation laid a zone of murky land, which was currently the territory of the Rock Ghost King. That place would be great for cultivating new creatures.

Should they conquer that zone, it could unlock the ability for players to rear pets which they can even train to assist in battle.

As long as players could imagine creative ways to play the game, it could be said that there were endless possibilities in this underworld realm, making the gameplay so much more fun.

At the border of Liuli District and the Mansion of the Dead.

The Ghost Supreme Commander was looking coldly at those provoking players who were not far away.

He was unsure of the reason for the presence of all these weird creatures who called themselves the descendants of the King of Beiqi here at the Mansion of the Dead. Despite that, he was shocked when he saw many among them whom he had killed before.

Recently, his camp was disturbed by them numerous times already.

All these so-called players chose not to encounter him face-to-face anymore ever since the last battle, instead they had formed small teams and started their continuous provocations around the camp.

He initially thought that these weak existences would be terrified by a few massacres, but the fact was indeed the opposite, the disturbances were becoming worse and this had irritated the Ghost Supreme Commander. So he decided to bring along all of his subordinates to the Mansion of the Dead this time to identify the real situation.

But just as the armies crossed the border line, the sky turned dark all of a sudden, reminding Ghost Supreme Commander of the great king who was very powerful here in Beiqi, his heart then trembled involuntarily.

“Kill them all!”

The Ghost Supreme Commander suppressed his inner fear at once, he then said while raising his sword and pointed at the players far away.

The whole regiment of Ghost Wolf Riders immediately dashed toward the provoking players with their weapons.

“Your idea really works. These traitors really can’t stand it anymore and are coming over here!”

Ye Xue’er said in disbelief after catching a glimpse at Wu Guoyi who was also observing the situation beside her.

“Of course, have you ever heard of the saying, ‘the older the wiser’? Now, keep leading them in deeper, I’ve already asked someone to disseminate about this on the forum. By then, we’ll have millions of players, so we don’t have to be afraid of these few thousand ghost clan scraps,” said Wu Guoyi proudly.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu was also paying attention to this annihilation war which was initiated by the players.

Three hours ago, the three biggest guilds had come to a consensus with numerous groups of players in the forum on annihilating the Ghost Supreme Commander.

This post of the annihilation action had been pinned on top of the forum, receiving a great number of followers among the players.

Maybe even Wu Guoyi, the initiator of this war was not expecting things to go so smoothly as well. The Ghost Supreme Commander was really leading his men to annihilate them.

Those groups which were sent for the purpose of provocation were caught and wiped out by the army of the Ghost Supreme Commander very quickly, without any chance to resist.

While looking at the Mansion of the Dead which covered with heavy dark clouds miles away, the Ghost Supreme Commander swung his sword while leading his army forward.

“Let’s go towards Beiqi’s Mansion of the Dead!”

There was sand and dust everywhere at once as thousands of huge wolves carrying the ghost soldiers ran toward the deserted Mansion of the Dead.

The Ghost Rider Army kept bumping into players who were alone by themselves and killed them without hesitation. This further motivated the Ghost Rider Army, making them think that although there were a lot of players, they were all weak and fragile.

But when the Ghost Rider Army reached the Mansion of the Dead, they were startled.

All they could see was a myriad of players who were staring at them around the Mansion of the Dead.

“What actually is this? Why are there so many!?”

The Ghost Supreme Commander was very familiar with this area, but since he was away for a few months, he was not aware of the presence of all the



new creatures here.

“Retreat!”

The Ghost Supreme Commander could feel the numbness on his scalp while he was facing such a huge group of players. He was not going to continue to fight because even if he won, the price would be very high.

However, those players were already prepared for this, so there was no way that they would let him and his army escape. Once again, they gathered one by one quickly and formed a human barrier behind them.

This very scene was being live-streamed through a virtual helmet of a player onto the forum, letting those who were sacrificed watch this together. Many people were following closely to this counterattacking war.

Peppa\_Boar: “Sad day, this is actually worth my life. Let’s kill all the traitors, go!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Offering a reward of a million to those players who manages to kill the ghost clan scraps, you can do it!”

Numerous players were commenting on the live stream, the war was on the verge of breaking out as well.

The Ghost Supreme Commander was really shocked this time, he could only choose to retreat while encountering such large numbers of players, but he never expected that he was not allowed to do so.

In order to stay alive, the Ghost Supreme Commander suddenly waved his hand and his army turned around immediately, killing the players behind them.

“Stop them! Let’s kill them! Don’t be afraid to die,” one of the players shouted with rage.

At the very moment, the armies of players dashed towards the Ghost Supreme Commander from all directions.

Although most of their levels were rather low and some would be eliminated even with just one attack, this had motivated the fighting wills of the players, they attacked insanely as if they were committing suicide, splitting the whole Ghost Rider Army in a blink of an eye.

It was not that scary for one to go against ten, but it was indeed scary for one to fight against tens or hundreds.

The players had no particular formation of fighting, no commander, and no tactics. All they had was reckless abandon, they kept attacking just because they had an advantage on head counts.

As for the ghost clan creatures, although they were bloodthirsty and brutal, they were also afraid of being dead once again, but the players were not.

Death was normal to the players, despite the fact that it was just a three hour cooldown time, they were not afraid of death at all, they really could sacrifice their lives for good.

The players who were watching this on the live stream of the forum were very excited.

“Kick his crotch! Yes! That’s it!”

“Dude, on your left, left hand side, aargh, not listening to me, no wonder you died!”

A bunch of netizens were commenting outside the fight.

There were players who died and joined the forum from time to time, it was bustling both inside and outside the game.

Contradicting to the players, the Ghost Supreme Commander looked gloomy right then, although every time when he waved his sword he would kill a bunch of players, there were too many of them, too many that even the Ghost Supreme Commander felt it was hard to handle.

It was then that the steed of the Ghost Supreme Commander almost shook him off all of a sudden. He looked back immediately and noticed that a

person was stabbing the demonic foal's hindquarters with a big sword.

Off the game:

“Hahaha, great, a fatal attack, perfect!”

“I remember that this dude is the big boss of the Great Dragon Guild, his name is Chen Ziyu, he is really good!”

The Ghost Supreme Commander was so furious as if there were fire burning in his eyes when he felt the tremble of his demonic foal. He suddenly waved his sword backwards, trying to kill Chen Ziyu.

Suddenly, a figure dashed out from the side, pushing Chen Ziyu away while enduring this fatal attack by himself.

“Boss, take revenge for me!” the one who blocked the bullet shouted at Chen Ziyu before his screen blacked out.

# Chapter 23

Although it was just a game, there was still real comradery. Looking at the one who died under the sword for him, Chen Ziyu mourned for half a second before he attacked the other ghost soldier.

This was common in the battlefield.

Meanwhile, Li Tianxia, who was fighting together with Wu Guoyi, was grabbing tight onto one Ghost Wolf Rider while shouting to Wu Guoyi,

“Brother, I’ve got him, kill him fast!”

Wu Guoyi was stunned for a few seconds, then he quickly killed the Ghost Wolf Rider with his sword.

While helping Li Tianxia up, Wu Guoyi patted his shoulder, “Brother, your fighting spirit must be the most reckless here in this ancient era!”

Li Tianxia rolled his eyes, “Brother Wu, stop teasing me and keep killing, we shouldn’t let them get away!”

The two then continued to kill more Ghost Wolf Riders.

The players were happily killing while more and more of the Ghost Rider Army died, making them harder to resist.

Feeling no hope of getting through, the Ghost Supreme Commander howled furiously. He then jumped down from his demonic horse, swayed the sword in his hand aggressively and a path appeared before him.

However, before he took his step forward, the path was blocked by the players once again, making the Ghost Supreme Commander unable to move. It was impossible for him to escape.

It was then that a figure suddenly appeared from the side, a blue spark shone as a blue sword cut through the back of the Ghost Supreme Commander.

“Ha!”

While the Ghost Supreme Commander turned around, the aura around him expanded, throwing the sword on his back out.

After he turned and saw the person who attacked him, the Ghost Supervisor’s pupil constricted, “You!”

Wang Damang widened his mouth with a smile, “That’s right, it’s me!”

“How is this possible, you’re supposed to be dead. I killed you myself...”

The Ghost Supreme Commander saw the familiar face earlier already. At first, he thought these creatures had similar faces, but he knew he was wrong when he saw Wang Damang.

The Ghost Supreme Commander felt grave terror all of a sudden, he would never believe that such strange things could happen. Is it true that these creatures cannot be killed? They can even revive themselves.

When the Ghost Supreme Commander showed a sense of fear, all the netizens sneered at once:

“Hahaha, this is the end for the Ghost Supreme Commander, you should tremble as much as you can under the vicious power of the players!”

“[Facepalm] Under the respawning and plugins of the vicious power of the players, the Ghost Supreme Commander is finally in despair!”

“This is so funny, the facial expression of this NPC makes me feel so good, I’ve taken a screenshot of it; preparing to make it into a meme.”

“To the brother above, remember to send me one when you’re done!”

...

Confronting the Ghost Supreme Commander who was terrified, Wang Damang was ready to attack with his dagger.

“Just bring it on! I’m not afraid of death, at worst I’ll have to wait for three hours to respawn, if you’re so great, why don’t you respawn, too?”

“Go to hell!” the Ghost Supreme Commander’s face darkened as he could not bear with the sneering and swung his sword towards Wang Damang.

The furious attack by the Ghost Supreme Commander killed Wang Damang at once, leaving a deep pit on the ground at the same time.

Wang Damang’s death did not affect the players from feeling high. Once again they had surrounded the Ghost Supreme Commander and started to attack in groups as if they were the suicide squad.

The Ghost Supreme Commander could finally feel the horror from the vicious power of the players.

After some time, the Ghost Supreme Commander started to gasp for air, his speed of swinging his sword was decreasing as well.

His determination to fight was becoming lower, he felt helpless thinking of these creatures who called themselves players and could not be killed for real.

The players were becoming increasingly insane when they saw that the Ghost Supreme Commander was going to be defeated soon. All of them started to pounce on him.

“First kill is mine, don’t try to get it!”

“Stop pushing me, at least let me chop once so that I can get some experience points!”

“I feel like this big boss is going to give out high level red equipment, or something even better, shit, whoever gets it will be rich, get out of my way!”

All the players knew very well about the price of soul coins and the value of red ranked equipment. Lots of rich players who spent money in the game would be scrambling to get one, it was easy to get a few million from it.

Thinking of this, all the players had gone mad completely and squeezed beside the Ghost Supreme Commander, trying to touch his body after he was dead.

After the Ghost Rider Army was annihilated, the Ghost Supreme Commander was getting all the attention, which made his resistance more and more useless. The armor he was wearing was starting to crack, too, as it was being hit on continuously.

“Aargh! Get out of my way!”

Before he lost all his strength, a green aura sparked from the Ghost Supreme Commander’s body once again, sending away the players around him.

“How dare you’re still fighting back, just explode!”

“Deathbed struggles, just explode quickly!”

Within a second, the players surrounded him again, followed by countless attacks.

Under such constantly insane attacks, the fire in the eyes of the Ghost Supreme Commander started to shrink before it finally went out.

The moment the Ghost Supreme Commander died, tens of players around him leveled up at the same time. Meanwhile, the power of battle artifacts was switched on, breaking down the body of the Ghost Supreme Commander and three items appeared on the ground.

[Ghost Supreme Dawn Blade (red): the Ghost Supreme Commander’s weapon]

Attributes: Increase Strength by 18 points

Weapon skills: Wind blade (triggered every hour, doubling the damage for long range skills)

Equipment requirements: Warrior character class, Level 30 or above

[Ghost Supreme Body Armour (red, broken)]

Attributes: Increase Defense by 15 points (broken, so the effect is halved)

Equipment skills: Defense aura (broken, cannot be released)

Equipment requirements: Any character class, Level 25 or above

[Magic – Number One Rune: One of the accessories of the Netherworld Rune Device set, can be sold in the shop for 500 soul coins]

The battle artifacts had analyzed the attributes and value of the three items.

Looking at all three items, the gaze of the surrounding players was full of excitement.

...

In the bedroom, Bei Li who had just finished watching this battle with Lu Wu stood up suddenly when she saw the Ghost Supreme Commander give out a blue rune fragment. She looked surprised.

“What happened?” Lu Wu asked.

“Earlier, you said that you want to set a few hidden jobs, right? I think now’s the chance!”

“Huh?” Lu Wu was puzzled as he looked at Bei Li who was overexcited.

“This magic charm was used by the former top magic caster of Beiqi, Yin Jiumo, to produce the materials for special warriors. If we can get this thing, I’m positive that I can help you create the upgrading plan for a new set of rune warriors!”



“How is this thing so powerful?” Lu Wu was astonished.

“Of course, the idea of rune warriors have already been in my mind for a while now. Unfortunately, all this time I didn’t have the real thing to examine. So once we get this thing, I promise I can create a way to transfer a player’s job to a warrior!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu was interested as well, “Tell me about the details of this plan of yours.”

Bei Li nodded, “Rune warriors were the system’s name for a kind of special warriors created by Yin Jiumo, the top spellcaster of Beiqi. His process of forging needed a lot of materials which had to be fused by a forger. It was very complicated, but the warrior ability of the finished product was very terrifying.”

“However, since we have the battle artifact, it will be less troublesome for us. All I need to do is to examine the rune completely and implant the template into the artifact, then a hidden job will be created: The Rune Warrior.”

“Except leveling up, the other cultivation system for this character class is to collect runes. Every rune collected will be able to upgrade the ability of a Rune Warrior by a great deal.”

# Chapter 24

The players were bursting with joy after they defeated the Ghost Supreme Commander and his army.

It was a sleepless night for many of them. However, the next day, the players noticed a new notification message when they logged into the game.

[Notification of Berserker's first character class advancement into Rune Master]

Many players clicked into the message out of curiosity. Their screen display shifted to an empty area in the wilderness in an instant.

A warrior with a strong build stood upright in the middle of a vacant land. There were runes glinting in various colors on his body.

[Character Class Introduction:]

Rune Master: In their chase for extreme power, Berserkers abandoned their weapons and used their bodies as containers to imprint runes of the world to train their bodies to the strongest

Character feature: Whenever a new rune is drawn, a Rune Master can obtain the rune's feature skill and have a huge improvement in his strength

Weapons: Bare handed, boxing gloves

Character requirements: Default character class has to be a Berserker, with a minimum of Level 30

After the introduction window disappeared, the Rune Master who was standing on the empty piece of land shifted his body. The runes on his body started glowing and formed a noise similar to the revving of an engine.

“Rune of Strength!”

The red gems on the Rune Master's body flashed instantly followed by his shout. Both his arms started expanding gradually and his veins were popping out. Smoke and dust flew everywhere when he hit the ground with his fists. A huge pit was then formed on the ground and cracks were spreading around.

“Rune of Defense!”

The blue gems shone with radiance followed by his second shout. The Rune Master crossed his arms on his chest as he bowed slightly. A blue spherical light screen was instantly formed.

At the same time, a shadow holding a wand appeared in front of the Rune Master.

“Death's Call!” meteor rain condensed from dark aura poured from the sky followed by the mage's angry cry.

However, the attacks only formed ripples on the blue light screen when they hit. There was no way for them to break the Rune Master's defense.

“Rune of Speed!”

After the attack, the green gems lit up and the Rune Master was shrouded by a green mist. With a flash, he disappeared from his original spot and started flashing around with speed.

The game's introduction window reappeared after the demonstration ended.

[The character class Rune Master has various cultivating modes, the number of runes available to be drawn can be increased by leveling up]

Newest update, addition of Berserker's advanced character class: Rune Master. Addition of new NPC: Character Class Advancement Instructor

[A Rune Master can only achieve character class advancement after completing the advancement quest]

Introduction of character class advancement quest: More information can be obtained from Character Class Advancement Instructor Master Qu

There was an uproar on Battle Online's forum when the contents of the newest update were released.

Peppa\_Boar: "How original! That's so original! Looking for materials required for character advancement for a high price."

Lonely\_Carefree: "Fuck! Why isn't it available for other characters? Is Berserker the son of the GM? Can I change my fucking character class right now?"

KeyboardWarrior: "I condemn this strongly. Why are there no advancements for assassins like me? I'm jelly."

CashyPlayer: "Sad. Is there no future for a useless mage like me?"

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to CashyPlayer: "I'm a mage too. Let's cry together."

ThunderInCharge replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: "Count me in for the crying fest. Also, send the devs a middle finger."

Strike\_Gold: "Luckily, I chose to be a Berserker. I get to watch you all die from jealousy."

.....

A question post appeared in the forum as the players were discussing the update.

An image consisting of information about the character class advancement quest for Rune Master was attached in the post.

Requirements for character advancement into a Rune Master:

First stage: Hunt and kill specific creatures

Second stage: Collect materials to create a rune (Any one of the runes is required)

Materials required for Rune of Strength: Black burnt ore (produced in the mines in the Langya Scorched Earth Zone), volcanic core (produced in Flaming Hell), and 10 black shield fragments (dropped by Black Shield Demons)

Materials required for Rune of Defense: Black burnt ore, dead waters core (produced in Dead Waters River Area), Netherworld Pearls x10 (dropped by netherworld creatures)

Rune of Speed, Rune of Destruction, Rune of Flight, Rune of Explosion, Special Rune of Qiu Niu, Special Rune of Xing Tian...

Third stage: Character class advancement completed. Advanced character mode activated.

BeastFighter:

“Can someone please tell me, what the heck are these materials required for the character class advancement? Aside from Netherworld Pearls, I know none of them. I don’t even know where they are located.”

Replies:

Lonely\_Carefree: “Awesome, the tougher it is, the better. It’d be best if you Berserkers go insane from looking for these materials.”

CashyPlayer: “I agree with you. But then, I took a peek, the growth of this character class seemed really powerful especially the various growing range. No, I’m so jealous, I’m cursing you all so that you won’t find them.”

Peppa\_Boar: “I’m shook. Rune Master is really strong. However, the difficulty for the character class advancement must be even higher than we can imagine. Even from the netherworld creatures that we know, there aren’t many players who can solo it, not to mention the other creatures who sound really strong.”

Strike\_Gold: “I think I should find ways to improve the most basic strength, defense, and speed. The special runes seem to be impossible to be obtained by one person’s strength.”

Ye\_Xue'er\_is\_the\_cutest: “Objection! How can a great assassin like me not have such an original character class advancement? I’m requesting a rune assassin.”

All Ye Xue’er’s followers replied to her: “Everything Xue’er says is right!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye Xue’er’s followers: “Bootlickers, bootlickers. Lick all you want, you’ll get nothing in the end!”

.....

Looking at the players’ debates, Lu Wu rubbed Bei Li’s small head with a smile.

“You’re such a genius, you developed a new character from just one small piece of rune!”

Bei Li pushed away Lu Wu’s hand with her head. She looked proud.

“Yes, I’m currently researching on the mages’ character class advancement. I’m planning to release three different character advancement options for mages that players could choose from.”

“Which three?” Lu Wu asked with curiosity.

“The cursed path which is good at controlling and removing buffs, the demonic path which is a good attacker, and the gremlin path which is good at shape-shifting. Each has their own unique characteristics, all three are powerful.”

“Sounds great!” Lu Wu gave her a big thumbs up.

“How about assassins? What are you going to do with the assassins’ character class advancement?”

“I’m still thinking about the assassins. All the character classes I created require special materials from the underworld which will be added soon for the players which means that I have to create new body templates. It’s not like I can just add anything whenever I thought of it. So, I have to really think through for the character class advancements and research about them over and over again!”

“Can I help you in any way?” Lu Wu felt a little bit sorry, looking at Bei Li who had been busy with research every single day.

“You... you can just bring me nice food every day. After all, research takes a lot of effort and thinking, I will need many different great food to replenish my nutrients. As for helping in the research, I think it’s fine. The research requires very high talent and IQ, you will certainly not help much.”

Bei Li spoke with a serious expression and her words hurt Lu Wu’s ego.

# Chapter 25

Near the coast of the Underworld Sea in Liuli District.

A humongous figure was sitting on a throne built from the bones of various living creatures.

Before him, countless creatures were bowing and worshipping him.

“What is the reply from those of the Underworld Sea?”

A deep voice was heard from the humongous figure, causing the living spirit beneath him to tremble.

“Lord Cha Na, the Sea King said that those from the Underworld Sea will acknowledge your status as the overlord of Liuli District if you’re willing to contribute 100,000 Yin souls as an offering every year!”

Boom!

Thick flames were bursting from the throne. The flaming eyes were filled with endless rage.

“How can he be this arrogant when the King of Beiqi is still around? Does he think that I, Cha Na, am a loser?”

The black-robed Soul Liberating Envoy beneath him was shaking, “Lord Cha Na, do you mean... ?”

Cha Na went silent for a moment before he spoke again slowly,

“We’ll bear with it first and agree with his request. I will certainly make him pay for this when I have my breakthrough to the Ghost King state!”

The Soul Liberating Envoy nodded upon hearing his reply. As if reminded about something, he spoke again,



“Lord Cha Na, the Third Ghost’s soul flame has been put out.”

“Third Ghost? Wasn’t he guarding the boundary between Liuli District and the Mansion of the Dead? It’s a safe area, how did he die?”

The Soul Liberating Envoy shook his head, “Not just him, it seems like all his underlings are gone as well. None of them returned to report anything!”

“Was it the Rock Ghost King from the Northern Zone?”

Cha Na then shook his head, “It can’t be him. He wouldn’t do something so stupid as to form enemies with me right after he seized the Northern Zone. It should be another force.”

“Go investigate. I want to know who is going against me behind my back.”

Upon hearing that, the Soul Liberating Envoy took a respectful bow toward Cha Na before disappearing into the shadows.

.....

Due to the fact that Battle Online’s online forum was exploding with messages, Lu Wu and Wu Guoyi established a new official homepage for Battle Online after some discussion.

They gave the little gaming site a complete reform.

Some new features which were prepared earlier were added onto the web page, including live streaming.

At the same time, players uploaded the video of their battle with the Ghost Supreme Commander to both sites and other large video platforms, which resulted in a huge leap in the number of players for Battle Online, surpassing 200,000 players.

The number of soul coins had been increasing for the past few days even though Lu Wu hadn’t done anything.

Aside from the assigning of various quests, Lu Wu's soul coins had a breakthrough of 50,000. Therefore, the construction work for the Mansion of the Dead which was planned a while ago officially started.

Under Bei Li's control, a huge amount of soul energy gushed out from artifacts and formed a soul energy sea which engulfed the abandoned Mansion of the Dead.

The building started its renovation process with the assistance from the artifacts. An odd scene of half-fantasy half-reality appeared and attracted the gaze and attention of many players.

Unlike Yin energy, the renovation by soul energy took more than ten minutes before the building's form was fixed.

The onlooking players gasped in awe when a black towering building appeared on top of the ruins.

[General notification: Character class skills training is officially available. All players above Level 20 can now select the battle skills corresponding to their character class in the Cultivation Pavilion for training]

A huge number of players who were leveling in the wild rushed to the area where the Mansion of the Dead was located after receiving the notification. They were curious to see how the Cultivation Pavilion looked like.

At the same time, Lu Wu and Bei Li entered the building hand in hand.

The Cultivation Pavilion was known as the Library when the King of Beiqi was still around. All the cultivation techniques and battle skills collected by the King of Beiqi were deposited there.

Artifacts had stored and arranged all the ancient books during the remodeling of the library. Under Bei Li's reformation, it transformed into a fantastical and colorful place with a classical charm.

The ancient books inside were converted into shadows. Players were able to check out the detailed explanation and demonstration of specific skills by

clicking onto the shadows.

Of course, training skills here would require soul coins. Aside from soul coins, there was also the requirement of a certain level.

Although some of the players obtained improvements from leveling up and soul coins, they still could not withstand some of the overbearing cultivating techniques. That was why Lu Wu added many training limitations.

Also, Lu Wu asked Bei Li to transform the Cultivation Pavilion for the second time for a better distinction. She divided it into five different zones which were the beginners training zone, intermediate training zone, advanced training zone, spiritual level training zone, and king level training zone.

Due to the huge number of players, the Cultivation Pavilion had the setting of many channels. Each channel could fill a thousand players at most.

This meant that the actual Library was within a battle artifact, and numerous channels were opened from it. This was to prevent the crashing of the server from the flooding players.

The two wandered around the Cultivation Pavilion. After making sure that nothing was faulty, they returned to the world of the living.

At the same time, many players dashed into the Cultivation Pavilion to check out the cultivating techniques.

Warrior class skill zone, mage class skill zone, assassin class skill zone.

The three main skill zones were flooded with players.

Regarding character class skills, many players had been complaining for some time, especially mages. They only had the skill of the Yin Energy Bomb even when they achieved Level 20. This caused many players to doubt that the game managers never really paid much attention to the mage class.

However, the release of the few powerful beginner skills from this update brought good news for mages.

[Yin Soldier Summoning (Mage):]

Skill summary: Summon warriors of Yin soldiers by controlling Yin energy. Each Yin warrior's strength is equivalent to the player's Level 1 strength. A maximum of ten Yin warriors can be summoned at one time

Skill requirements: Training this skill requires 10 soul coins, and a minimum of Level 20

Skill leveling: Summoning Level 2 Yin warriors (available at Level 25), summoning Level 3 Yin warriors (available at Level 30)

Note: For each leveling up, the number of Yin warriors summonable multiplies by two

[Yin Corrosion (Mage):]

Demonic skill: Release corrosive Yin vapor with negative effects to form continuous damage in a large area

Skill requirements: Training this skill requires 10 soul coins, and a minimum of Level 20

Skill leveling: Yin Corrosion Level 2 (available at Level 25), Yin Corrosion Level 3 (available at Level 30)

Note: For each level up, the area of damage and damage points will be increased

[Demonic Possession (Mage):]

Demonic skill: Summon drifting demons to be possessed to obtain protection from the demon

Skill requirements: Training this skill requires 40 soul coins, and a minimum of Level 30

Skill leveling: Wicked demon (available at Level 40), Haunted Night (available at Level 80)

Note: This skill has uncertainties as the demons summoned might be affected by surrounding factors. The higher the level, the stronger the demons summoned will be.

.....

Looking at the release of the new mage skills, mage players who had been doubting their own worth were getting tearful.

It was finally their time to shine!

# Chapter 26

After sustaining a fight with the Ghost Supreme Commander, the players also realized the gap between their abilities and the Ghost General.

Hence, a wave of intense training took over the players' camp.

Simultaneously, many Berserkers started to exit the Mansion of the Dead into the outside world, searching for transition materials as they aspired to transition into Rune Masters.

In order to save the players' time on the road, Lu Wu used 5,000 soul coins to create two teleportation circles, both situated at the entrance of the Ghost Mountains and the Mansion of the Dead.

At the same time, he made an announcement, notifying all the players who had completely searched the area they were in to create a teleportation circle.

This was obviously great news for the players because every time they were resurrected, heading to the Ghost Mountains to level up required a lot of time.

Of course, the teleportation circles that Lu Wu created were not free, it required the players to pay a fee of one soul coin.

Lu Wu did not expect that he managed to earn back half of the expenses he used to create the portals just after a day.

While the players were obsessed with leveling up, at the same time, the official website for Battle Online released a new column.

That was the live stream broadcasting feature that all players were looking forward to.

This allowed the players who died during the game to feast their eyes during their cooldown.

Simultaneously, in order to earn more soul coins from the players, Lu Wu imitated the other live stream broadcasters and set up a reward function.

This reward did not waste real cash, instead, it was soul coins in the game.

Lu Wu even set up six types of gifts.

They were hearts (0.1 soul coins), cake (one soul coin), ring (five soul coins), flying saucer (20 soul coins), yacht (100 soul coins) and lucky crystal (1,000 soul coins).

Of course, all the rewards from the live stream broadcast did not go into the pocket, Lu Wu would collect fifty per cent service charge from the rewards given.

This meant that these broadcasting platforms were indirectly working for Lu Wu.

The first day this feature was released, there were over a thousand live stream broadcast requests.

After being screened through, they went online and there were a lot of live stream broadcast columns appearing on the website.

There were a few unusual live streams that attracted waves of fans, such as:

‘No money for Krypton Gold: Cute girl to sustain herself by earning soul coins from live streaming’ – 390 people watching.

‘Ghost Mountains individual level up strategy: Teaching you how to create various traps and upgrade to challenge wild beasts’ – 1200 people watching.

‘Create your own house: How to use wild materials to build a hut’ – 876 people watching.

‘De Ye in the wild: Opening up a new area and swears not to go home until the materials for Rune Master are all collected’ – 2876 people watching.

‘Live streaming taming zombie wolves in Liuli District: The eighth try’ – 3294 people watching.

‘Berserker body combat skills and instructions: From a real-life Special Force soldier’ – 2341 people watching.

‘The Mage’s Spring has returned: Guide to Wilderness Player Killing, today five Berserkers have been defeated, what a great day!’ – 976 people watching.

‘Assassin’s Message: Liuli District’s wandering Grim Reaper searching for ghost soldiers who have been left behind...’ – 2111 people watching.

...

A wave of live stream broadcasts made this game even more exciting.

...

Capital of Dragon Nation, in the Black Sea Technology Corporation’s underground research and development room.

Each and every one of the virtual game compartments were shining, undergoing the last screening test.

All of Black Sea Technology Corporation’s higher-ups were here, anxiously observing this experiment, because they know that if this were to be a success, then they would have the advantage of swiftly dominating the market.

In the development of virtual games, time was of the essence, if you were slower than the others, then you will have limited options.

Du...!



As the light indicators for all the virtual game compartments flickered green, the higher-ups of the Black Sea Corporation showed expressions of excitement.

“Congratulations, the game is a success. This batch of virtual game compartments fused together well with the nutrient solution to allow players to stay in the game for 24 hours without harming their body’s health.”

A white-haired researcher said excitedly.

As he finished his sentence, the research room was filled with cheers, as everybody started clapping.

After ensuring that there were no mistakes, the excited higher-ups had an emergency meeting.

“Since we need to put it on the market, the methods used to swiftly dominate the market is of utmost importance. What do you all think?”

There was a brief period of silence after the CEO said this, after a while, everyone started to provide their ideas and opinions.

However, most of them were about selling at low prices, so as to open the market and search for agents to sell.

At this moment, a young man sitting at the end of the table stood up and said, “Since our products focus more on serving the game, why don’t we look for game merchants, cooperate with them and use their fame as a way to expand the market? It would be a better option.”

After listening to this, everyone nodded their head in agreement.

“In order to dominate the market first, we’ll execute the proposals that you have proposed. At the same time, Xiao Li, you’re responsible for discussing with the game merchants on this. Don’t disappoint me!”

Just as the Board of Directors had made their decision, the secretary anxiously rushed in.

“Mr. Chen, our competitor Jie De just announced that they have developed the virtual game compartment during their press conference!”

After listening to this news, everyone was shocked.

The secretary took the tablet and connected it to the meeting room’s projector. In a second, the video of the press conference was shown on the screen.

“After many years of research, from today onwards, the virtual world will welcome a new age. This is because the virtual game compartment that everybody has been waiting for has been successfully developed. After multiple data tests, I can guarantee the stability of the game compartment...”

After hearing the news, it was as if a bucket of ice-cold water had been poured onto the people in the meeting room, and the previously excited atmosphere was gone.

No amount of happiness nor sadness will ever be like this.

After a period of silence, Black Sea Corporation’s CEO immediately announced to have a press conference. At the same time, all the proposed methods are to be executed immediately.

They must dominate the domestic market in the shortest time possible, they could not allow their competitors to have the opportunity. Also, they had to think of how to expand the market overseas.

The whole company was immersed in operating anxiously.

...

When the Jie De Corporation was holding their press conference, Lu Wu and Bei Li were sitting on the bed, eating their snacks in a carefree manner while watching television.

“Huh? Virtual game compartments? 24 hours of experience?”

Lu Wu was surprised when he saw this piece of news. You have to know that the only huge thing limiting gamers was potential. In order to ensure the health and safety of the gamers, he had to set a twelve-hour limitation on the game. However, upon seeing this piece of news, Lu Wu decided that an opportunity to allow the rapid development of the players' camp in the Underworld has arrived.

At this moment, Lu Wu's phone rang. When he answered the call, Wu Guo's voice came from the other end of the line, "Brother Lu, look at the news, the Jie De Corporation has announced virtual game compartments! You can experience 24 hours of gaming!

"I just so happened to see it, Brother Wu, why are you so excited about?"

Wu Guoyi breathed in deeply, and said, "Just now the operation department from Jie De Corporation came to find me. They hope that we can cooperate and also promote this cooperation. I thought of your game at the first second."

"This is a win-win situation, your game can help Jie De Corporation to expand its market overseas and Jie De Corporation could open up the domestic markets through our game. Their representative will arrive at the headquarters of Platform173 tomorrow to discuss with me. Including you, I have invited thirty other major gaming developers. You must be on time tomorrow morning!"

# Chapter 27

Platform 173 corporate headquarters, conference room.

Many well-known game developers in the country sent representatives to participate in this cooperation negotiation meeting with the Jie De Corporation.

Wu Guoyi was anxious, so anxious that he kept on looking at his watch, but there was no sign of Lu Wu.

“Mr. Wu, I’m afraid there isn’t much time left, the meeting will start now!”

It was the representative from the Jie De Corporation who said this. He was a classy middle-aged man wearing glasses and dressed in a suit.

Wu Guoyi sighed, just as the start of the meeting was about to be announced, the door of the meeting room was pushed open, with Lu Wu and Bei Li entering into the meeting room.

Upon seeing Wu Guoyi, Lu Wu laughed awkwardly and said, “I got stuck in traffic, I’m sorry for being late!”

“Please have a seat. Why did you bring your sister here?”

Wu Guoyi indicated Lu Wu to his seat as he glanced at Bei Li.

“My sister doesn’t like to be left alone.”

Lu Wu had actually planned on attending on his own, but as Bei Li saw him leaving without her, her face fell, like a little lamb who was left behind.

He had no choice but to bring her along.

Seeing Lu Wu taking his seat with Bei Li sitting on his lap, Wu Guoyi felt a bit annoyed, but said, “Everybody’s here. Orisa, you may begin.”

The man standing in front of the meeting table nodded his head when he heard the direction to begin and pressed the controller in his hand. Suddenly, a 3D projection appeared on the meeting table.

Looking at sheets of data, Lu Wu was confused, but the rest of the game developers were carefully looking at the data.

“I believe that everyone knows our corporation’s capabilities, especially in the virtual reality headgear, we are the first in the world. Right now, we have created something that is even more advanced than the virtual reality headgear. I hope that everyone understands the objective of this meeting, so we shall start with the discussion.”

“The data shown is data regarding the sales of the virtual reality headgear that our company developed. All of you here are the Dragon Nation’s biggest game developers, so I believe that if your respective games were integrated into our virtual game compartments, this would be a great opportunity to promote your respective games...”

Lu Wu nearly slept after hearing the representative sing an hour-long praise of his company, but Bei Li was already lying on the conference table with a trail of saliva at the corner of her mouth.

“Since this project profits both parties, we from the Swan Company agree to sign this agreement, but what are the requirements from your side?”

After listening to the introduction, many company representatives were persuaded.

“We would like to ask for five percent of the profits annually as a base for our agreement.”

“Five percent?”

After listening to this, everyone in the room became silent.

It was a difficult decision to make, so many company representatives pulled out their phones to contact their superiors, asking for advice.

“Erm... I am not interested!”

At this moment, Lu Wu opened his mouth to say a few words. His words silenced everyone in the conference room for a short period of time.

“Huh? Sir, may I ask which part of the cooperation are you unsatisfied with?” the representative from the Jie De Corporation questioned with a smile.

“If it’s on matters regarding money then no!” at this moment, Bei Li opened her mouth as she rubbed her eyes.

The conference room went silent again.

“Sir, this is a cooperation that would profit both parties, being able to integrate into your game would definitely help with the expansion of the overseas market.”

When Lu Wu was about to speak, Bei Li took the chance and said, “You cannot do that too, talking about money would definitely hurt a lot of feelings...”

Wu Guoyi felt deeply ashamed and silently tugged on Lu Wu’s sleeve underneath the table.

“Sir, what are your thoughts on this?” the representative directed his gaze towards Lu Wu.

“My sister’s opinions are my thoughts. I would like to reject this cooperation!”

Wu Guoyi stared in bewilderment. He had hoped that Lu Wu would agree as this was a rare opportunity, but he never thought that Lu Wu would reject it so recklessly.

In Wu Guoyi’s opinion, with Battle Online’s potential, if he was not satisfied with the conditions, he could negotiate further. Hopefully, the percentage could be lowered down until two percent. But he never thought that Lu Wu would firmly reject it.

“Okay, since you have made your decision, I would like to express my regrets but also I respect your decision,” the representative smiled and replied politely.

After rejecting the offer, Lu Wu stood up and exited the room with Bei Li in hand.

Actually, he felt confident about this collaboration, like what the company’s representative said, this was a win-win opportunity.

However, the biggest problem was that the Jie De Corporation wanted to collect a fee, which Lu Wu was unable to accept.

Although five percent did not seem like much, with Lu Wu’s ambitious nature, from the perspective of Battle Online’s fame across the world, this number seemed a little bit bigger.

Also, regarding the matter of expanding into the overseas market, he was also not in a hurry to do so. This was because he was confident in Battle Online, so he would not share any of the profits from Battle Online with anybody, just as how he rejected Wu Guoyi from buying the shares of Battle Online.

...

After taking Bei Li home in a taxi, he switched on his computer and opened the main menu of the game, looking at daily statistics and observed the gamers online.

After scanning through the main page, his gaze suddenly narrowed down on a live stream that popped up on the top.

‘Rise of Beast Tamer, the Nth try to tame a beast...’ – 38236 people watching.

Curious to see why so many gamers were watching this live stream broadcast, Lu Wu entered into the channel.

As he put on the virtual reality headgear and entered the live stream broadcast, he noticed that the scene showed a male assassin who was silently heading toward a zombie wolf.

“Ladies and gentlemen, please pay attention. This time we will use force to subdue it when it knows that it can’t overpower me, then we shall use food to tempt it. I believe that this time I will succeed in taming it.”

Just as the assassin had finished speaking, there were comments flying across the screen.

“Sad times, be careful brother, I will still bet that you’ll fail this time.”

“God of Perseverance, master beast tamer, dying on a live stream!”

“Brother, you are the worst live stream broadcast host I have ever seen. After following you for days, I can’t keep track of how many times you died, please stay alive...”

“Death is nothing to be feared, what should be feared is that you are addicted to dying. Don’t think that I don’t know that you tame wild beasts just to die for a reason!”

“Bro, I think you should go to the zoo and level up a few levels, don’t try anymore, I’m afraid that I’ll die of laughter in your live stream.”

...

Many comments flew through the screen, all of them were not expecting the assassin to be successful in taming the beast.

However, the guy was not deterred and firmly advanced forward to the zombie wolf using the assassin’s basic skill called the Shadow Step, and pounced on the zombie wolf when it noticed him.

At that moment, the assassin and the zombie wolf were fighting and rolling over each other.

Looking at this scene, Lu Wu let out a smile.



After defeating the zombie wolf, the assassin took out a self-made twine rope from his waist and tied the zombie wolf up.

Next, he did what he said, he tempted it with food and then overpowered it through force, of which he did all over again.

In the end, the zombie wolf was left with its last breath. The comments were all asking him to have mercy on the zombie wolf and let it go.

Just when everyone thought that he would fail in this attempt to tame wild animals, there was a hint of struggle in the zombie wolf's eyes. In the end, it lowered its neck to the assassin as a sign of surrender.

The assassin could not believe it either, so he carefully untied the rope and held the dagger in his hand, fearing the zombie wolf would pounce on him when it had the chance.

“Ooohhh~”

The spectating gamers were amazed when the zombie wolf did not rebel, instead it rubbed itself on the assassin's shin.

“Is it tamed?”

The assassin could not believe his eyes, so he randomly picked a stick from the ground and threw it forward, saying, “Go and catch it!”

The zombie wolf lifted up its head, looked at the assassin in confusion, and nudged his shin.

“It seems like you're not understanding enough, but then you're considered tamed,” there was a smile on the assassin's face.

After spectating this scene, the comment section blew up.

“Hooray for Master Beast Tamer, you really succeeded! Dude, you're so cool, sending some love (0.1 soul coin).”

“What the heck, after following you for so long, I always thought you were a comedic host. When did you become so capable?”

“Bro, you’re lit! I also want to try. This zombie wolf can become a mount to be rode on, thinking about it makes me powerful. Your humble servant admires you, hence I will gift you with the only three soul coins that I have (three cakes).”

“Ahhh, cool, the first mount in the whole district is born! Brother, you’re lit!”

“Congrats bro on successfully having ‘Pokemon Master’ as a secret profession, bring up all your Pokeballs and begin your journey of taming beasts!”

...

The screen was filled with comments, different kinds of heart shape emojis, cakes, and other gifts. The success in the taming of a wild beast opened up another method of playing for the gamers.

A huge wave of gamers were inspired in which they rushed toward Liuli District, each aspiring to capture a glorious mount.

# Chapter 28

Under the guidance of a certain host, a wave of beast-taming washed through the game.

Many players began forming alliances as they made their way toward Liuli District in search of lone wild beasts, learning the style of that certain host in taming the beasts.

Although the success rate was extremely low, the players were just having too much fun. Very soon, a few players got to ride a large-sized zombie wolf, leaving those unsuccessful beast-taming players in envy.

At this moment, a small three person group were trying to tame a zombie wolf in Liuli District.

Looking at the struggling zombie wolf that was tied to a tree, the three of them performed their various skills. Just as the zombie wolf was beaten to its last breath and when they thought they were just about to succeed, a figure suddenly appeared, levitating next to the tree.

Following the figure's appearance, the tree began wilting swiftly whereas the dying zombie wolf howled in terror.

Tendrils of black vapor rose from the zombie wolf's body as it entered the body of the black-robed figure.

“Fuck, you've got a death wish!”

Upon seeing their almost successful attempt at beast-taming being wrecked by the figure before them, the three players were so frustrated that they pulled out their weaponry to square up with the figure.

However, at this moment, the black-robed figure turned around, showing the dark gleaming skeleton beneath the black robe. With a flash of its red

pupils, numerous black vines suddenly appeared on the ground to trap the three players on the spot.

“I ask, you answer,” a hoarse voice sounded from the Soul Liberating Envoy.

“NPC?” seeing this person, the three players paused in surprise.

“NPC?” the Soul Liberating Envoy was quite curious as well, unclear of the reason why these people were calling him that.

Looking at the struggling players, the Soul Liberating Envoy stretched out its hand again, tightening the hold of the black vines around them.

“Tell me, where did you all come from? Do you all know why the Ghost Supreme Commander who was stationed here died?”

“You’re one of Ghost General Cha Na’s men?”

The three players were not stupid and had immediately guessed the identity of this person.

“Indeed, I am the Soul Liberating Envoy under Lord Cha Na. So now, can you all tell me of your origins and about the Ghost Supreme Commander?”

Hearing this, the three of them glanced at each other.

“Are we goners?”

“Maybe. He’s here to collect our debt. I remember I even kicked that Ghost Supreme Commander once at the time.”

“Shh, he can hear us...”

“Was it the three of you that killed Third Ghost?” the anger in the Soul Liberating Envoy’s eyes flared up upon hearing their conversation.

“No, wait, that’s impossible. With your capabilities, Third Ghost wouldn’t have been killed!”

“You’re just an NPC, what are you being so arrogant for? Do you think we’re scared of you? Let us go if you have the balls! I’ll take you on in single combat after I switch characters!” the leading player said in annoyance.

“Switch characters?”

Once again, the Soul Liberating Envoy seemed curious at their use of unfamiliar terms.

“I’m giving you all one last chance!” the Soul Liberating Envoy’s patience was running thin and he did not feel like continuing this conversation with these three weird creatures any longer.

“You don’t want to kill us since the three of us are very vengeful. We’ll kill whoever kills us so you’d best not get on our bad side.”

“That’s right, that’s right. If you kill us, we’ll get our revenge on you once we become stronger!”

“Hehe, taking revenge on me after death? I don’t think you all even have the chance of turning into default souls after this.”

However, the Soul Liberating Envoy knew that he would not be getting any information out of these three people anymore based on their attitudes. Hence, stretching his hand out once again, a mass of black vapor surged into the vines.

Absorbing the black vapor, the vines began growing quickly as sharp black thorns appeared from within the vines to pierce into the bodies of these players harshly, wriggling in the process.

“Oh? I am unable to obtain the souls!” the Soul Liberating Envoy was shocked to find out that the souls of these three players could not be possessed, as if there was some stronger force pinning their souls firmly within their bodies.

The disbelieving Soul Liberating Envoy lifted his hand once more and a large mass of black vapor surged into the vines. This time, red spots appeared on the surface of the vines, making them seem extremely wicked.

Under the intense attack of the vines, the three players who had turned on their pain receptor shield died in helplessness. At the same time, their corpses on the ground started to slowly fade away into a black vapor.

What the Soul Liberating Envoy found surprising was that there was not a single trace of the loss of soul power from these dead beings. Moreover, the soul that had originally been melded with the body had also mysteriously disappeared.

“This... this is impossible!”

This strange turn of events stunned the Soul Liberating Envoy fully. The situation completely overturned his knowledge of the rules of the underworld wherein souls would enter into reincarnation upon death and their soul power would dissipate into the world.

Just as the Soul Liberating Envoy entered into deep thought, a small five person group appeared in the distance.

“Boss, look at that fellow over there!”

The person who had been called their boss was a Berserker with a large sword strapped to his back. He had also come to Liuli District for some beast-taming.

Hearing his follower’s words, the Berserker looked up to see the Soul Liberating Envoy who was standing beside the wilted tree.

“What is it? I don’t see anything wrong.”

“Don’t you think his appearance looks a bit like that Mysterious Merchant NPC that was officially announced?”

“Mysterious Merchant?” hearing this, the head Berserker paused in shock.

Many players had only heard of the Mysterious Merchant and had never seen him, but all players knew one thing. They knew that there were a lot of valuables they could not buy in the shop that could be bought off this NPC.

On the forum, they had once seen a lucky fellow who had encountered the Mysterious Merchant coincidentally and after a series of negotiations, he had spent five soul coins to buy a fragment needed for the character switch materials of a Rune Master. In the end, he had sold it off for more than a hundred soul coins.

They had been so envious at the time.

“Brothers, we’ve struck the jackpot!”

All five of their faces shone with excitement as they hurried toward the direction of the Soul Liberating Envoy, fearing that he would disappear before they got to him in time.

As if sensing something, the Soul Liberating Envoy who was still in shock turned to see the five players rushing toward him with excited faces.

Once they closed the distance, the head Berserker came to the Soul Liberating Envoy’s side and tapped him on the shoulder.

“Bro, are you selling? Because I’m buying!”

Soul Liberating Envoy, “What?”

“All strangers take time to cozy up to each other. So, what do you say? Since everyone here was fated to meet each other, how about a discount?”

The Soul Liberating Envoy was now utterly and absolutely confused.

He wondered if these weird never-before-seen creatures had brains of cotton because he could not understand nor comprehend anything that came out of their mouths.

Seeing that the Soul Liberating Envoy had kept quiet, the head Berserker was somewhat anxious.

Could it be that I negotiated the wrong way? But that fellow on the forum who encountered the Mysterious Merchant never said how to do it. What should I do now?

Pondering this, a smile graced the Berserker's face once more as he tapped the Soul Liberating Envoy's shoulder.

“Bro, let's take a look at the goods. I heard that you've got a lot of good stuff on you.”

“Yeah, that's right, let's get a look at the rare items you have first,” said the other four excited players from the side.



# Chapter 29

Facing the relentless questioning of the five players, the fire within the Soul Liberating Envoy's eyes gradually flared up. Finally, with a swipe of his hands, a mass of black vapor appeared to surround the five, locking them within before levitating them off the ground.

“Do you all know how the Ghost Supreme Commander who was stationed here died?” the Soul Liberating Envoy tested the waters in hopes of getting an answer.

The head Berserker struggled for a while, but once he discovered that he was unable to escape, he looked at his companions helplessly.

“Huh? The Mysterious Merchant wants to show off his capabilities before making a trade?”

“Cough... boss, I've never met him before either, so I don't know how the process is supposed to go.”

“Then... should we praise him a bit to make him happy? So he'll give us a discount?”

Hearing the players' conversation, the Soul Liberating Envoy lost any hope whatsoever. With another wave of his hand, the black vapor began to surge and fold, crushing the five people within to pieces.

Observing the souls and soul power disappear mysteriously once again, the Soul Liberating Envoy's expression looked thoughtful. In a flash, he had transformed into a dark shadow that streaked toward the Mansion of the Dead with the speed of lightning.

.....

Everything that had happened here had naturally been seen by Bei Li who was on a 24/7 watch and she reported the situation swiftly to Lu Wu.

“Seems like Cha Na has sent people in for an investigation, but where exactly did this Soul Liberating Envoy come from?”

Bei Li rested her chin on her hands as she sat before the computer table, munching on junk food.

“The Soul Liberating Envoy is the next highest position after the Ghost General under the Ghost King and is in charge of collecting Yin souls to turn it over to them. Every Ghost King and Ghost General has a Soul Liberating Envoy beneath them and their powers differ from one to another, but they’re skillful in blood sacrifice spells.”

“Yin souls? What’s that?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“It’s something like money in the real world, I guess. After all, normal people aren’t able to collect this kind of soul power and Beiqi has a lot of districts that produce Yin souls. Yin souls are different from default souls in the sense that it’s more like a kind of material used in cultivation, but it can also be used to construct weaponry and equipment. It just has a lot of uses, that’s all you need to know.”

Lu Wu nodded his head, “So that means that Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals don’t occupy the area around the Mansion of the Dead because this area doesn’t produce Yin souls?”

Bei Li shoved a handful of junk food into her mouth and answered with her mouth full, “Mm, that’s right. Although the Mansion of the Dead is the capital of Beiqi, it’s the most lacking in resources.”

Even though he now knew the Soul Liberating Envoy’s origins and the motives of his visit, Lu Wu had no idea how to deal with him. Hence, he looked toward Bei Li who was still stuffing her face.

“Don’t look at me, I don’t know either. Soul Liberating Envoys are able to blend into the shadows and with the capabilities of the players, he’d be really hard to kill, eh.”

Seeing as Bei Li did not know how to handle this problem as well, Lu Wu fell into silence.

At this moment, Bei Li pointed a finger at the computer screen, “Wu, look at this. They’re discussing this on the forum.”

Lu Wu took a step forward and immediately saw the post that the players had just put up.

MetalBull: “Who can tell me why an NPC would be so unreasonable. I thought I was in luck when I met the Mysterious Merchant, but I ended up empty-handed and even got killed. Someone tell me why. I’m currently in an existential crisis mode.”

A few screenshots were attached underneath the post from the player showing the Soul Liberating Envoy.

Where\_is\_Mundo: “[Facepalm] Bro, are you retarded? Even if this guy looks like the Mysterious Merchant, can you please tell me which part of him made you sure that he was actually him? Can’t you see that he’s a skeleton?”

Soda\_Water: “OMG, bro, you met this fellow, too. My group of three met him in Liuli District as well when we were beast-taming. This isn’t the Mysterious Merchant at all, he’s a subordinate of Ghost General Cha Na. You’ve got real big balls, man. You actually served yourself up to die, I salute that.”

My\_CutieKing: “Where? Where’s Cha Na’s subordinate? This mage has reached Divine Skill Level 2 and is expected to be able to lead an army soon. Let me bring some Yin soldiers to slaughter him!”

ArrogantWolf replying to My\_Cutie King: “Hey, the little mage above me, how are you so cocky? Do you need me to take you out in single combat in the wild with my sword to teach you a lesson?”

My\_CutieKing replying to ArrogantWolf: “Mages are peerless in single combat. We are the best, the absolute coolest and we destroy brainless

berserkers. You better pray that we don't meet in the wild, because I'll show you what death by numbers mean."

SwordSkill\_Master replying to My\_Cutie King: "Stop tooting your own horn. Mages are awesome now, but don't you know that there's a different god in different versions of the game? Just you wait till we switch characters, then only one of us will be needed to beat your mage asses!"

.....

Seeing the comments and replies of the players, Lu Wu could only laugh. Mages' skills had been allowed to elevate lately so many mages who had been down in the dumps for the longest time had gotten arrogant. After all, with the Yin Soldier Summoning Skill, mages in the wild were indeed excellent in single combat.

Just as she wanted to continue scrolling through the comments on the forum, Bei Li's facial expression suddenly changed.

"He's here, he's at the Mansion of the Dead!"

Hearing this, Lu Wu's mind entered his artifact and began observing through the connection between the artifact and the Mansion of the Dead.

He saw a dark shadow floating nearby the Mansion of the Dead which darted into the Mansion.

.....

Looking at the Mansion of the Dead in the midst of renovation, the Soul Liberating Envoy's heart was filled with terror.

Yet, he still could not believe it, he could not believe that that dead king was still alive. He had watched him die with his own eyes and he could even remember the feeling of dissipation of the King of Beiqi's soul power clearly.

Thus, the Soul Liberating Envoy spent a long time hovering by the entrance before he grit his teeth and went in anyway, deciding to take a look for

himself.

After a walk around, the Soul Liberating Envoy fell into shock once again.

The damage he had once seen done to the outer structure of the Mansion of the Dead was now as perfect as it had been before, even the little details and marks were there. If he did not know better, he would have thought that the King of Beiqi had returned.

Yet, he could not understand why all the other buildings apart from the Sutra depository had disappeared.

Of course, this was because Lu Wu only had enough soul coins to restore the Sutra depository. The Soul Liberating Envoy could never have imagined that this was because Lu Wu did not have enough soul coins to restore the buildings like the material storage room and the weaponry room.

As he watched the Soul Liberating Envoy float around the Mansion of the Dead, Lu Wu thought of something. Subsequently, by controlling his artifact, a figure slowly formed within the Mansion of the Dead.

“Who is it!” feeling the sudden condensation of Yin energy, the Soul Liberating Envoy turned sharply to a spot within the Mansion of the Dead.

“Who do you think I am?” a dignified voice sounded from the figure.

At this moment, stormy clouds covered the sky and the large amount of Yin energy turned into a tornado that blew across the Mansion of the Dead continuously. At the same time, the figure began materializing more clearly.

“The King of Beiqi! No, that’s impossible!” the Soul Liberating Envoy was stunned and his body started to tremble uncontrollably.

Raising his head to look at the Yin energy blowing and howling through the sky, the Soul Liberating Envoy suddenly lowered his head and kneeled.

“Du Yan welcomes the return of my King!”

“Do you know what the punishment is for betrayal?” Lu Wu uttered in a low voice.

His voice reverberated in the Mansion of the Dead through transmission of Yin energy, causing the terrified Soul Liberating Envoy to tremble even more.

“I am guilty and am willing to die for my sins. I hope my King will spare my soul from suffering in consideration of my many years of servitude!” the Soul Liberating Envoy replied as he trembled in fear.

Hearing this, Lu Wu paused in astonishment. He had only just come up with this idea of playing a trick on him, but he had not known that the Soul Liberating Envoy would be so easily scared to the point that he would willingly commit suicide to atone for his sins.

# Chapter 30

Looking at the Soul Liberating Envoy who was kneeling on the floor shivering, Lu Wu thought, and asked again in a low tone,

“Death? Do you think it’s so easy to extricate yourself after betraying me?”

Hearing this, the Soul Liberating Envoy shuddered, and the soul flame in his skull thumped vigorously, pressing his head even lower.

“Please forgive me, my King. I am willing to atone for my betrayal.”

Bei Li, who was watching this scene, was stunned. She did not expect Lu Wu to act like this, and the Soul Liberating Envoy to be so easily deceived and surrender.

Originally, Lu Wu had planned to let the Soul Liberating Envoy take his own life. However, at the thought that he had served Cha Na, the Ghost General of Liuli District, Lu Wu had another plan.

“Atonement? How are you going to redeem yourself?” Lu Wu said in a serious tone.

At the same time, the Yin energy in the sky continued to gather, accentuating the powerful figure of Lu Wu.

“I’m willing to help my King regain the lost territory, and restore the glory of my King!”

Lu Wu was pleased to hear this as he had not even mentioned it. He did not expect the Soul Liberating Envoy to be so smart.

Lu Wu was silent for a moment, pretending that he was thinking. Then, he slowly said,

“What do you plan to do?”

As Lu Wu finished his words, the Soul Liberating Envoy jerked up his head to look at Lu Wu, “You’re not the King of Beiqi. Who are you?”

“Why would you say that?”

Lu Wu was a little dispirited. He didn’t know what went so wrong that he got exposed.

“If you’re the King of Beiqi, you would never release me even if I am of great value to you. I’ve followed him for thousands of years, and I know him extremely well. Moreover, I’ve witnessed his death with my own eyes, and his soul power dissipated on the spot. How can that be fake? Who are you?”

The answer of the Soul Liberating Envoy gave Lu Wu a headache. He was too inexperienced indeed.

“Who are you? How did you repair the Mansion of the Dead, and why did you come? The death of Third Ghost, and the creatures that suddenly appeared outside must be related to you!”

The Soul Liberating Envoy stood up, and his hoarse voice echoed throughout the Mansion of the Dead.

“Yes, that Ghost Supreme Commander was indeed killed by my people, and the next target will be Cha Na!”

Since he was exposed, Lu Wu frankly admitted.

Now that his doubts were answered, the soul flame erupted in the skull of the Soul Liberating Envoy. He slowly stretched out his hands, and dark flames blazed up from his palms.

“You’re really bold, aren’t you. Beiqi is not a place an outsider can mess with!”

Just as the fight was about break out, Lu Wu opened his mouth again, “Oh, do you think Beiqi is still complete without its King?”



“That’s not for an outsider to decide!” the Soul Liberating Envoy waved his hands, and the balls of flame flew toward Lu Wu.

Boom!

The figure that Lu Wu made with condensation of Yin energy was instantly crushed, dissipating into a ball of dark fog.

However, Lu Wu controlled the Yin energy again, and recondensed his own figure right in front of the Soul Liberating Envoy.

“Die!”

The fierce flames blazed and surrounded Lu Wu, burning him unceasingly.

The dark fog dissipated, and Lu Wu manipulated the artifact again, forming his figure at another place.

“Du Yan, you won’t be able to kill me!”

Du Yan didn’t believe it, and continued to throw his dark flames at Lu Wu’s figure, smashing him again and again. After his tenth attempt, Du Yan stopped as he realized that it really was not working.

Lu Wu formed himself once again, and as he was about to say something, Bei Li, who had been watching at the side said, “Wu, give me the manipulation authority of the artifact. I’ll say it!”

Lu Wu hesitated, but he nodded, and gave the authority to Bei Li.

Under the control of Bei Li, the figure gradually solidified into a young figure.

This person was a little like Lu Wu. He was dressed in a purple robe with the flame dragon, and a purplish ray of light shined in his dark pupils. It was as if he was born with the faint authoritative aura.

The familiar uncontrollable and dominating aura surged toward the Soul Liberating Envoy, and he almost fell on his knees. However, at the thought

that this person was not the King of Beiqi, he stood up instantly.

“Stop pretending that you’re him! You can’t scare me!”

“Du Yan, I’m not the King of Beiqi indeed, but his blood flows in me. The Land of Beiqi should be inherited by me!”

Just as the Soul Liberating Envoy was going to continue to taunt him, he saw the figure of the King of Beiqi wave his hands, and a drop of blood floated in the air.

As for the origin of the blood, Lu Wu was deeply in pain.

This was because Bei Li had suddenly grabbed his hand, and gave it a hard bite just now.

The Soul Liberating Envoy took over the blood, and looked at the figure of the King of Beiqi in confusion. Then, he chose to swallow that drop of blood.

After standing face-to-face for a moment, the Soul Liberating Envoy suddenly lifted his head and said in terror,

“You’re really the descendent of the King of Beiqi?”

“I believe you have the answer. Why would you ask any further.”

The Soul Liberating Envoy had mixed feelings now. As he examined the drop of blood just now, he found that it had the blood of the King of Beiqi. Although it was very faint, it was enough to prove the identity of the person in front of him.

“Why have I never seen you in all these years, and why did you return now?” the Soul Liberating Envoy asked in a deep voice.

Hearing this, Lu Wu took over the manipulating authority that was returned by Bei Li, and said,

“Beiqi is the territory of the Lu family. Although the old ancestors have died, it still belongs to us!”

“Hahaha, you must be insane. Do you think you’re qualified to fight with the Ghost King, and the Ghost Generals?” the hoarse laughter of the Soul Liberating Envoy was particularly offensive.

“Being qualified or not isn’t up to you. I’m giving you a chance right now, surrender to me!”

“Who do you think you are?” the Soul Liberating Envoy said with an ugly crack on his face.

“You must have seen and killed those creatures who proclaimed themselves as players, right?” Lu Wu smiled.

“Yes!” the Soul Liberating Envoy said unconcernedly.

Just as the Soul Liberating Envoy finished his sentence, the soul flame in his skull began to thump vigorously.

“This is impossible! You’re saying that you’re the reason that these creatures’ souls disappeared, and yet their soul power remained!”

“You’ve mastered the Law of Reincarnation!?”

The speculation of the Soul Liberating Envoy scared him. The Law of Reincarnation was the greatest power that not even the King of Beiqi possessed. If the man in front of him had really mastered it...

Fear had once again spiraled through the Soul Liberating Envoy.

“I’m giving you one last chance now to either surrender to me, or be destroyed with Cha Na. The choice is yours,” Lu Wu’s tone had also hardened.

“How can I believe you? Your plan to regain the Land of Beiqi is way too crazy. I’m worried that I’ll be beyond redemption.”

This time, the Soul Liberating Envoy did not rebuff. Instead, he stared at Lu Wu and asked.

“Do you think I’m crazy?” Lu Wu laughed.

“No,” said the Soul Liberating Envoy after being silent for a moment.

Then, his body gradually dropped, and he knelt onto the ground, “My King!”

# Chapter 31

Upon confirming that Lu Wu was the descendant of the late King of Beiqi combined with various factors which included Lu Wu's mysterious true strength and the possibility for him to control the rules of reincarnation, the Soul Liberating Envoy chose to vow loyalty and devotion to him after a prolonged struggle with his inner turmoil.

However, Lu Wu asked him to return to Cha Na to stir up trouble in the future instead of letting him stay.

The Soul Liberating Envoy went down the stairs made from skeletons and came to the side of the King of Skeleton's throne. He bowed his head slowly.

“Lord Cha Na, I'm back from the investigation.”

“Why did Third Ghost die?” the silhouette on the throne spoke unhurriedly.

The Soul Liberating Envoy reached out his hand from the black robe and handed over a dry branch.

“The Tree Demon? The Rock Ghost King? I knew it!” the voice from the throne was obviously angry.

“Is the Northern Zone insufficient for him and he wanted my Liuli District as well? Does he think that I'm weak? Why is everyone provoking me!”

“Lord Cha Na, what should we do?” the Soul Liberating Envoy lowered his head and asked.

Cha Na remained silent for a while before he opened his mouth, “Let's put it aside and wait until I could break through the Ghost King State!”

The Soul Liberating Envoy nodded his head and was about to retreat when Cha Na commanded again, “Right, please go to the Underworld Sea and tell

the Sea King that I agree with his suggestions.”

Upon hearing that, the Soul Liberating Envoy gave another bow to Cha Na, “I’ve got it.” Then, he gradually retreated.

After the Soul Liberating Envoy had vowed loyalty and devotion to Lu Wu, both Lu Wu and Bei Li burst into laughter in the bedroom.

They did not expect that they could settle this troublesome fellow so easily and this fellow was really going to put a spoke in Cha Na’s wheel. This situation had made Lu Wu and Bei Li crazily amused.

During this period, the development of the influence of the players increased rapidly as the reputation of Battle Online was spreading with high-speed. A lot of players with strong influence from game guilds also joined Battle Online.

The participation of these guild players had made the game even more interesting.

As the saying goes, where there are people, there is trouble. It was common to have conflicts among the players. Having players killed in the wild was the most popular activity other than killing creatures for leveling up.

It was frequent to spot small conflicts between two players which led to huge fights between two game guilds.

The influence of the players developed actively as all of the players wanted to improve their strengths. They often denounced the officials at the forum collectively for not setting up channels to top-up.

This was amusing to Lu Wu. He had seen players who complained about spending too much money in-game but it was the first time for him to see players complaining of not being allowed to spend money in-game.

Another group of protesters who protested were the assassin class players.

In their point of view, the assassin character class had become a low win rate character at the present stage. According to the players, they were so

weak to the extent that they would rather become autistic.

The reason was very simple. The berserker was a positive and firm character and its single combat ability was originally strong. Assassins could never be the rival of berserkers unless their player was very skillful.

As for the mage character class, it was much tougher to be antagonized now that it was revamped with summoning and demonic skills. It was seen as the king of player killing in the wild. It was a prevailing character at the present stage. Mage players who had been belittled with low win rates were finally able to show off themselves.

At least berserkers still had the possibility to have a character enhancement. In contrast, the assassins had no ability to have single combat at all other than moving stealthily around and bringing instantaneous explosively high damage, which was upsetting to them.

Lu Wu could not do anything about this. After all, the development of the characters should be in the light of actual conditions and this fully depended on when Bei Li could come out with it.

However, Lu Wu's question was soon settled by an online streamer.

The streamer had been joking that he used to be an assassin in real life so he wanted to teach everyone some strong assassination skills on his channel.

The streamer attracted the attention of a lot of assassin players. Lu Yi also entered his live streaming channel due to curiosity.

The title of this assassin player's live stream was: A Professional Assassin Teaching You How To Kill Reckless Berserkers and Vulnerable Mages on Solo, The Ultimate Application of Assassin Skills.

The live stream of the assassin was actually a practical tutorial. He kept looking for players from his enemy guild in the wild to assassinate them throughout the live stream.

Compared to the other assassins, his techniques were unique. Instead of fighting recklessly with the other berserker players, he utilized both the poison needles and close-quarter back-stabbing skills to deplete the berserkers' energy while wandering around using Shadow Step.

Berserkers could not overtake assassins from the aspect of speed so the berserkers could do nothing other than chasing after the assassin upon depletion. If the berserker players chose to escape, the assassin would approach and give the berserkers a stab in the back. After the health of the berserkers was reduced, the assassin would flee from the berserkers again and continue to release poison needles remotely.

The technique he possessed had a high win rate in his live stream. Other than a few berserkers with strong fencing skills, he basically obtained victory in every round.

While antagonizing a mage, the assassin would give up on back-stabbing skills but apply the poison needle skill to consume the opponent's health without giving the opponent a chance to get near him.

As for the mage's Yin Corrosion skill, it was a wide range skill so its damage would be less severe than a single poison needle's damage. Additionally, the assassin's health was higher than a mage's, so an assassin could deplete and kill the mage by wandering around using Shadow Step. It was not necessary for close quarters.

The streamer's despicable methods had gone viral in the forum. Many assassin players started to learn his techniques for player killing in the wild.

However, a lot of assassin players realized that it was hard for them to throw the poison needles accurately during battles due to the extremely high degree of reality of the game. Therefore, a lot of players who liked killing other players started to study throwing skills meticulously.

This post had made more players realize the importance of skills.

Although a character's strength was the first standard in the game, players with strong skills were absolutely capable to challenge other players of



higher levels.

For example, there was a berserker player who was very popular in the forum known as QingFengMingYue.

This player was currently known as the best sword player in the game. It was reported that this player was a well-known master of fencing in real life.

Although he was only at Level 15, he once defeated five players of Level 20 which allied to attack him during a guild battle by relying on his skills and sword power. He became famous overnight and he was seen as a skillful player in the eyes of the berserker players.

The posts regarding skills were the popular posts in the online forum all along. Also, the appearance of skillful players enriched the diversity of the game.

The game made the players feel like they were in a different world rather than just a game.

The post of one of the players in the forum left a deep impression on Lu Wu.

This player was describing an incident that happened to him in real life.

One day, his girlfriend asked him, “Why are you always busy with this game after work? What’s so fun about it? Can’t we have a proper date?”

He answered, “You will never understand. I have another world here!”

Eventually, they broke up.

This sentence had induced an emotional stirring within Lu Wu. He felt that the development of the game had gone beyond his expectations.

However, the other players did not have the same emotional stirring as Lu Wu. All of them gave the same reply on that post,

“Bro, you deserve to be single!”

# Chapter 32

It was three o'clock in the morning but the lights in Lu Wu's bedroom were still on.

Bei Li was snacking on chips as she raised her head occasionally to peek at Lu Wu who was cudgeling his brain for ideas.

Meanwhile, several papers were laid out in front of Lu Wu. There were sketches of various settings and written remarks on the papers. As Lu Wu pondered over the issues, he continued to add more notes on the papers from time to time.

Being the secret King of Beiqi, he was having a rather tough time as some of the players were perturbing him.

Recently, the players had gotten increasingly aggressive in requesting the developers to implement a top-up system, causing a severe headache to Lu Wu.

After some contemplation, Lu Wu took a deep breath before he moved the mouse to wake the screen up from sleep mode, intending to look for useful advice from the players in the forum.

As he scrolled through the pages, Lu Wu was attracted by a player's video game live stream which was pinned on top of the timeline.

The title of the post said, "A Battle by the Sea that You Wouldn't Want to Miss!"

After he clicked on the link, Lu Wu realized that this player was at the boundary of Liuli District and the Underworld Sea. The player was laying on his belly on a steep cliff by the sea. From above, he captured the scene under the cliff and streamed it for the other gamers of the forum.

Lu Wu had no idea how the player trespassed the territory of Cha Na, the Ghost General. His attention was quickly drawn by the numerous sea monsters that were rushing toward the shore from the offing of the Underworld Sea.

At the ocean, the water level continued to rise, eventually forming a huge wave that appeared as though it was going to swamp the entire place.

Riding on the wave was a sea monster that resembled a whale but was way larger in size. A naked man was standing on the back of the sea monster with a trident in his hand.

“Cha Na! Show yourself!”

“Roar!”

The sound waves of the man’s enraged roar turned into an almost realistic ripple and rolled onto the shore.

“What the hell is this monster? Its roar caused me to lose more than 10 points of HP and I’m now stuck in a negative state of chaos!”

The player who was overlooking the event ranted grumpily.

In the comment section:

“Bro, I’ll pay for your potions. Stop moving the camera. You might accidentally miss the great war of the NPC.”

“Stay calm. It seems like the NPC on the back of the whale wants to challenge Cha Na. He’s so bold!”

“The enemy of my enemy is my friend. Naked man on the whale, I support you to beat the bastard up!”

“Who is this man? Is he Poseidon? He’s making a grand entrance.”

“Haha, brother, have you been watching too many movies? He looks like the future self of the most popular livestreamer, the beast tamer. Can’t you

see all the sea monsters in the ocean that have been domesticated by him?”

“Cha Na! Show yourself!”

Another deafening howl resonated. The trees at the shore were shaken violently by the sound wave that propagated through the atmosphere.

“Oh god, please stop crying. It’s causing ringing in my ears. Oh no, I need my medication.”

The player who was live streaming the incident took out a red potion with a dejected expression and poured it into his mouth. He was worried that he would be instantly killed by the creature’s next cry.

Followed by the monster’s howl, a chilly wind swirled pass the shore. Then, six undersized silhouettes appeared out of nowhere, carrying a huge skeleton throne on their shoulders.

“Sea King, don’t push me too far!” as Cha Na spoke and confronted the overbearing Sea King from afar, flaming fire was aroused around his throne.

“I’m pushing you too far? So, what can you do about it?”

The Sea King lifted his trident with a dauntless face. Suddenly, all the sea monsters raised their heads and shrieked in synchrony.

Cha Na seemed to be upset by the Sea King’s words as he replied with a scowl, “Sea King, I have always respected you as the king of the ocean. However, you have been disdain me.”

“I don’t need you to acknowledge my status. I respected the King of Beiqi when he was still alive. But now, you are nothing to me.”

At the comment section:

“He is such a domineering Poseidon. I want to bear his babies. (From a girl who is addicted to the game)”

“This is great! The betrayer Cha Na is a son of a bitch! Punch him! Punch him!”

“This Poseidon is so fearless and manly! I feel as if my heart has been conquered by him!”

“Damn! That’s awesome, brother! He must have learned it from Haoshoku Haki. I’ll bet 1 soul coin on him.”

“Upon seeing the great ocean and our brother, Poseidon, I doubt if there are still pirates out there. Anyone wants to join me for a treasure hunt?”

.....

The Sea King’s words unreservedly humiliated Cha Na, causing Cha Na to appear increasingly resentful.

He clenched his fists and stood up abruptly from the skeleton throne. With his tall height, he overlooked the ocean.

“Since you want war, I’ll fight with you!”

“Haha! So, you’ve decided not to be a coward anymore? I reckon that you’re prepared for this war since you rejected my request. Am I right?”

Cha Na, who was ready to attack, suddenly paused his action, appearing confused.

“Did I turn you down?” I clearly remember that I told Du Yan to accept the offer. How did it turn into a refusal?

Noticing that Cha Na had stopped in his tracks, the Sea King sneered and raised his trident. Immediately, the sea churned chaotically and a gigantic wave rose from the water, which was at least a hundred meters tall. The wall of water rushed toward the shore mercilessly.

“Sea King, wait a minute! I think we’re having a misunderstanding!”

“Weakling!” the Sea King’s eyes were filled with contempt. The enormous wave continued to strike toward the shore as the Sea King had no intention to stop it.

Boom! The wave hit the shore. The skeleton throne which was carried by the six undersized creatures disappeared in a flash, leaving the man’s silhouette in place.

“Roar!” Cha Na’s figure expanded constantly followed by his bark and he transformed into a livid-faced giant with fangs and the height of more than 10 meters.

Coupled with several loud slaps, the billow repeatedly thrashed his muscular body.

The Sea King, who mounted on the huge whale, let out a long howl. The sea monsters began to approach the shore and surround Cha Na as though they understood his order.

“Sea King! When did I dismiss your demand? I’ve promised to offer you a hundred thousand sacrifices every year. Why are you still putting pressure on me?”

Surrounded by the army, Cha Na waved his hand and countless Ghost Wolf Riders and Steel Beast Riders appeared on the shore.

Upon hearing Cha Na’s words, the Sea King bent down as water spouted from the blowhole of the huge whale beneath his feet. The waterspout then launched his body toward the shore as though he was a missile.

Looking at the Sea King who was advancing toward him, Cha Na’s pupils contracted and all of his muscles tensed up. He then yelped and raised his fist.

Both of their fists collided and a gust of wind was instantly formed by the eruptive force, blowing away many of the sea monsters.

Drip. Drip.

At where their fists met, dark blood ran down their skin. Cha Na staggered backward.

The Sea King descended to the ground.

“Cha Na, I don’t know why you have the audacity to reject me,” the Sea King spoke scornfully as he looked at Cha Na’s pale face.

“Sea King, I told you. I’ve agreed with your request. Why are you still upset with me? Something is wrong here.”

Cha Na was shocked to learn the powerful strength within the Sea King’s body. The Sea King’s true strength was obviously far beyond his expectations.

Cha Na was no match for the Sea King.



# Chapter 33

There was nothing else Cha Na could do other than to suppress the flames of fury deep inside his heart as he confronted the pushy yet powerful Sea King.

“So, you’ve agreed? Fine, I’ll accept it but the offerings have to be doubled!” the Sea King added on to the requirement.

“You...” Cha Na’s face was ghastly pale but he realized that he did not have the right to negotiate with the Sea King.

The audience finally saw the Sea King’s true appearance.

There were three blue stripes on both sides of his face like the gills of a fish while cyan-colored hair grew on his chest. With his approximately two meters in height, he successfully subdued Cha Na’s imposing vigor although Cha Na was more than ten meters tall. He constantly exuded a dauntless aura, resembling a ferocious beast.

In the comment section:

“He looks so manly! But why is he not punching Cha Na? Go on and beat him up!”

“He is so strong! Cha Na is already bleeding after merely one punch! Is Poseidon possibly at Level 999?”

“Keep quiet please. I’ve already signed up to be a fan of Poseidon. I’m waiting for him to beat Cha Na up!”

“He has repressed Cha Na with one sole punch! So powerful! Is this character class available for the public? I want to advance my character class to be at Poseidon’s level!”

“Why are they chattering? Continue to fight please! I’ve prepared sunflower seeds and coke as snacks. Please, continue fighting! Don’t let me down now, Poseidon!”

.....

“Why? Are you feeling reluctant?” the Sea King reached out his hand to summon his trident. It then whooshed out of the sea and landed perfectly in his grip.

Cha Na took a deep breath and said with a sour face, “I agree. Please dismiss your troops.”

“Haha!” upon Cha Na’s surrender, the Sea King’s scornful laughter reverberated across the atmosphere.

He took another disdainful glance at Cha Na before he let out a howl. All the sea monsters immediately rushed into the ocean.

“You should’ve known this earlier. Why did you send your envoy to provoke me? Cha Na, you have to understand that, in the underworld, your Land of Beiqi is divided. The place is extremely vulnerable. You’ve been living for so long. Do I still have to remind you that only the strongest will survive?”

After he finished his words, the Sea King jumped into the ocean and a wave appeared at the offing, moving speedily toward the Sea King.

Upon seeing the Sea King, a hint of resentment flashed across Cha Na’s eyes. He growled as he punched the ground heavily. As a result, the earth quaked and the mark of his fist was imprinted on the ground.

“Du Yan, you’re tired of living!”

.....

In the comment section:

“We are balled up. Is the battle over?”

“I’m confused as well. What’s happening? Are they done?”

“What? Why did Poseidon stop? My sunflower seeds and Sprite are going to waste.”

“This is bad. I have to give this a poor rating. Poseidon is so unreliable! Why did he let Cha Na go?”

“Fuck, this battle ended right after I got excited? I’ve just taken off my pants!”

“I despise Poseidon. He seemed so strong at the beginning, but why did he leave after he merely attacked with some malicious words?”

“Although I couldn’t hear what they said, I think that Cha Na begged for forgiveness and Poseidon decided to spare his life.”

“The disgraceful Cha Na must have pleaded for forgiveness, or else he would have been battered!”

The live streaming channel was flooded with comments. The players were extremely unsatisfied with the Sea King’s decision to stop the fight during the climax of the battle. A lot of the players were upset.

Lu Wu closed the live streaming page before he turned to look at Bei Li who was still eating.

“Little Li, who is this guy?”

“Hmm?”

Bei Li was still chewing on food. With her puffed cheeks, she stared at Lu Wu, looking confused.

Lu Wu massaged his forehead before he pointed at the screenshot on the screen, “This guy with the hairy chest.”

Bei Li finally heard Lu Wu. She craned her neck, swallowed the food in her mouth and took a glimpse at the screen.

“The Sea King? He is a powerful character. He has fought multiple times with the Lord King of Beiqi.”

“He fought with my ancestors before?”

Bei Li nodded her head firmly. “Yes, they often fought with each other. The King of Beiqi would disturb the Sea King whenever he was free. There was one time when the King of Beiqi brought me along. I even witnessed as the Lord King of Beiqi pressed him on the ground and rubbed him against the floor. It looked so painful!”

Lu Wu was dumbfounded. “Why did my ancestors want to fight with him?”

Bei Li shrugged and replied, “Did he need a reason to start a fight? Perhaps, the Lord King of Beiqi wanted to bully him.”

“Bu... bully him?”

Upon recalling the domineering Sea King, Lu Wu massaged his forehead once again. His ancestor was really powerful if he was capable to pin a strong man on the ground to torture him. Just like what he expected, he was still far weaker than his ancestor.

“Oh, yes. Why are you asking about the Sea King?” Bei Li asked as she reached out for the bag of snacks, took out a box of chocolate and opened the wrapper.

As a reply, Lu Wu told her about the event he witnessed via the live stream just now.

“Cha Na was thrashed?” Bei Li was shocked at first. Then, she giggled. “He deserves it!”

“After the King of Beiqi’s death, the Sea King must have thought that he could never retaliate against the abuse he received. To vent his anger, he could only beat up the Lord King of Beiqi’s then subordinate.”

“Is the Sea King the strongest in the Underworld Sea?” Lu Wu asked.

“Pfft!”

Bei Li choked on the soda that she was drinking, “Cough... hahaha!”

Noticing that Bei Li was staring at him as if he was an idiot, he replied with a half-hearted smile, looking embarrassed, “What’s wrong?”

“Do you know how vast the Underworld Sea is? The Sea King is only an overlord of the water beside the Land of Beiqi. How can he be the king of the Underworld Sea? Even the Lord King of Beiqi couldn’t conquer the Underworld Sea during his heyday.”

“The Underworld Sea connects all the large domains of the underworld. Its area is almost as extensive as the land. Meanwhile, the Underworld Sea is divided into seven parts. The Sea King is merely one of the overlords among the seven sea areas. He doesn’t even dominate the sea area.”

“He can’t dominate one sea area even when he is so strong?”

Lu Wu was astonished by the Sea King’s true strength just now. He genuinely thought that he was a very powerful character.

Bei Li nodded. “Based on the Lord King of Beiqi’s words, the nearest sea area to us is known as the Void Ocean and the overlord of this sea area was Taowu. Allegedly, he is a formidable leader. Even the Lord King of Beiqi was no match for him when he was still alive. The Sea King is only Taowu’s underling who is in charge of a subarea.”

For a while, the room was silent as Lu Wu attempted to take in the information. Finally, he raised his head.

“Little Li, what do you think about forming a navy after we conquer Liuli District? If the Sea King attacks us with a blitz, we are not capable of defending ourselves at all.”

Bei Li nodded, acknowledging Lu Wu’s idea, “I’ve had the same thought before. However, we have to restore the equipment depot of the Mansion of the Dead first. There are a lot of blueprints inside the room, including the

design of a Specter Ship which is able to grow by consuming raw materials. Restoring the place will be helpful for the development of our players' abilities.”

# Chapter 34

Initially, Lu Wu planned to follow Bei Li's suggestion and immediately restore the equipment depot.

However, after he learned from Bei Li that a whopping 500,000 soul coins were required for the restoration, Lu Wu decided to abandon his plan temporarily.

The reason was simple. Unlike the Library where only books were stored, a lot of items in the equipment depot contained soul power. As extra soul power would be required to fill the soul equipment, it would cost them greatly if they were to restore the depot.

However, the construction of a Specter Ship, which was also mentioned by Bei Li, had attracted Lu Wu's attention.

According to her, the Specter Ship was a unique ship that could devour any spiritual materials in the world to self-remold and evolve.

The ship was indestructible. Even if it was completely dismantled, the ship could return to its original form after it consumed a large amount of spiritual materials as long as its core was still intact. Therefore, it was very suitable for gamers.

By the time they got their hands on the blueprint, they could start producing basic models of a Specter Ship and sell them to the players. Then, the players could proceed to customize and upgrade their ships.

Lu Wu hit upon an idea, thinking that he might be able to make development simultaneously on land and at sea.

Meanwhile, the live streaming video that was broadcast on the forum yesterday had evoked a strong desire among the gamers to visit the Underworld Sea. Many fans were ready to build ships on their own,

intending to rescue Liuli District from Cha Na before they commenced their voyage.

Cha Na of Liuli District had now become a thorn in the players' sides. They were itching to eliminate him for good.

However, many players had watched the scene at the shore. They knew how powerful Cha Na was. With the capability of the current players, they would not stand a chance against him.

Even if they had an advantage because of their huge numbers, they were still no match for Cha Na in terms of their individual strength. Hence, they had to focus on their personal development.

But there was never a lack of talents in the forum. Soon, a few Strategy Masters had started to chalk out a stratagem.

On the other hand, some illogical players intended to hunt for Poseidon in the Underworld Sea in order to team up with him.

However, the suggestion was immediately rejected.

Although a lot of players adored the fearless Poseidon, they knew that this man was not an easy man. Considering that even Cha Na had to bow down to him, it was impossible for the players to negotiate their terms.

In spite of that, the players had not been demotivated. They began to map out a new operation plan and, at the same time, allowed the other players to store their strength. Once they were strong enough, they were bound to wipe out the Ghost General, Cha Na, and pillage his territories.

Meanwhile, for the players' convenience, Lu Wu told Bei Li to add in a new feature for the game – an auction house.

The auction house allowed the players to easily search for required items. Players would now be able to find an item, which had been priced by the other players, just by typing the name of the item in the search bar.



As for those gamers who were of a higher level and wished to obtain advanced equipment, they could sell off their unneeded weapons in exchange for the equipment.

Inevitably, Lu Wu charged for the service, imposing twenty percent of the total sales in soul coins.

On the day the feature was launched, tens of thousands of items were placed in the transaction column.

There were a variety of items on sale. Other than weapons and armor, some players were even selling peculiar stones at an insane price, hoping to snap up bargains.

Many players could not help but rant about the omnipresence of unscrupulous merchants, causing some experienced players to recall the times when they were cheated in other games.

.....

The next day after the launch, Lu Wu was sleeping soundly before Bei Li woke him up by shaking him strenuously.

Lu Wu opened his eyes and was instantly terrified by Bei Li who was staring at him with a pair of glowing eyes and a shabby dagger in her hand.

“Wu, I’ve found a way for the assassins to advance their character classes!”

“Calm down. Can you please put the dagger down?” Lu Wu pulled up his quilt nervously.

Appearing excited, Bei Li took a step backward and made a stroke in the air with the dagger.

“This is a relic of the Cursed Clan. To my surprise, it was found by a player! I think there’s a chance for the assassins to undergo class advancement.”

Lu Yi glanced at the rusty dagger with an apparent broken knife edge. He did not find it special.

“Is this thing powerful?”

Bei Li nodded her head vigorously, “Absolutely! This is the weapon of the Cursed Clan, I’ve been considering to develop the Cursed Clan as the assassins’ class advancement or hidden character class. However, it had always been merely an idea. This time, it can finally be materialized!”

Lu Wu was astonished by Bei Li’s proposal, “Tell me all the details. What’s this about?”

Bei Li gave another firm nod before she explained, “The cursed apostles once formed an influential clan in the Land of Beiqi. This clan was said to be related with the Naraka of the Underworld’s large domain. All the clan members were born killers, possessing the ability to summon the Cursed Demons. In the past, they declared defiance to the Lord King of Beiqi and was violently quelled by the great army led by the King of Beiqi. The word is that the clan has vanished from the Land of Beiqi. I was surprised when I discovered the object. I was planning to try my luck and search for it at the equipment depot after it’s completely restored.”

As Bei Li spoke, her eyes narrowed and turned into a crescent moon-like shape.

“I was bored just now, so I decided to check out the auction house. Eventually, I found this cursed weapon. I’m not sure who the player was who put it on sale and it was only worth five soul coins. Haha, I got myself a great bargain!”

“What’s the strength of the item?” Lu Wu replied with a grin.

“I’ll demonstrate it to you,” Bei Li held Lu Wu’s hand and immediately activated the artifact to travel to the Mansion of the Dead.

Still in his pajamas, Lu Wu was dragged by Bei Li into the laboratory in the Mansion of the Dead.

Bei Li toyed with the dagger. Then, with the assistance of the experimental machine, the dagger was disintegrated into innumerable tiny particles. Bei Li waved her hands. Followed by that, the particles were absorbed by the subring, an artifact in her hand, and were transmitted into the space of a battle artifact and turned into a series of data.

Immediately, Bei Li began to meticulously arrange the numbers.

After two hours of work, Bei Li finally put on a big smile, appearing excited.

Lu Wu immediately went forward. He quickly noticed the content that was converted from the data.

[Introduction of Character Class]:

[The Cursed Apostle]: The ones who are willing to be cursed and abandon their faiths in order to turn into the wielders of death. The Cursed Apostles obtain their source of power from pain. From their perspective, death is the beginning, while life is nothing but hell.

Character Class Specialty: Possess the cursing power and the ability to summon the Cursed Demons.

Weapon: Dagger

“That’s awesome!” Lu Wu, out of pure thrill, rustled Bei Li’s hair.

“Don’t disturb me. This isn’t complete yet. Give me a minute!” in her lab coat, Bei Li pouted as she gave Lu Wu a push, causing Lu Wu to stagger backward.

Bei Li promptly returned to work.

Lu Wu felt reassured and relieved.

Behind every successful man, there is an almighty woman. Who can deny that?

.....

At noon, a notification alerted all players in the game.

“Server Announcement. Game update. New character class upgrade for assassin’s advancement: The Cursed Apostle.”

# Chapter 35

Upon seeing the server announcement, the assassins in the game were fired up.

After they entered the class demonstration of the character class, the surrounding of the players rapidly changed to the familiar wilderness.

At the bare plain, the Rune Master had transformed into a silhouette who wore a tight black suit on his body and a demon mask on his face.

[Introduction of Character Class]:

[The Cursed Apostle]: The ones who are willing to be cursed and abandon their faiths in order to turn into the wielders of death. The Cursed Apostles obtain their source of power from pain. From their perspective, death is the beginning, while life is nothing but hell.

Character Class Specialty: Possess the cursing power and the ability to summon the Cursed Demons.

Weapon: Dagger

Prerequisites for the Character Class: Players must be Level 30 and above, with assassin as their default class.

After the introduction faded out, the silhouette began to move.

“First Level of the Naraka Realm – The Night Killer”

As the voice disappeared, a black circular formation appeared beneath the Cursed Apostle’s feet. Followed by that, a dense black fog spewed out of the formation and the demons’ cries reverberated across the atmosphere. It seemed like there were a mass of black, shrivelled-up arms reaching out of the formation, as though they were trying to grab onto something. But, soon, they disappeared in a flash.

Followed by the surfacing of the formation, a three-meter-tall shadow of the demon slowly appeared behind the Cursed Apostle.

The demon, which was crimson from head to toe, wore a livid face. Holding a bloody blade in its hand, it emitted an extremely intimidating aura.

After the formation disappeared, the Cursed Apostle made a strike with the dagger. In the meantime, the Night Killer Demon imitated the Cursed Apostle's action and charged forward with the bloody blade. All of a sudden, a beam of red light flashed past, leaving a bottomless crack on the surface of the ground.

The scene paused and an introduction of the skill popped up.

[First Level of the Naraka Realm, the Night Killer's Spell]: Summon the Night Killer Demon as Guardian Apostle for 30 minutes. During this period of time, any attack will strengthen the power of the Night Killer. Meanwhile, with the protection of the Night Killer, any damage the player suffered will be reduced by fifteen percent.

The introduction of the skill disappeared and the tutorial continued.

“Second Level of the Naraka Realm – Avīci”

As the second skill was activated, the Night Killer Demon vanished. This time, another formation emerged under the Cursed Apostle's feet. The shadow of an Avīci Demon, coupled with a pair of wings, appeared behind the Cursed Apostle.

The Avīci Demon made a strenuous flap with its wings and brought the Cursed Apostle into the air.

In mid-air, the Cursed Apostle launched an attack with his dagger. The shadow of the Avīci Demon then let out a low growl before it dashed toward the direction where the dagger was pointing at.

“Boom!”

The earth quaked and a deep pit appeared at the area of explosion while raging fire burned relentlessly within the pit.

“Thud!”

The Cursed Apostle gradually descended from above. His toes gently touched the ground before he eventually made a landing.

[Second Level of Naraka Realm – the Avīci Demon’s Nihility]: Summon the Avīci Demon as an Attacking Apostle for one minute. Within this period of time, players will be granted the ability to fly. Players are allowed to choose an area as the Avīci Demon’s target. Extensive damage will subsequently be triggered.

“Third Level of Naraka Realm – Prajñā Scarification”

After the third skill was actuated, the third formation took shape on the ground.

Out of the players’ expectations, this time, what appeared at the back of the Cursed Apostle was not a demon, but a golden buddha that was sitting cross-legged on a lotus throne.

Meanwhile, a berserker, who held a silver greatsword in his hand, materialized before the Cursed Apostle.

“Argh!”

The berserker roared as he charged toward the Cursed Apostle.

The Cursed Apostle gave the berserker a chilling gaze before he lifted the dagger and thrust it forward.

All of a sudden, the berserker, who was initially storming forward, was stunned and stopped in his tracks. He struggled with a scowl on his face, but there was no way for him to break free from this invisible fetter.

Before long, the players were astonished by the subsequent scene. The Cursed Apostle lifted the dagger and mercilessly stabbed himself in his

chest.

“Puff!”

The Cursed Apostle was not injured by the self-mutilation at all. On the contrary, blood gushed out from the mouth of the berserker, who was at a distance, and his chest was punctured.

Upon seeing that, the Cursed Apostle sneered. Then, he moved the dagger to his neck and stabbed it ferociously.

At this moment, an amicable smile was painted across the face of the Prajñā Golden Buddha’s statue. As if a kind man who offered salvation to all sentient beings, the Buddha shimmered in glory and an enormous symbol ascended above his head.

The color of the bloodstain on the neck of the berserker gradually darkened. He then fell onto the ground and dissipated into a waft of black smoke.

[Level Three of the Naraka Realm – the Prajñā Scarification’s Ultimate Move]: One of the three ultimate levels. Reincarnate as the Prajñā Magic Buddha for one minute. Within this period, the targeted opponent will be forcefully controlled and restricted. In the meantime, any damage suffered by the Cursed Apostle will be reduced by 85 percent and the chosen target will bear the damage instead.

.....

Once the class demonstration of the 18 levels of Naraka were completed, another notification popped up:

[Attention: The Cursed Apostle will be able to illustrate 18 types of demons of the Naraka Realm and possess the ability to perform 18 forms of attacks, that consists of four stages ranging from basic to advanced, namely spell, nihility, void, and ultimate. Among all the levels, the third, ninth, and 18th are levels of extreme evilness, which will be exceptionally difficult to acquire. For further details, please refer to the Class Advancement Instructor.]



The notice regarding the class advancement of the Cursed Apostle electrified the players.

Strike\_Gold: “Fuck! I have a feeling that the Cursed Apostle who grasps all 18 Naraka Realms will be more powerful than the Rune Master. This is insane! He can kill his opponents by inflicting suicide. He is matchless!”

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “Argh! Please allow me to undergo class advancement immediately! I want to rule the Naraka Realm. This is so cool! Nothing is better than fighting alongside the shadows of the demons! As expected, assassins are the best job in the game. The remaining character classes will be thrashed within a fraction of a second.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “How about the mage? My middle finger is losing control. Someone please hold it down for me.”

Assassin\_Creed: “I’m on my way to find the Class Advancement Instructor. I think I will get insomnia if I don’t complete the class advancement now.”

A\_Mammoth: “Honestly, the Cursed Apostle is terrific! This character class completely fulfills my fantasy, especially the shadows of the demons behind the player. I’m begging for class advancement materials. I want to go through class advancement right now!”

Black\_Witch: “What happened to the wonderland the mages were promised? How can assassins turn so powerful? All the mages will be dead if we encounter an assassin who has mastered the third level of Naraka Realm in the later stages of the game.”

Jia\_Xu: “Shut up, everyone. I predict that Athena will be the class advancement for mage. Successful class advancement would immediately promote the character class to god. Then, we will be able to destroy the earth within a second.”

A\_Mysterious\_Deity replied Jia\_Xu: “That’s bullshit. Athena? Do you want me to send over a few cockroaches for you to form a team of Saint Seiya?”

.....

Following the debut of the Cursed Apostle, all the assassins were pumped up.

In the public's opinion, the rise of the assassins was inevitable, providing that they could achieve the character class advancement to transform into the Cursed Apostle and master the 18 Naraka Realms. After that, they would basically be invincible.

However, there were circumstances that they did not foresee. All assassins lost heart after they read the prerequisites for class advancement.

# Chapter 36

[Prerequisites for character class advancement to Cursed Apostle]:

Mission One: The assassins must first achieve Level 30 to be eligible for the class advancement quest. After accepting the quest, players will be able to obtain extra Blood Essence by killing any creature (not including players). Once the assassin accumulates 10,000 points of Blood Essence, the first level of the Naraka Realm will be activated. Then, the player has successfully achieved the character class advancement and become a Cursed Apostle.

Initially, all the assassins were excited to see such an easy mission.

Compared to the character class advancement to Rune Master, which required the players to hunt for various materials, the rather boring quest for the assassins was as easy as pie.

However, the assassins lost hope when they noticed the prerequisite skills listed below that.

Mission Two: Character class development.

Second Level of the Naraka Realm, the Avīci Demon's Nihilism: Players have to find three different sources of the cursing power and hand it to the Class Advancement Instructor. The Class Advancement Instructor will proceed to engrave the three curses on the player's core in order to complete the second class development for the Avīci Demon.

Third Level of the Naraka Realm, the sacrifice of Prajñā's Ultimate Move: Prajñā sacrificed with no form and desire. Players have to grasp the prajñā's theory via death. (Extremely difficult level. Players are required to fathom the theory on their own.)

Fourth Level of the Naraka Realm, the quaking Mountains of the Void: Players have to collect fragments of the Mountain Spirit and submit it to the

Class Advancement Instructor in order to fulfill the class development.

.....

All the assassins were stunned after they read the prerequisites for class development.

Assassin\_Creed: “Why are the elaborations for the sacrifice of Prajñā, the most powerful skill, so brief and confusing? To grasp the meaning of prajñā’s theory via death? Does it mean that we have to repeatedly kill ourselves? Why is there a skill that requires the players’ self-realization? Why can’t the Skill Instructor guide us?”

The\_Great\_Assassin\_Player replied to Assassin\_Creed: “Perhaps, even the instructors don’t know what to do (Joke).”

A\_Mammoth: “I’m confused as well. The tutorial for the sacrifice of Prajñā is too succinct. This is my first time seeing an ability that requires players’ apperception. Isn’t this too difficult? I will just sit back and wait for tutorials after the experts complete the quest!”

Strike\_Gold: ‘As expected, the more powerful the skill, the more difficult it is. I can finally get peace of mind. However, I still think that the class advancement for the assassins is too easy. They only need to kill creatures. By now, none of us, the berserkers, have successfully undergone class advancement. That wrenches my heart!’

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “Brothers from the Association of the Guardian Angels, come and destroy the Ghost Mountains with me. After I’ve collected 10,000 points of Blood Essence, I aspire to become the first Cursed Apostle in this game!”

Ye\_Xueer’s\_little\_follower replied to Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “Xue’er is definitely the strongest! I’m rooting for you!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye\_Xueer’s\_little\_follower: “Hi lickspittle, here we meet again. Wave~”

Ye\_Xueer's\_little\_follower replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Hmph!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye\_Xueer's\_little\_follower: “Defeating you with a backhand slap!”

.....

Besides the Night Killer, the assassins were totally clueless about the remaining procedures to complete the character class development.

However, there was nothing Lu Wu could help them with. Even though the template of the Cursed Apostle was easy to design, it depended solely on the players to achieve their own class development.

This especially applied for the sacrifice of Prajñā. Even among the Cursed Clan, there were only a handful of them who could master the skill. Therefore, to mimic the realisticness, the players should practice and cultivate on their own in order to pick up these powerful skills.

The players could learn the skills of the Night Killer easily because Bei Li had set a shortcut for the class advancement within the artifact for the players to upgrade into the Cursed Apostle.

When the players successfully accumulated 10,000 points of Blood Essence and submitted it to the Class Advancement Instructor, the Blood Essence would be transmitted into the Artifact Channel. The artifact would then infuse these Blood Essence points into the player's core, helping the players to forge a new body.

Since the players were no longer required to take an oath to the Naraka Realm and provide sacrifices, the procedure was way easier than before.

Although the mission was extremely hard, it did not demotivate the assassin players at all. The players were seen everywhere, hunting for creatures.

Although the mages were let down by the introduction of the Cursed Apostle, they were looking forward to the launch of a class advancement that belonged exclusively to the mages.

Lu Wu did not want to keep the mages waiting. With research led by the almighty Bei Li, a template for the mages had been finalized. It would be introduced into the game after Bei Li tested it.

Meanwhile, to enrich the in-game experience, Lu Wu's subsequent plan was to restore the Spirit Summoning Room.

The Spirit Summoning Room was where the King of Beiqi kept his defeated enemies and the spirits of his subordinates who died on the battlefield. There were many spirits of the courageous generals who used to fight alongside the King of Beiqi as he expanded his territory. More precisely, it was a memorial building.

There was a reason why Lu Wu wanted to restore the Spirit Summoning Room instead of the equipment depot.

As of now, the development of class advancement was approaching perfection. However, there was absolutely no progress for the hidden character classes.

According to Bei Li, there were spirits of talented warriors locked within the Spirit Summoning Room. Their inheritance could be extracted with the help of the artifact.

Their plan was to establish spontaneous class advancement quests in the game. Players would be able to achieve hidden character classes upon the completion of certain side quests.

After the update was launched, the players would be able to accomplish holistic development.

The hidden character class was extremely unique. It was independent from the three main characters. Hence, the introduction of the hidden character class would create new prospects to the game, making it more mysterious and intriguing.

Nevertheless, everything was still in progress.

Although the sum of Lu Wu's soul coins was increasing by leaps and bounds every day, the expenses were huge as well.

For instance, Lu Wu had set up two transport arrays at the border separating the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District to make traveling easier for the players.

As this cost him a lot of soul coins, the balance of his soul coins was insufficient for the restoration of the Spirit Summoning Room, which was priced at 20,000 soul coins. Therefore, he had to save up again.

However, the Underworld was always full of surprises and unpredictable events could happen everywhere.

Right after Lu Wu and Bei Li decided on the future of the hidden character classes, Bei Li frowned as she placed her mind on a certain player in the Underworld.

Upon seeing that, Lu Wu shifted his vision to the Underworld as well.

.....

In Liuli District, they were surrounded by dead woods.

A berserker raised his chin to look at the blue sky. His face crumpled with despair.

He was not enjoying the view of the blue sky. In fact, he fell into this pit that was more than ten meters deep and was now surrounded by slippery rocks. There was nothing else he could do other than just stare at the sky.

He made a few attempts to climb up the rock wall, but to no avail. Not only was the wall utterly smooth, it was also extremely hard. Even his greatsword of Blue Class Quality could not make a slit on the wall. During his multiple attempts, he repeatedly fell down before he could go further than a meter.

He had the intention to escape by committing suicide. However, he quickly lost hope. Every time he tried to injure himself, a green ray, originating

from the wall, would immediately heal his wounds.

In despair, Sun Qi leaned on the wall wearily. He stared blankly and silently at the sky.

“The Tomb of the White Phantom? Wu, this man is in the Tomb of the White Phantom!”

Looking at the distressed berserker, Bei Li exclaimed in astonishment.

“What is this Tomb of the White Phantom?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“There are unique Yin soul beasts inhabiting the Land of Beiqi. These creatures are rare and exquisite. They usually search for a secret place to keep their inheritance to pass it down to a living being from the Underworld who encounters it by fate. He is so lucky!”

Although Lu Wu failed to comprehend her words, he had a hunch that this was going to be an amazing thing.



# Chapter 37

At the brink of death, Sun Qi was suddenly reminded of something. He activated the Skill Menu and selected the live streaming option.

Then, he typed the title, “I’m in a tight situation, requesting backup now. This is urgent...”

After the livestream began, he silently waited for other players to save a weakling like him.

Moments later, many players began to appear in the live streaming channel.

“What is this place? The view here is amazing!”

“Simple. Perform a Gecko Wall Climb and you can get up easily. Also, a Wudang Ladders sounds good, too.”

“Noob! Just do as I say, put your left foot on your right foot and levitate. You’ll be out of there in no time.”

Besides the players who were here for the drama, some of the players provided some supposedly helpful advice.

Sun Qi attempted every possible way, but to no avail.

An hour later...

Sun Qi was even more distressed as he laid down slowly and stared at the sky.

Lu Wu was anxious when he saw this. Therefore, he registered an account via the official website and posted a message in the livestream’s comment section.

“Hey man, cut your finger and try to paint your blood on the rock wall!”

Sun Qi looked at Lu Wu's comment and quietly shifted his attention back to the sky once again.

Hopeless, he was too tired to try again.

Lu Wu was lost as well. It was clear that the player had given up and was no longer interested in trying out any groundless suggestions that were posted in the comment section.

Lu Wu had no choice but to activate his reward menu. He set aside five soul coins as a reward and posted another comment.

“Brother, just do as I say and these five soul coins are yours!”

Sun Qi appeared puzzled at the sight of the soul coins.

In Sun Qi's opinion, this player had a convoluted mind because he seemed to enjoy watching someone else's suffering.

However, for the five soul coins, Sun Qi sighed as he stood up. He held the greatsword and slit his wrist with it. He hurriedly pressed his wrist against the rock wall before the healing power of the wall was activated.

The following scene made the spectating players and Sun Qi's jaws drop.

Sun Qi's arm was magically stuck on the rock wall and he was unable to remove his arm. All the blood that came out of his wrist was absorbed by the rock wall.

That sight did not cause Sun Qi to panic. Instead, he was overjoyed. He thought to himself, I can finally be freed.

The other players were rather curious, “Brother, rest in peace. We'll see you in three hours!”

Sun Qi's face looked pale due to the massive blood loss. When he thought his life was about to end, a sudden wave of energy coursed through the rock wall.

Following a wail, a shadow of a white deer appeared from the rock wall. It danced around Sun Qi as fluorescent green specks of light filled the pit.

Everyone was stunned by the sight, clueless of the whole situation.

The white deer circled Sun Qi for a moment and Sun Qi suddenly realized that his health was completely restored.

When Sun Qi was about to close off himself, the white deer grunted softly. It then lowered its head and charged toward Sun Qi's core.

Bei Li, who was already prepared, activated the weapon and began to digitalize the inheritance.

With Sun Qi as the center, a flash of green light ran around the pit. A green cocoon slowly took shape and encased Sun Qi.

“Server Announcement: Congratulations on player Sun Qi's successful class advancement and unlocking of the hidden character class: White Phantom”

A server announcement popped up, causing a commotion in the game.

Soon enough, many people found Sun Qi's livestream channel. The number of viewers quickly exceeded fifty thousand. Before long, the viewer count had hit a hundred thousand.

“I was snacking when this fellow advanced into a hidden character class. If you have just joined the livestream, you can watch the replay...”

“That's awesome! The first hidden character in the region. But, you're not as good as you seem?”

“Damn. What's a White Phantom? Help me out!”

The page was continuously refreshed as hundreds of new comments appeared every second.

At this moment, Sun Qi felt as though his mind was overwhelmed by new information. However, the information was intercepted by the artifact before it was translated into data and displayed before his eyes.

A moment later, the eyes of countless players shone with excitement as the green cocoon burst open and the pit was instantly filled with green thick fog.

The players who were watching the livestream held their breath as they anticipated the White Phantom's first appearance.

When the white fog slowly dispersed and Sun Qi finally reappeared, the other players put on an indecipherable expression.

A puppy with white, smooth fur appeared at the bottom of the pit.

In the comment section:

“Hahaha, I laughed so hard that I blew a snot bubble. Congratulations on transitioning into a dog!”

“I can't stand it anymore. I just had my operation done today. I'm out. This is too hilarious!”

“Hahaha! Congratulations! Your hidden character class is so cool!”

“I accidentally choked on water just now. Anyway, congratulations, too!”

“Are you trying to kill me with laughter and then ruin my credit score? What a shameless fellow! Hahaha!”

Sun Qi was also very confused. He was not aware of what had happened. He only knew that he seemed to have transitioned into a hidden character class, not knowing that he had actually become a dog.

He instinctively opened his Skill Menu.

Player: Sun Qi (Player Level: Level 21, 26%)

## Character: White Phantom Spiritual Beast (First Form)

Introduction of the White Phantom Spiritual Beast: A type of unique and precious Yin soul beast that inhabits the Land of Beiqi. The noble blood of the Divine Beast flows within them. When their lives are coming to an end, they will search for a concealed place to pass on their inheritance to the beings who encounter it by fate.

Character Class Specialty: Every level upgrade will increase the player's attributes by 100%. At Levels 20/60/90/120, the player will receive an Inherited Skill. The second form will be unlocked upon reaching Level 150.

Note: The blood of the White Phantom has healing properties.

The players who were initially teasing Sun Qi were astonished after they read Sun Qi's Skill Menu.

“Damn it! I want to be a dog, too. I didn't foresee it to be the inheritance of the Divine Beast. I'm so jealous!”

“You're in luck! You upgrading one level is equal to us upgrading two levels. This is crazy! You're so lucky!”

“Apart from the adorable appearance, the attributes are amazing. I am absolutely jealous.”

“Have you all realized that his blood has healing properties? The first medic of the region has appeared!”

“He's not a medic! He's basically the holy grail! I have prepared a washbasin to fill up his blood because the potions in the shop are way too expensive!”

“I have prepared a water tank. Are you ready to extract your blood?”

“Shut up, guys. Mister white puppy, do you want to be my pet? We will be the strongest in Beiqi and eliminate all the traitors of the ghost clan! Isn't that wonderful?”

Sun Qi's Skill Menu had caused a hubbub among the players. All the players were enthusiastically discussing Sun Qi's transformation into a puppy.

Sun Qi's inheritance was deemed as pure luck. Even Lu Wu did not have the Class Advancement Menu of a White Phantom.

The other players were also keen to become a White Phantom. But they have to find the land where the White Phantom had left its inheritance behind.

Of course, the chances would be extremely slim.

# Chapter 38

Upon seeing the attributes menu, Sun Qi was overjoyed.

As a beginner with neither skills nor cash to spend in the game, his only means to upgrade his level and obtain equipment was to fight monsters. But now, everything had changed.

Owing to this hidden character class, he would definitely be able to turn into a pro. Perhaps, he could even become one of the top-notch players.

However, he was not quite accustomed to his new dog form yet. He glanced at his paws and began running in the pit experimentally.

As he slowly got used to the body, Sun Qi put on an ambitious expression as he braced himself for a mighty leap. Then, he started to bounce between the granite walls.

Buffed by his new form and powerful attributes, this time, Sun Qi managed to spring out of the pit with ease.

Taking a deep breath of the fresh air outside, Sun Qi was satisfied. He could already foresee himself on the path toward the glorious peak of his life.

In the comment section:

“What an agile doggy! So, his previous attributes were doubled as well after his class advancement? I wish I were him!”

“Buddy, are you interested in joining the Association of the Guardian Angels? We are in need of talent like you!”

“Hey buddy, the Battle Wolf Guild would surely be the most suitable for your development. Come! Join us on our quest to build this game’s strongest guild!”

“Doggy, be my pet!”

Reading the players’ comments, Sun Qi smiled. For the first time ever, he felt popular and important.

Just as he was falling into his fantasy, a net made of vines suddenly fell from a tree nearby. Sun Qi was caught within and before he realized what was going on, several heavy blows from a wooden stick struck him.

Sun Qi barked in agony.

“Brother, this doesn’t look like a zombie wolf to me. It’s just a white puppy,” lifting a corner of the net, a girl with a wand said disappointedly.

“It’s fine. Tie it up. We can use it as target practice. Zombie wolves are rather difficult to tame anyway. This little white puppy should be pretty easy to handle,” said the disheveled assassin player.

“Hmm! Let me try it out!” the female player grabbed her wand and nodded.

In the midst of Sun Qi’s utter confusion, he was dragged out of the net and tied to a dead tree.

In the comment section:

“Hahaha! Oh my god! Someone, I need help! Our almighty hidden character class is going to be tamed!”

“These two players are unbelievable! They managed to kidnap the first player with a hidden character class! My stomach hurts from laughing. Hahaha!”

“I’m just sitting here waiting to see him tamed. Use as much violence as possible. Don’t go easy on him! I need this to relieve my jealousy.”

“The first-ever White Phantom pet is going to be born. Let’s join to watch the fun!”



When Sun Qi saw the female player took her cane out excitedly, his mouth went agape and he began to wail.

“Hey, hey, hey! I’m a player. A player!”

Due to his transformation, his wails simply sounded like barks to the female player.

“Look, sister. All wild beasts carry their vicious instincts. Don’t underestimate it for its size. You have to cane it with all you’ve got to make it fearful of you. This is the first step of beast taming, like what the beast taming master taught me.”

“Got it, brother!” the female player replied with a firm nod.

Upon listening to that, the audience burst out laughing. Even Lu Wu and Bei Li, who were watching the scene, were unable to bite back their laughter.

“Smack!”

Sun Qi grit his teeth as the blows rained upon him.

“Smack, smack, smack!”

A couple of consecutive blows later, Sun Qi was left whimpering. He was filled with dread when he saw a shred of excitement flash through the female player’s eyes as she continued her brutal caning.

If he could, he would have hidden his face. Then, he recalled that he was still in the midst of a livestream. He was so embarrassed that he would rather die.

He had missed the best chance to escape earlier. Now that he had been tightly restrained, Sun Qi was clueless about what he should do next. He even began to worry whether the two players would decide to simply kill him off in the end, the assassin player especially.

Sun Qi had heard that all assassin players had been going mad over Blood Essence points lately, to the point that they would kill all the plants for it if they could.

Then, Sun Qi suddenly recalled that he probably would have received an Inherited Skill, considering he had achieved Level 20.

Immediately, he activated his Skill Menu.

[Sweet Rain Dew (Inherited Skill)]: Players are able to summon a healing rain within a certain range. This will drain 2 percent of the player's max health per second and trigger a huge range of area of effect healing.

Seeing that it was actually not a battle skill, Sun Qi glanced at the female player, who was standing before him, in despair before a tear rolled down his face.

“Brother, the white puppy is crying!”

Noticing that, the assassin approached Sun Qi and said, “Old dog, why are you crying? You ought to be ashamed to cry at this old age.”

In the comment section:

“I'm choked with laughter! He's right! Why is an old dog like him crying? That's so shameful!”

“I'm keeping this as a meme, hahaha! I swear I'm going to die from laughter as I watch this livestream channel.”

“Didn't you all notice the Inherited Skill? It's insane! I'm sure whoever recruits this puppy to join their guild will get a huge leap in their ability for wilderness player killing!”

“I noticed. This is the first time I've seen a healing skill, not to mention an area of effect one! The puppy is probably going to be a popular target for recruitment from now on.”

Meanwhile, facing the two torturers, Sun Qi turned his face away before he let out a few sobs. He had given up on resisting. He turned his pain reception down to zero so that he could at least be spared from the pain.

Indeed, the two players carried out a whole series of inhumane taming trials on him that were nothing short of his expectations.

Eventually, the mistaken taming process came to an end when other players, after laughing their heads off, finally decided to take pity on the white puppy, who was already on the verge of submission, and rescue him.

Sun Qi's experience was a laughingstock for the players, but many also came to realize something, too.

It was true that there were inheritances in the game, and heirs of these inheritances would receive a powerful hidden character class.

This sparked the flame in many players, as they began to search all over the map for pit holes and tunnels in hopes of receiving an inheritance for a hidden character class.

It led to many weird occurrences in the game — some obsessive players went to the extent of jumping into every pit and hole they came across, creating many hilarious incidents.

Others went even further — they specifically jumped off cliffs in the delusion that there were some ultimate inheritances beneath the cliff.

# Chapter 39

At the headquarters of the Black Sea Technology Corporation in Dragon Metropolis.

At this moment, a crowd was gathered in the meeting room. All of them wore a solemn expression on their faces.

“Sadly, we were a step behind. The majority of the influential game developers within the country have already signed agreements with the Jie De Corporation to mutually promote each other. Let’s discuss about our plan to manage this,” Wu Li spoke from the main seat after he swept his gaze across the crowd.

The higher-ups of the Black Sea Technology Corporation never expected that the Jie De Corporation would make their move so quickly.

Seemingly, during their press conference, the Jie De Corporation had already sent their representatives to different cities in the Dragon Nation to seize contracts with most of the game developers. Thinking that the years they had spent for the research and preparation might go up in smoke due to the turn of events, everyone of the Black Sea Technology Corporation was bitterly disappointed.

“Chief Wu, according to our intelligence, there is still one game developer of considerable significance that has not sealed the deal with the Jie De Corporation yet. Apparently, they rejected Jie De’s offer.”

“Only one?” Wu Li heaved a sigh of disappointment.

“It’s better than none. Send someone over to negotiate with them. We’ll try our best to fulfill their demands, and hopefully, we can work with them.”

Although he felt inwardly helpless, Wu Li had no intention of forgoing this opportunity.

Soon after the meeting had ended, the Black Sea Corporation managed to connect with Lu Wu through Platform173.

Originally, the staff in charge intended to hold a physical meeting, but Lu Wu rejected and responded with only one question.

“Will I be charged for the collaboration?”

Although the person in charge was rather flustered by Lu Wu’s question, he replied with a firm answer.

“The cooperative advertising project is to create a win-win situation. You will certainly not be charged. At the same time, your company’s game will be pre-installed in our gaming console, meaning that once the gamers purchase our consoles, even without downloading, your game will automatically appear in the list.”

After he listened to the proposal, Lu Wu immediately agreed to the deal. No one foresaw that the dialogue would go on so smoothly – even the person in charge at the Black Sea Technology Corporation was a little bewildered.

In the phone call, Lu Wu also promised the representative that they would promote the Black Sea Technology Corporation’s gaming consoles in the game after its official release.

The next day, Lu Wu received the contract for the cooperative advertising project mailed by the Black Sea Technology Corporation.

Lu Wu carefully read through the contract. After confirming that all the details were correct, he signed it and kept a copy for himself. Upon returning the signed copy to the Black Sea Technology Corporation, the alliance between the two parties was officially established.

The news of Lu Wu’s collaboration with the Black Sea Technology Corporation soon reached Orisha, Jie De Corporation’s representative.

This left her in shock. As the person in charge of the cooperative advertising project, she did not expect to see the man who rejected her offer

to cooperate with the Black Sea Corporation.

She quickly relayed the news to the headquarters back in A Nation.

Jie De Technology Corporation was never merciful to its competitors. They immediately decided to block Battle Online on all their consoles.

Then, Battle Online would not be available on any console that was sold by the Jie De Technology Corporation.

In their opinion, there were still a vast choice of games available for their consoles. Gamers would surely weigh the pros and cons, and opt for the better devices.

In the meantime, at the Mansion of the Dead in the underworld.

“Your majesty, your majesty!” Du Yan bowed with respect to a silhouette that was standing not far away.

“Why did you return? Have I not ordered you to stay beside Cha Na?” Lu Wu, appearing as the King of Bei Qi, questioned softly.

“I was forced to return. Cha Na has discovered my treachery. I’ll certainly be killed if I remain by his side!”

“Oh? Why is that so?” Lu Wu asked, appearing surprised.

“When I went back to Cha Na, the Ghost General, upon Your Majesty’s orders. I first lied to him about the cause of Third Ghost’s death using the Tree Demon’s branches. Then, I was told to visit the Sea King to respond to the matter of the offerings. However, I informed the Sea King that Cha Na, the Ghost General, had refused to deliver his request.”

“This infuriated the Sea King. He commanded the sea creatures to launch a blitz. That was when I became certain that I would be exposed soon. So, I had to leave!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu was immediately reminded about the battle by the sea that was live streamed by the player the other day. He had not expected Du

Yan to be the cause behind the violent exchange.

“By the way, I brought this with me before I left!”

Du Yan took something out of his black robes as he spoke, only to reveal a pitch-black orb that was sitting on his palm.

Lu Wu was puzzled. He waved his hand and a cloud of condensed Yin energy brought the black orb before him.

He activated the analyzing function of the artifact.

[Yin Soul Pearl]: 230,119 Yin souls

Item details: This item is able to store Yin souls.

“I was previously in charge of the storage of Yin souls in Liuli district. Therefore, I took all the Yin souls that belonged to Cha Na with me before I left.”

He is an utter traitor. He did not forget to give his former owner a final stab in the back before he escaped! However, I appreciate a treacherous old chap like him.

Lu Wu wore a grin as he said, “Du Yan, you did a great job!”

He waved his hand. A cloud of soul power was released from his sleeves and rushed into Du Yan’s body.

“Boom!”

The soul power acted like a flammable liquid, causing the soul flame within Du Yan’s skull to grow explosively. The color of his head slowly morphed from green to crimson.

Simultaneously, it could be clearly seen that Du Yan’s pitch black skeletal structure began to thicken, while flecks of glowing emerald appeared on it.

“This...” Du Yan was shocked.

Having lived for several thousand years, this was his first time witnessing a skill that was able to control soul power directly. This doubled his ability in an instant.

Turning back to look at Lu Wu, Du Yan knelt on the ground and presented a kowtow. “Thanks to your majesty for your gracious reward!”

Lu Wu nodded. It was not a difficult feat for him to raise Du Yan abilities.

This was different from improving a player’s ability.

The growth of a player’s ability needed to be accumulated in a step-by-step manner, following the correct order. It was similar to the process of digging a drain and turning it to a pond, which would ultimately grow into a lake. It required orderly advancement. On the contrary, presences like Du Yan, who had been cultivating for thousands of years, already possessed a solid foundation. All Lu Wu needed to do for Du Yan was to add water to the pond.

Even so, the technique he had revealed appeared to be a miracle in the eyes of Du Yan.

This advancement gave Du Yan a deeper understanding of Lu Wu’s mysteries. He even felt a tinge of relief, thinking that his betrayal was one of the best decisions he had ever made.

However, Lu Wu had not intended for Du Yan to stay at the Mansion of the Dead despite his return. Lu Wu gave Du Yan an order.

“Du Yan, I have a mission for you.”

“Pray tell, your majesty. I shall give it my all,” Du Yan spoke dutifully.

“Seek refuge from the Rock Ghost King!”

“This...” Du Yan was dumbfounded.

“Your majesty wishes for me to sour the relationship between the Rock Ghost King and Cha Na, the Ghost General?” Du Yan asked unconfidently



after a brief moment of thought.

“That is one of the objectives, but I will handle Cha Na. The main purpose is for you to investigate the Rock Ghost King’s current status and report it to me.”

“But, will the Rock Ghost King believe me?” Du Yan was a little hesitant.

“Bring this along!” with a wave of his hand, Lu Wu removed 150,000 Yin souls from the Yin Soul Pearl using his artifact. He gave the pearl with the remaining 80,000 Yin souls to Du Yan.

Upon receiving the Yin Soul Pearl, Du Yan replied with a firm nod, “I shall not disappoint your majesty’s expectations!”

Then, he transformed into a black shadow, left the Mansion of the Dead, and traveled toward the North Rocks.

# Chapter 40 - Building An Instance Dungeon

Chapter 40: Building An Instance Dungeon

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

After Du Yan's departure, Lu Wu's consciousness left the underworld, too.

Originally, Lu Wu planned to give all the Yin souls to Du Yan so that Du Yan could use it as a bargaining chip when he took shelter under the Rock Ghost King.

After all, to Lu Wu, his own soul power was clearly more useful than the Yin souls.

However, his idea was denied by Bei Li, forcing him to extract and store 150,000 of Yin souls in his battle artifact.

"Little Li, how are these Yin souls useful?" Lu Wu asked Bei Li once his consciousness returned to the room.

"They are definitely useful. You must know that others do not possess artifacts that have the ability to manipulate soul power like we do. They can only rely on Yin souls to forge weapons and equipment. Only the making of high-level equipment requires a rare soul stone. Besides, a Yin soul has a very important use — to build a two-way passage."

"Can we not do that with soul power alone?" Lu Wu was astounded.

"No, that is different. Portals can be built with soul power alone. However, it is different for the two-way passage. The construction of the two-way passage requires offerings. In this instance, a Yin soul acts as the contribution. That makes the fundamental difference between the soul power and Yin soul."

Lu Wu rolled his eyes, “You should be more specific. I literally know nothing about the underworld.”

Bei Li smiled and nodded. “Have we not been brainstorming on the construction of the Instance Dungeon? These Yin souls will be extremely helpful. That is why I specifically asked you to keep 150,000 Yin souls. It is the exact amount needed as offerings to reach the Naraka Realm.”

Finally, Lu Wu understood. He exclaimed in a pleasantly surprised tone, “Does it mean that we can introduce the dungeon to the public now?”

Bei Li nodded, “Yes, I’ve chosen the Naraka Realm, a forbidden zone in Naraka where demons are constantly spawned. It is an ideal ground for players to gain experience and upgrade their level in the game, especially for the assassins as many of the materials required for their class advancement can be found there.”

“More importantly, there are eighteen levels in the Naraka Realm. The further you go, the more powerful the demons will be. So it will be especially challenging for growing players.”

“How long does it take to build the two-way passage?” Lu Wu thought for a moment before he asked.

“It’ll take approximately an hour.”

Lu Wu nodded before he instantly released a server announcement with the help of the Battle Artifact.

“Server Announcement: Our server will undergo maintenance in ten minutes. This will be followed by the launch of the Instance Dungeon. Stay tuned!”

The players burst into an uproar upon the announcement.

Lu Wu only made this decision after careful consideration. It would be too conspicuous to form an array right outside the Mansion of the Dead, as he

had to be physically present. Being the mastermind behind the curtain, it would be better for him to stay hidden.

After ten minutes of waiting, Lu Wu took a glimpse at the viewer count and realized there were some 80,000 players who were still online.

Therefore, he forcibly kicked out the players using the artifact's administrative authority.

With nowhere else to go, the players began to gather at the game's forum instead.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Damn. I almost killed the metal zombie. I have spent a whole twenty minutes fighting it! Will I get compensation for that?"

Peppa\_Boar: "Same here. I was in the midst of battling the netherworld creatures with my team. We were just about to defeat it when we were kicked out mercilessly. I demand compensation! I am not asking for much, a purple weapon will be just enough."

A\_Mammoth: "Did you guys not notice the highlight of the announcement? The Instance Dungeon will be launched!"

Invincible\_Loneliness: "I'm on my daily quest to collect soul coins and grow cash. Anyone selling soul coins for good? Add me now!"

Assassin\_Creed: "The features in this game are amazing and I'm looking forward to the Instance Dungeon. I'm trying to form a team to explore the Instance Dungeon together. Let's grow and advance together~"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "I hope the drop rate of this Instance Dungeon will be higher... I really want to change my equipment, but my soul coins run out too quickly. Poor me~"

From the discussions, it was evident that the players' expectations for the Instance Dungeon were rather high. Of course, Lu Wu would not let them down. He brought Bei Li along as he returned to the underworld.

The usually crowded Mansion of the Dead was rather deserted after the maintenance began. However, this was exactly what Lu Wu hoped for.

They took a stroll around the Mansion of the Dead and eventually stopped at a spot that was neither far nor close to the mansion before they began the construction of the altar.

When it came to technical tasks like these, Lu Wu could only remain an onlooker.

Bei Li waved her hand and extracted all the Yin souls from the battle artifact. All of a sudden, they were surrounded by many green jellyfish-like objects that were floating in the air.

Then, Bei Li shifted her attention to the Yin energy. With the Yin energy, she inscribed an enormous circle on the ground before she continuously filled the circle with twisted and indecipherable patterns.

Ten minutes later, Bei Li, with an earnest expression, waved her hand once again, prompting the Yin energy in the air to surge toward the array on the ground, materializing the formation on the ground as it shimmered with a dark glow.

“Hum... hum...”

As the patterns within the array took its form, the ground gently quaked. The lines on the floor began to glow in crimson.

“The offerings!” upon Bei Li’s command, the suspended Yin souls rushed toward the core of the array.

“Sob... sob...”

An ancient cry of sorrow originated from the array resounded through the atmosphere. The sound resembled an old man who was bidding farewell to the world in the final moments of his life.

Then, a shocking scene appeared before Lu Wu. A pair of crimson red arms, dripping with molten lava, reached out from the array and grabbed

the air viciously. Within a blink of an eye, the cloud of Yin souls were completely removed.

Looking at that pair of arms, Bei Li's expression remained solemn. She uttered a few sentences in a language unheard before by Lu Wu.

The pair of lava-drenched arms gently oscillated as they listened to her. A weathered sigh arose from the array. The gigantic arms slowly sunk into the ground until it was no longer visible.

The array Bei Li inscribed had become a crimson red circular pit with a bright glow churning within. Its bottom was unfathomable.

"It's done!" Bei Li smiled happily as she looked at Lu Wu, anticipating his compliment.

Lu Wu reached out to ruffled her hair, "What were those arms earlier? Also, what did you say to him?"

Bei Li pouted, "You should not address him as 'arms'... he is one of the oldest divine beings here in the underworld. Even after his death, he is still a supreme existence. I was communicating with the residues of his consciousness in an ancient sacrificial language earlier. I asked for a passage to the Naraka Realm in exchange for 150,000 Yin souls."

"Did he agree?"

"Of course! There is no other way this tunnel can be built successfully otherwise. For he was, and remains, the only god in charge of the forbidden zone, the Naraka Realm."

Lu Wu nodded. "So we have to do this for every new Instance Dungeon we build?"

"Yes. All forbidden zones contain the residue of an ancient god's consciousness. It is the existence of these prehistoric gods that labels these areas as the forbidden zones. Therefore, we will require the gods' permission before we can create a connection that leads to a forbidden zone.

You have to find a way to encourage the players to plunder more Yin souls and contribute to us in order to establish more Instance Dungeons!”

# Chapter 41 - The Stone Coffins In The Naraka Realm

Chapter 41: The Stone Coffins In The Naraka Realm

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

After she finished the carving in the Naraka Realm, Bei Li extracted a default soul from the Artifact Channel. She introduced the settings of an Instance Dungeon Facilitator into a default soul before she left the underworld with Lu Wu.

After reading the comments, he realized that the players were all trying to picture the appearance of the Instance Dungeon. After some contemplation, Lu Wu made an announcement on the main page.

“Game maintenance is complete. The Instance Dungeon has been launched: Naraka Realm. New NPC: Instance Dungeon Facilitator”

[Naraka Realm (Instance Dungeon)]:

The Naraka Realm contains eighteen levels of different settings for players to train and upgrade their levels. Every level has multiple monsters of the highest level and powerful creatures. For more details, please approach the Instance Dungeon Facilitator.

Prerequisite to join Instance Dungeon: Your team should be made up of a minimum of ten players.

After they heard the news, impatient players immediately logged into the game and flooded the Instance Dungeon’s portal.

“Wow. This is a major Instance Dungeon. We can only access it with a ten-player team. Do they have to set such a high requirement for this?”



“Sob. I’m a loner who’s looking for a team to adopt me!”

“Our assassin team is recruiting. Join us, assassins... it’s time to hunt for materials for our class advancement!”

“I can’t believe there is a time limit for the quest. We can only stay in the dungeon for an hour. This is unfair for the clumsy players!”

After the Instance Dungeon Facilitator briefed the players about the Naraka Realm, many players were excited to experience the Naraka Realm for themselves.

At this point, Bei Li had also created a mage character class for herself in order to mix into the crowd.

Bei Li had never been to the Naraka Realm either. Therefore, she was very curious about it and wanted to visit the place, too.

Lu Wu had no reason to stop her. After all, her presence was virtual and she would not be physically threatened.

To strengthen their first attempt, many teams were busy expanding their teams, trying to recruit as many players as possible. That was how Bei Li took the chance to join one of the teams.

Coincidentally, the team she joined was Ye Xue’er’s Association of the Guardian Angels.

Anyone who intended to join the team was required to first join the guild. After she submitted the form, Bei Li’s application was quickly approved and she became one of the members of the guild. She was then assigned to Ye Xue’er’s team.

Being the team leader, Ye Xue’er did the headcount. Once she made sure that there were thirty players, she made an announcement through the guild live chat channel, “Let’s go!”

She reached out to access the Instance Dungeon’s portal, prompting a menu to pop up.

[Instance Dungeons]:

Naraka Realm

There was only one option. Ye Xue'er chose the only option and the entire team felt an abrupt loss of gravity.

According to Bei Li's settings, for the group transportation, the system would first bring the players to the Artifact Channel. During this entire period, the player's senses would be shielded. Then, they would be transferred from the artifact to the Instance Dungeon.

This was for the convenience of the players. After all, it would be very slow and troublesome if they were to jump into the passage one after another.

As for where they would be transported to, the system would program it randomly. They would appear at any place depending purely on the players' luck.

When the players regained their senses, the team realized that their surroundings had undergone a vast change.

The dry land beneath their feet was full of cracks with red molten lava flowing within. Even if their senses were reduced, they could still feel the heat waves charging at them.

“Eighteen levels of Naraka, Level One”

Before long, the words which indicated the players' location gradually faded away.

“The Naraka Realm looks so realistic. This is so cool!”

The players were astounded by the environment of the Instance Dungeon and the Naraka Realm. There were even players who reached into the cracks to touch the lava before they quickly felt a sharp pang on their arms. Meanwhile, a number appeared above their head, implying the loss of their health.

“Alright. Let’s not touch anything and continue our journey as a team. According to the Instance Dungeon Facilitator, there are many precious materials and treasures in this place. Let’s look carefully and not miss anything.”

Ye Xue’er checked her surroundings before she spoke through the guild live chat.

The team began their exploration.

After ten minutes, a waterfall made of lava appeared before them.

Initially, Ye Xue’er intended to take a detour to bypass the waterfall. However, at this moment, a sharp-eyed player noticed a cave on the left of the waterfall and notified the team via the guild live chat.

Considering that they were here for treasure hunting, Ye Xue’er was rather curious about the cave. Ye Xue’er beckoned the team to follow her as they approached the waterfall.

As they got closer to the waterfall, the temperature continued to increase. Other than the strong berserker, all the mages were losing their health by one point every five seconds.

Fortunately, they had already arrived at the entrance of the cave. Otherwise, they would be too afraid to continue their venture.

Ye Xue’er walked to the side of the cave and popped her head into the cave to scan the place. Realizing that it was impossible for her to see the end of the cave, she beckoned her members over and led the team into the cave.

The cave was close to the lava waterfall. However, the team was surprised to feel absolutely no heat after they entered the cavern.

As they went deeper, they were overwhelmed by extreme cold that sent chills down their spine.

As their vision got increasingly obscured, Ye Xue’er gestured her team to make use of the torch they bought from the shop. In a flash, their

surroundings were made bright.

Owing to the burning flames, the chamber appeared eerie and terrifying. The graphical scene caused some of the timid players huddle up together.

As they progressed, they reached the end of the cave and were welcomed by a bend. The team stopped in their tracks.

A gust of sinister wind, which originated from the bend, swamped the players. It was so terrifying that they felt as if there was a monster hiding around the corner.

Ye Xue'er took in a deep breath and walked in front of the team. Likewise, she was afraid. However, as a team leader, her dignity was more important than her life.

After they passed the corner, an empty and extensive room came into their sight. Following their arrival, flames appeared on the rock wall and lit up the entire place.

When the team finally checked out the place, they were all taken aback.

They were at a burial chamber, with dozens of coffins, which were organized neatly, in front of them. The scene brought a great shock to Ye Xue'er and her crew.

Ye Xue'er reassured herself that everything lying before her was not real.

She took in another deep breath and led the team toward the coffins.

When Ye Xue'er reached the center of the room and was about to take a closer look at the coffins, she was startled by a deafening bang. Instantly, her face turned pale as she tried to stop herself from screaming.

She turned to trace the source of the sound, only to realize that it came from her brother, Ye Chen. He was destroying a stone coffin with his greatsword.

“Brother, what are you doing?” Ye Xue'er could not hold back her anger and reprimanded him.

“There must be an inheritance within the coffin, if not a treasure,” Ye Chen replied with a serious answer before he swung the sword once again.

After a brief stun, Ye Xue'er changed her mind. Ye Chen might be right. After all, treasures are always found in hidden places.

Seeing that Ye Xue'er was no longer against Ye Chen's idea, a few other players were convinced, too. With their staves, swords, and daggers, they destroyed the coffins, hoping to earn a hidden character class.

The symphony of bangs and thuds left the players breathless. Depressed, they stared at the unyielding stone coffins.

“This is infuriating! They should've just installed a switch for this! Do they still want us to play the game? What a poor gaming experience!” Ye Chen ranted.

The other players grimaced as they listened to Ye Chen's tirade. Did you install a switch on your ancestor's coffin?

“When I die, I will install a switch on my coffin. Everyone will be able to open and close it with a mere flick,” Ye Chen continued to mumble.

His words left the other players speechless.

# Chapter 42 - Fire Gobbling Dragon

Chapter 42: Fire Gobbling Dragon

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Ye Chen's words left the entire team speechless.

At this moment, Wang Zuoshou, his best friend, asked, "Brother Ye, would you prefer a sliding lid or a flip lid?"

Ye Chen was flustered.

"A touch screen seems more savvy," Bei Li, who had been silently observing, piped up.

Noticing that all eyes were on her, Bei Li was embarrassed as she raised her wand and took a few steps backward.

"What should we do? There are treasures here but we cannot reach them. That's awful," Ye Chen looked at his sister, Ye Xue'er.

"It seems like we have to give up for now. Mark the location. When we grow stronger, we will come back to open the coffins," Ye Xue'er said weakly.

Although they gave up on opening the coffins, the team continued to search the burial chamber, not wanting to overlook any treasure.

Eventually, they found three sealed earthen jars.

After multiple attempts to break the jars open, the team realized that the stone jars were made of identical materials as the coffins. There was no way they could crack them open.

“Actually, there may not be any treasure in the jars. We have many similar jars buried under the ground of our village. If you are lucky, you might find some good old wine brewed by the ancestors,” a mediocre-looking berserker among the team commented.

“And if you are unlucky?” the team gazed at him curiously.

“If you are unlucky, you might unearth one of your ancestors.”

His answer baffled the others.

Upon listening to the blunt berserker’s theory, the team’s perception of the three jars had changed. They were disgusted at the thought of holding cremated ashes in their hands and decided to leave the jars on the ground.

Seeing their reactions, Bei Li took a few steps forward and carried the three jars in her arms, “I’ll bring them with me if you don’t want it!”

The members found it hilarious when they saw the petite Bei Li carrying the three big jars. Yet, they shook their heads.

Bei Li put on a smile. With the jars in her arms, she disappeared into the Artifact Channel.

None of them thought this was strange.

Nonetheless, every player had their personal channels. Unbeknownst to them, the personal channels were essentially part of the battle artifacts channel which had been segregated into portions for each player.

After they scanned the burial chamber once again and made sure that they did not miss anything, the team followed Ye Xue’er out of the chamber. In the meantime, they marked the location down, intending to return when they grew strong enough.

The moment they left the cave, the team was swamped by the strong wind and extreme heat.

They lifted their gaze to see a huge fire dragon charging at them. Underneath the fire dragon, some ten players were frantically trying to escape while their leader held a fiery red egg in his hand.

“Brothers, help, help!” noticing Ye Xue’er and her team, the leader seemed immensely relieved as he bolted toward them.

“Damn, brother. Don’t come near me!”

Seeing this, Ye Chen pointed at the other players, who were running toward them, with his greatsword before he yelled hysterically.

“Brother, save us!”

“Don’t come near us!”

The players on both sides continued to shout at each other.

“The dragon is this level’s boss. I’ll let you be the first to slay it. Help!” the leading player cried.

“Nonsense. Why don’t you kill it first? If you come one step closer to us, I will kill you,” Ye Chen howled.

Looking at the dragon which hurtled toward them, Ye Xue’er and her group screamed in fright, hoping that the egg thieves would not drag them into their misery.

“Quick! Get into the cave!”

As the fire dragon advanced toward them, Ye Xue’er quickly led her team into the cave.

In less than five seconds, the earth began to quake before they were showered by crushed stones.

“Roar!” the fire dragon’s howl resonated across the atmosphere.

The cave shook once again and more stones rained down.



As the team scrambled to find their footings, they found that they were joined by three other players.

They stared at the player who was carrying the dragon egg. Everyone in the room went silent for a few seconds before Ye Chen slowly raised his greatsword.

Despite everything that was happening, Ye Xue'er was moved when she suddenly heard the innocent cry of the baby dragon from the egg.

She was adept at manslaughter and pillaging. Hence, she did not try to stop Ye Chen.

“Brother, let’s talk about this. Please don’t hurt us!” the leading berserker put on an awkward grin as he held the dragon egg closer.

“Surrender the egg!” Ye Xue'er drew her dagger and ordered angrily.

The berserker was especially distressed at this instant. His team thought that they would be safe if they ran away after they stole the dragon egg, not knowing that it was impossible for them to bring the egg into their personal channel. After the fire dragon noticed that its dragon egg was missing, it traced the egg with the help of its smell.

As a result, they were down to three players. They knew that they were no match for Ye Xue'er’s team if they were to fight.

Looking at Ye Xue'er’s team who were ready to fight, the corner of the berserker’s mouth twitched as he prepared to distract and argue with his opponent verbally. Before he could do that, he lost his balance as the cave began to shake again.

This time, the quake was even worse than before. Following the dragon’s shriek, they felt as though the cave was going to blow up.

What fell on them was no longer crushed stones but huge rocks.

“Thud! Thud! Thud!”

The players were buried by the rocks one after another while the quake intensified. Apparently, they had driven the fire dragon up the wall.

At this point, Ye Xue'er leapt forward and mercilessly kicked the berserker who was holding the dragon egg. Then, she snatched the dragon egg in his hand.

The berserker was completely stunned. Their team had sacrificed greatly for this dragon egg. Furthermore, the value of the dragon egg was certainly priceless.

However, when he intended to retrieve the egg, a huge rock from above fell right on top of him.

Getting ahold of the dragon egg, Ye Xue'er immediately attempted to hide it in her personal channel. To her surprise, she was not allowed to do that. Instead, the channel responded with a message.

“Living things are prohibited in personal channels.”

At this crucial moment, a pure and innocent moan came from the dragon egg as fiery red flare began to run around the egg.

“Crack!”

A crack appeared on the egg shell before it continued to lengthen.

“Boom!” the egg broke and a cute little fire dragon flew out of the egg.

“Howl...” the baby fire dragon immediately raised its head and let out a gleeful roar.

However, Ye Xue'er nipped the little fire dragon by its neck and held it before her.

Relentless, Ye Xue'er made another attempt to bring the baby fire dragon into her personal channel.

Something unexpected happened. The little fire dragon transformed into a streak of light and disappeared into her body.

[Server Announcement: Congratulations to player Ye Xue'er for hatching her first pet, a Fire Gobbling Dragon (Infant)]

As the announcement was released, a deafening roar echoed and flattened the cave. At this moment, Ye Xue'er was also drowned by the stones.

# Chapter 43 - The Guild Tournament

Chapter 43: The Guild Tournament

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The fire dragon egg hatched at the crucial moment and was digitized by the artifact to be stored into Ye Xue'er's inventory. With that, she obtained her first pet in the game by mere luck.

As for the berserker and his team who had their dragon egg snatched away from them, they were beyond furious. Immediately, they started an argument in the online forum.

Even the berserker's guild, called the Demolition Officers, had declared hostility against the entire Association of the Guardian Angels.

The increase in the number of players resulted in the establishment of many new guilds. The Demolition Officers were originally a strong guild from another game. After the rise of Battle Online, the players had moved their base and settled down as a new guild in Battle Online. Even though their guild was fairly new, their capabilities were exceptionally strong, almost comparable with that of the Association of the Guardian Angels.

Right then, Ye Xue'er was feeling extremely pleased. Although her first attempt at the Instance Dungeon ended very quickly, she felt that it was worth it since she had obtained a fire dragon egg.

She also became more convinced that manslaughter and pillaging were the true significance of joy in the game. She was also not wary of the challenge from the Demolition Officers and instantly accepted their challenge in the forum. She was prepared to go head to head with them in the wild after her respawn. It would be a major battle between the guilds.

However, the other players were not interested with the feud between the two guilds. Instead, the fact that pets can be obtained from the Instance Dungeon in the Naraka Realm had captured everyone's attention.

This incited envy from many of the players. Many casual players had also joined together in teams to take on the Naraka Realm in hopes of hatching a pet for themselves.

Nevertheless, the first level of the Naraka Realm was already perilous to these players. Even the players, who worked in groups, found it difficult to beat the weakest fire dragon. Although there were relics and treasures lying around, it was extremely difficult to find. The task was nearly impossible without either skills or luck.

For instance, despite the fact Ye Xue'er's team managed to find the stone coffins, it was pointless because they failed to open them.

Yet, as more players rushed into the Naraka Realm to try their luck, coupled with the many images that were posted in the forum by others to flaunt the materials or treasures they found, the player's enthusiasm to challenge the Naraka Realm had only increased. It was as if they enjoyed being tortured by the Instance Dungeon of a gruelling difficulty.

After the cooldown period of her respawn ended, Ye Xue'er logged into the game again expectantly.

She clicked into her Attributes Menu and her gaze fell upon a new section for pets.

[Fire Gobbling Dragon – Level 0 (Infant)]:

Pet Details: Beast of fire attributes that thrives in high temperature zones year-round and is immune to fire.

Pet Attributes: Strength 4, Agility 4, Endurance 4, Willpower 6

Pet Quality: High (From lowest to highest starting with Low, Medium, High, Spiritual Beast, Yin Soul Beast, Divine Beast, Omnipresent Spirit)

Pet Skills: None (Able to develop apperception)

Growth Requirements: Consuming fire type Spirit Stones can increase pet's experience

(Note: You can purchase pet revival pill from the shop to revive your pet after it dies)

Regarding the settings for the pet, Bei Li had already planned everything out beforehand. After all, there would be some diminution to the pet's spirituality, especially because they had to be completely digitized.

For example, the Fire Gobbling Dragon should be ranked as at Spiritual Beast, but after being digitized, it could only be a high-ranking beast at most. The downgrade of the pet was inevitable.

In fact, in order to digitize the pets, the pets must be recently hatched and still an infant. They had to be collected into the artifact the second they were exposed to the outside world. It would not be possible to digitize a pet that had already matured, even with the help of the artifact.

Regarding the revival of the pet, it was obvious that Lu Wu would not let the players use the artifact for free. The players would be charged at a high price for it. Each revival would cost 30 soul coins.

After she was done reading the pet's Attributes Menu, Ye Xue'er clicked the option to summon her pet. A black whirlpool immediately appeared in front of her before a chubby little fire dragon flew out eagerly, flapping its wings excitedly.

"Howl... howl..." the little fire dragon flew around Ye Xue'er before it snuggled into her arms.

Having seen the little dragon's action, Ye Xue'er grabbed the little fire dragon by its scruff and held it up before her eyes to scrutinize it.

"It seems pretty weak. Yet, I still have to spend time to cultivate it. How troublesome!" Ye Xue'er was rather disappointed.

The little fire dragon seemed to be able understand Ye Xue'er's words. It puffed its cheeks and spat with all its might. "Cough... Cough..."

Ye Xue'er stared at the weak flame emotionlessly.

"This is perfect to light a cigarette!" Ye Chen, who was standing by the side, scoffed.

Ye Xue'er placed the little fire dragon back into the pet channel before she turned to glare at Ye Chen, "Prepare our men. I believe the Demolition Officers are ready. Let's go beat the crap out of them!"

"Sure!" Ye Chen grinned as he lifted his greatsword and rested it on his shoulder. He then turned to leave.

At that moment, Lu Wu was discussing with Bei Li about the recent issues of the disputes between the guilds.

Since the launch of the Naraka Realm, the conflicts between the guilds continued to intensify, mainly because of the players who constantly fought with each other for materials and treasures.

The squabbles between the Association of the Guardian Angels and the Demolition Officers were just one of the many cases. Every guild would be involved in a disagreement to a certain extent. Therefore, Lu Wu decided to conduct the very first in-game tournament for the many guilds.

A piece of drafting paper was set before Lu Wu with the words 'Guild Tournament' scribbled on it.

Lu Wu's idea was very simple, which was to construct a huge battlefield and a hundred fortresses in the Artifact Channel. All guilds with more than 500 members would be eligible to register and participate in the Guild Tournament.

The main idea of the tournament was to capture the flag.

A blank flag would be placed in the heart of every fortress. When a guild successfully seized the fortress, they could then replace the blank flag with

their guild's official flag.

However, claiming the flag is only part of the battle. Even after a certain guild had conquered one of the fortresses and replaced its flag, players from other guilds were allowed to overthrow the ruling guild and take over the fortress.

The players were required to focus on attack during the beginning of the tournament and, later, defense. The tournament would last for half a day and when time was up, the guild that had topped the most fortresses would be enthroned as the Almighty Guild. Besides that, Lu Wu had also prepared rewards for the champion.

This was certainly a big project. Even if they could easily agglomerate Yin energy in the Artifact Channel for the construction of the fortresses, it was still a massive task. Lu Wu had to commit a lot of time to build the place.

Therefore, the event was still in its early stage of preparation and would not be introduced so quickly.

Currently, there were already more than 300 guilds with 500 members in the game. Lu Wu decided that he would launch the tournament once there were 500 guilds with enough crew. Not only that, he even hoped to gather 1,000 guilds with sufficient members before he launched the tournament.

When the time came, it would be a majestic event for the strong guilds to showcase their respective strengths. It would definitely be a battle worth waiting for.



# Chapter 44 - Predestined Archery (Part I)

Chapter 44: Predestined Archery (Part I)

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The third day after the Naraka Realm was opened, Lu Wu finally managed to accumulate 200,000 soul coins and commence his long-awaited plan to construct the Spirit Summoning Palace.

After approximately thirty minutes, a towering pagoda appeared near the Mansion of the Dead.

At the same time, the players in the game received their first surprise after the completion of the latest system update.

[Server Announcement: The latest system update will introduce a new hidden character class, the Sun Chasing Archer, along with its Inheritance Trial. The hidden character class is limited to ten players only. For more details, please ask the Character Class Instructor.]

The inheritance of the Sun Chasing Archer was the first gift from Lu Wu to the players.

The valiant spirit Zhuri, known as the ultimate sun chaser, used to be the number-one archer under the King of Beiqi's reign. His ability was almost comparable to the Ghost King. His archery skills were unmatched throughout the land of Beiqi, making him one of the King of Beiqi's most valued henchmen.

However, he was sacrificed by the patriarch of the Cursed Clan during the skirmish to annihilate them in order to activate the Prajñā Scarification.

Zhuri's death broke the King of Beiqi's heart. Deeply saddened by his loss, the King of Beiqi knew that there was nothing he could do. However, the King of Beiqi managed to retrieve Zhuri's soul and keep it in the Spirit Summoning Palace, installing him as one of the valiant spirits to be worshiped by the later generations.

The Sun Chasing Archer was the first hidden character class created by Bei Li after the recent restoration of the Spirit Summoning Palace.

As the game was true to life where archery skills were difficult to master by any ordinary people, Lu Wu had only made available ten limited spots for the players. In the meantime, he introduced a pilot challenge for the players to inherit the hidden character class.

The prerequisites to join the pilot challenge were fairly simple. First, all the players who registered for the challenge would be teleported to the shooting range in the Artifact Channel that was built by Bei Li.

Then, players had to undergo three tests. They were required to shoot fixed targets at the 50 and 100 meter range, and then a moving target at a 150 meter range.

Every player was given five chances. The top ten players with the highest marks would be rewarded with the inheritance of the hidden character class, the Sun Chasing Archer.

The pioneering project had excited many players. However, it was apparent that the trial was extremely difficult. An arrow would always travel in a parabolic path. Any ordinary person who had not gone through a proper training could hardly hit an immobile target, not to mention the moving target at the 150 meter range, where the difficulty would be at its highest level.

Despite the hard challenge, the enthusiasm of the players to achieve the hidden character class was not hindered. Other than the players who were not interested in archery, most of the players had registered for the Inheritance Trial.

The registration ended on the next day and the number of applicants peaked at 250,000 players.

The trial that had been keeping all the players on pins and needles finally began. All the registered players were teleported to the shooting range in the Artifact Channel.

To prevent players from affecting one another, they were separated in different spaces. From the shooting range, a scoreboard could be seen in the distance which conveniently allowed the players to check their scores and rankings.

The first test was conducted at the 50 meter range. There were five rings marked on each target. The players would get 10 points by hitting the bullseye. Whereas for the other outer red circles, there was a decrease of one point in accordance to the order of the rings from the center. The players would secure just 5 points by hitting the target but not the ring. Of course, they would earn no points at all if they missed the target completely.

The minimum requirement to pass the first stage was to earn 10 points.

When the test officially began, an iron bow appeared in every player's hand. Meanwhile, they were also given five arrows, respectively.

Although the first test was only conducted at a distance of 50 meters, it was already challenging for the players who had no experience with archery before. After finishing their five attempts, out of the 250,000 players, there were less than 40,000 who advanced to the second stage.

Lu Wu, who had been spectating, simply felt helpless. Obviously, the archer character class, was too difficult to achieve. It was something that not everyone could do.

Before long, the second test started. All the players who succeeded in advancing the first test fixed their gaze upon the scoreboard.

First place: Li Lin (50 marks)

Second place: Su Mu (50 marks)

Third place: Ye Chen (50 marks)

Fourth place: Mo Lingtian (50 marks)

Actually, all the current top ten players managed to reach a 100% target hit rate.

For most of the players, these people must be experts who had been practicing shooting in real life. Otherwise, it was impossible for them to have such high accuracy and hit rate.

However, Ye Chen disagreed.

Seeing the target being rearranged to 100 meters, he was gaping in disbelief.

He did not expect to achieve much from this archery inheritance and simply participated for the fun of it. He certainly did not foresee that his amateur shooting could still land his arrows on the center of the target.

Ye Chen's face was flushed red when he saw that he was ranked third place on the scoreboard.

When the second test began, new arrows were distributed. Ye Chen once again took out an arrow from the quiver and put it against the bowstring.

“Whoosh!”

With a soft whistle, his arrow pierced through the wind.

“Ding!” The scoreboard in the distance lit up: 10 points

Ye Chen was completely stunned this time. Understanding that he had never been taught archery skills, nor had he ever touched a bow, he was flabbergasted by his luck.

Perhaps, I was born a talented archer?

Therefore, he took out an arrow once again and placed it to the bow. He made a nonchalant effort to aim at the target before he released the bow.

“10 points!”

“10 points!”

“10 points!”

“10 points!”

After the fourth arrow was shot out, Ye Chen was full of admiration toward himself and his skills. Claiming to be a prodigy now, Ye Chen thought that archery was way too easy for him.

Entering the third round, there were only less than 3,500 players left. Ye Chen’s ranking still remained at third place, causing him to feel increasingly elated.

When the third test started, the target, unlike before, was no longer fixed. On top of that, the distance of the range had been increased to 150 meters. The difficulty was greatly increased as every player was given only thirty seconds to shoot.

Looking at the target which was moving back and forth in an arrhythmic manner at 150 meters away from him, Ye Chen was slowly losing his confidence.

He took out an arrow and placed it on the bowstring. After he roughly predicted the movement of the target, he released his arrow.

“Thud!”

“Ding! 10 points!”

His bowstring was still vibrating when the scoreboard announced his score from afar.

“Haha, I’m a real genius!” Ye Chen was ecstatic when he managed to score ten points once again.

The next four shots happened just as what Ye Chen predicted. Every shot hit the bullseye. When the final result was announced, Ye Chen was extremely proud of himself.

[Server Announcement: The ranking for the Inheritance Trial is as follows. The top ten players will begin the inheritance for class advancement.]

First place: Ye Chen (150 marks)

Second place: Mo Lingtian (149 marks)

Third place: Li Lin (143 marks)

Fourth place: Su Mu (141 marks)

Even though I wanted to keep a low-profile, this must be my actual ability! Seeing that he was in the first place, Ye Chen could not help but laugh out loud.

Immediately after the ranking from the Inheritance Trial was revealed, Lu Wu looked at Bei Li and said, “Let’s start the inheritance!”

Bei Li nodded and transferred her consciousness into the artifact. Ten sets of the inheritance of the Sun Chasing Archer were copied and transferred to the ten players’ templates. Besides that, Bei Li spent 2,000 soul coins for each player to help them to build a new body template so that they would be able to adapt to the inheritance.

At the same moment when the inheritance began, Lu Wu also satisfied the curiosity of the inquisitive players by allowing ten live streams of the shooting range, each focused on one of the ten winners who inherited the hidden class.

Notifications appeared in Ye Chen’s and the others’ mind after the inheritance began.

“Congratulations! You’ve successfully advanced your character class to become the Sun Chasing Archer. More details and information of the character class can be found in the Attributes Menu. Meanwhile, the shooting range will continue to stay open for the next thirty minutes. Hurry up and practice your new skills at the shooting range!”

# Chapter 45 - Predestined Archery (Part II)

Chapter 45: Predestined Archery (Part II)

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

[Sun Chasing Archer: Inheritance of the best archer in the Land of Beiqi]

**Character Class Background:** The Sun Chasing Archer, the man who was enthralled by archery, had devoted decades to mastering his archery skills. However, even until later in his life, archery still had not become his forte. When his Yin Flame was about to be extinguished, he witnessed the silhouette of Emperor Jin Wu passing by amidst the sunset. Looking at the Scorching Flame that was scattered across the entire sky, the realization hit him hard. All of a sudden, he gained the apperception of the Sun Chasing Aura. His life was revamped and his lifespan was subsequently prolonged. He outdid himself and, within the next three years, became the best archer in the Land of Beiqi.

**Cultivation of Character Class:** Attributes will be enhanced by 50% every time the level of the player increases. Players will also receive a unique supplementary passive power, Eagle Eyes, and an extra energy bar, Sun Chasing Aura.

“Eagle Eyes (passive)”: Enhancement of visual ability. Players will be able to adjust pupil’s focal length independently.

“Sun Chasing Aura (100 energy points)”: Every Sun Chasing shot will consume one energy point. Meanwhile, the application of the skill will constantly consume energy points. The energy points will recover by one point for every three seconds.

**Additional Skills:** Sun Chasing Dispersion, Sliding, Annihilation



“Sun Chasing Dispersion (consume five points)”: Players will be able to shoot five arrows that have been strengthened by the Sun Chasing Aura, and execute an area damage.

“Sliding (consume three points)”: Players are allowed to flexibly utilize the Sun Chasing Aura and apply it onto their feet, enabling the players to perform a short-distance rapid slide. (It can be used to avoid attack and approach opponents.)

“Annihilation (consume all remaining energy)”: Players will be able to consolidate all the Sun Chasing power from the entire body and forge an arrow of soul energy to release a deadly attack. (No arrow is needed to apply this skill.)

“The second stage will begin after the player has reached Level 100 and completed the class development. Details can be obtained from the Character Class Instructor.”

Character Class’ Weapon: Bow and arrow.

The players, who had been watching the live stream, enviously looked at the Inheritance Menu of the Sun Chasing Archer.

“The ten Archery Masters have gained the inheritance with their own capability. I respect them!”

“I’m envious but not jealous for you have obtained the inheritance with your own ability. Even if I had your character class, I will not have hit the target with my ability.”

“I acknowledge this! In order to master this character class, it really requires talent in archery. An ordinary person will never be able to do this!”

The audience unanimously approved the ten players who were about to receive the inheritance. After all, they had earned this with their own ability rather than merely by luck. All the other players were genuinely happy for them.

Soon after Ye Chen achieved his class advancement, he was overjoyed to immediately receive three new skills.

Knowing that he had another thirty minutes to test his skills, Ye Chen felt ambitious.

He lifted up the iron bow and drew one arrow from his newly acquired quiver. Then, he locked the arrow to the bowstring. He aimed at a fixed target that was 50 meters away and released the arrow confidently.

“Thud! Zero points.” The scoreboard displayed the score from afar.

“Cough. This is a mistake. It’s a mistake,” knowing that he was on a live stream, Ye Chen put on an embarrassed grin before he took out another arrow.

However, before long, Ye Chen’s laughter had been completely extirpated.

He made five consecutive attempts and none of the arrows managed to hit the target.

Ye Chen was appalled by the result.

With his trembling hands, Ye Chen aimed at the target that was 100 meters away and activated his Eagle Eyes. He could clearly see the distant target with his naked eyes.

Ye Chen lifted up the bow again and took a deep breath before he slowly let go of the bowstring in his hand.

“Thud! Zero points.”

“Thud! Zero points.”

“Thud! Zero points.”

Ye Chen, who refused to give up, focused his gaze upon the moving target that was 150 meter away from him and began to shoot frantically.

“Thud! Zero points.”

“Thud! Zero points.”

The consecutive nils left Ye Chen dumbfounded.

And the players, who were watching the live stream, were as astounded as him.

A\_Mammoth: “Isn’t he the champion? The result... I have a terrifying idea.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Predestined Archery. The player will be able to hit the target only during the right times. I think that the other player is having the same idea.”

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “I was skeptical when I saw my brother’s outstanding archery skills as he has never undergone any training before. Now, I understand what’s going on. This is such an overwhelming truth.”

Strike\_Gold: “This is really overwhelming. Can this really be the legendary Predestined Archery?”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Perhaps he shut down the automatic aiming system and accidentally exposed his real ability.”

Watermelon\_Taro: “So... will his account be scrapped?”

Guard\_With\_Knife replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “Basically... it’s scrapped...”

Golden\_Saint\_Seiya: “It seems a little tense now. Well, I have a question, can I laugh now?”

The\_Bronze\_Player replied to Golden\_Saint\_Seiya: “Hahaha, I’ll start first!”

At this moment, Ye Chen realized how major the issue was.

Perhaps the previous fifteen shots on the targets were merely coincidence!

This idea turned Ye Chen's face pale and his gaze soulless.

After he achieved the class advancement and became an archer, bow and arrows were the only weapon that he was equipped with. At the thought of this, Ye Chen's hand, which was still holding the bow, trembled uncontrollably.

He tried to extract the blue greatsword from his channel.

“Reminder: You have achieved Class Advancement and are now a Sun Chasing Archer. Your default weapons are bows and arrows. You are not allowed to use a greatsword.”

“Oh my god! Can I downgrade myself to be a berserker again?” Ye Chen squatted on the floor and growled helplessly.

In the comment section:

Crayon\_Shinchan: “What a show! Congratulations on driving someone crazy!”

A\_Mammoth: “Don't cry, my brother. You can show off your Predestined Archery to the audience.”

Strike\_Gold: “Don't cry, you still can use your bow... to whack your enemies, hahaha!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “Can you share some sympathy to this man? Look at how hard our champion is crying, or rather, how sorrowful he is!”

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “Brother, there are some things that you can't change. You can do this! Start practicing your archery skills now. You'll soon become an Archery Master!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “Predestined Archery Master? (This is hilarious.)”

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Are you guys from Great Dragon Guilt trying to pick a fight?”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “We don’t have the audacity to do that. You guys have the Predestined Archery Master on your side. We’re afraid to be shot in the head. (This is hilarious.)”

Looking at the comments under the live stream, Ye Chen grew more distressed.

Remembering how he used to be a simple and ruthless berserker, he regretted not cherishing that character while he could and made a bad decision to join the trial.

He grew even more bitter when he realized that he was actually the champion.

# Chapter 46 - The War Is Coming

Chapter 46: The War Is Coming

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

At Liuli District.

On the Skeletal Throne, Cha Na looked at the mountains in the north with a gloomy expression as he slowly clenched his fists.

Never had he foreseen that Du Yan would betray him, but he was more upset by the fact that Du Yan had stolen all his Yin souls.

He was in a tight spot right now.

First of all, he had promised to offer 100,000 Yin souls to the Sea King as sacrifice. Besides, his ability was supposed to surpass the realm of the Ghost King and this batch of Yin souls was one of the keys to his breakthrough.

However, he had lost all of them now.

He recalled the news from his envoy, saying that Du Yan had sought refuge from the Rock Ghost King by offering all his Yin souls. Cha Na's eyes turned fiery.

Both the Sea King and the Rock Ghost King were more powerful than him. The breakthrough that he was initially confident about had been hindered, and Cha Na was completely lost.

“Lord Cha Na, since it is unsafe for Liuli District to be in the middle, why don't we move our base camp and seek shelter at the Mansion of the Dead? We can then deliberate over the issue after you break through the realm of the Ghost King.”

Cha Na was astounded by the proposal. After some contemplation, he reckoned that the idea was feasible.

Although, the Mansion of the Dead was not rich in resources like Liuli District, it was a place far from the Underworld Sea. He believed that the Sea King would not travel from Liuli District to the Mansion of the Dead to retrieve the 200,000 Yin souls from him.

The next second, Cha Na unexpectedly put on a frown, “What about the Pool of Yin Souls in Liuli District? We can’t just desert it like that!”

The Pool of Yin souls was the Yin souls’ birthplace which had been always under Du Yan’s care before this. The Yin souls that were produced internally every year were essential for Cha Na’s cultivation. Therefore, he was reluctant to abandon it.

Upon listening to that, the soulbringer heaved a sigh, “Lord Cha Na, we don’t have time to think about that now. You can only gain a voice in the Land of Beiqi after you surpass the realm of the Ghost King. Otherwise, we’ll face a terrible consequence when the Sea King comes after us to request the promised Yin souls!”

The soulbringer’s words awakened Cha Na. At last, he grit his teeth and said, “Pass down my command. Pack as many supplies as possible and we’ll leave for the Mansion of the Dead in ten days!”

.....

The next day after the introduction of Sun Chasing Archer, the hidden character class, many NPCs appeared around the Mansion of the Dead.

These additional NPCs were created by Lu Wu to enrich the gameplay.

Among them, the most popular ones were the chubby chef of the dark cuisine and the old man with a goatee who taught players to brew potions out of various herbs.

The debut of the chubby chef was especially well-liked among the players as they were now able to experience tastes in the underworld like never before.

Although some players were poisoned to death by the dark cuisine after they tried to cook it with poisonous ingredients from the underworld, it was not a big deal to the gluttons.

Some players with unique palates even brought corpses of wolves and elephants to the chef. The presence of the chef was undeniably the biggest welfare for the foodies in the game.

Owing to the advent of the chubby chef, the players also gained a new hobby to search for edible ingredients, regardless of whether they were poisonous or not. Before the 12-hour game ended, they would make food with the ingredients and gobble it down.

As the game was extremely lifelike, eating in the underworld was very realistic, absolutely intriguing the players.

Players who had shrewd business acumen immediately started many cooking live streaming channels.

A foodaholic player in the forum even wrote a book called “The Record of Dark Cuisine” after he experienced innumerable deaths by tasting a plethora of poisonous menus.

It described the ingredients that could be found in the area near the Mansion of the Dead. Besides, it taught its readers ways to match the ingredients for the chubby chef to prepare delicious dishes.

The most popular NPC was none other than Lu Mo, the leader of the newbie village.

Lu Mo was the first NPC every player would meet. He would brief the players about the thrilling and fascinating underworld that was awaiting to be explored.



In short, Lu Mo simplified the underworld and made it accessible to new players.

Moreover, Lu Mo was set to carry an amicable persona. He would often engage in heartfelt conversations with the players and listen to their concerns and worries. For the players, he was perceived as a friend rather than a virtual existence. Hence, Lu Mo was undeniably the most popular NPC in the game.

.....

On this day, Lu Wu received a call from Wu Guoyi, telling him that the selection, that had been going on for a month, had finally ended.

Just like what the players predicted, Battle Online, among all the other games, had earned the most number of votes.

The dark horse had surprised many people this time. However, after the public experienced the game, their astonishment turned into awe and praise.

Even Li Tianxia was unreservedly captivated after he tested the game. Subsequently, he became the vice chairman of the Avengers, one of the major forces in the game.

After the result of the selection was announced, Wu Guoyi discussed with Lu Wu over the phone, hoping that Lu Wu could start to work on the theme song of the game. According to Wu Guoyi, Lu Wu was welcomed to ask for Wu Guoyi's help if he encountered any problems.

Consequently, Lu Wu began to deliberate over the theme song.

However, he was distressed, undecided over the singer and the production of the song.

He reached out to Bei Li expectantly, hoping that she would lend a helping hand.

However, Bei Li responded with a scoff, looking at him as though he was a fool.

“I only know how to do research. I don’t know how to sing and compose a song!”

Lu Wu, who was left with no other options, passed the problem back to Wu Guoyi.

Wu Guoyi did not mind at all and accepted the challenge immediately. In the meantime, he offered to introduce a few celebrities for auditions. As for the theme song of the game, he planned to hire a professional composers to produce it.

However, he would certainly not let Wu Guoyi bear the cost.

Now that the game was on the right track, there would be many ways to earn money. Lu Wu intended to create more outfits for the characters in the game.

The different outfits would not enhance the player’s abilities. Although they could only beautify the players’ appearances, he reckoned that there would be many players who would willingly spend money to upgrade their look. This was also the only thing that the players could buy with their credits in the game.

As the popularity of Battle Online expanded on Platform173, the people who were in charge of the other gaming platforms grew more perturbed.

With strenuous effort, they blended into the employees of Platform173 and successfully obtained Lu Wu’s contact information.

On a daily basis, Lu Wuyi received dozens of phone calls from other gaming platforms, hoping to invite him to join in cooperative advertising. They were very keen to list Battle Online on their platform.

Lu Wu declined the offers without hesitation.

Of course, Lu Wu did not reject them thoroughly. After all, he had an agreement with Wu Guoyi that Platform173 would provide a two-month exclusive advertisement for Battle Online.

Wu Guoyi had done great help to him and Lu Wu could not break his promise.

Two months later, Battle Online would have to build its own brand.

# Chapter 47 - The Immortal Bird

Chapter 47: The Immortal Bird

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Ba Lun was an international student who hailed from Dragon Nation.

When he was studying in Dragon Nation, Ba Lun's favorite pastime, besides playing games, was listening to rock music.

Due to his interest in rock music, he formed a rock band with his friends, aspiring to build their future with rock music.

After he was accidentally exposed to Battle Online, Ba Lun was hooked on the game. Consequently, he forgot about his dream to become a musician.

In the game, he was a berserker who was also a member of a certain guild. Now, his daily routine was to spend time with his guild mates, ardently engaging in wilderness player killing, making investments, and exploring places outside the Mansion of the Dead.

Feeling as though he could immerse himself in another extremely graphic and realistic world, Ba Lun completely indulged in the game.

On this day, the game finally ended after twelve hours when Ba Lun, who yearned to continue playing, was kicked out of the game.

After Ba Lun removed his helmet, he pursed his lips as he whined about the game, calling it a trashy invention. Then, he logged into the forum of the game routinely, intending to update himself with the latest intriguing news of the games and look for new tips from other players.

However, his attention was quickly caught by the title of the official announcement that was pinned on the page:

## “Online Game Theme Song Contest”

In the underworld, there was a piece of land blessed with tranquility. Under their king’s reign, thousands of tribes lived together in harmony, inhabiting this quiet land which was free of disputes.

However, there’s a fine line separating peace and war. By virtue of the Demonic Dragon’s advent, the Land of Beiqi was greeted by darkness.

Darkness grows in the loss of light, and vice versa. The emergence of a new evil force has triggered the bloodshed on the land that had been hushed for millenia.

Today is the day! You, the children of Beiqi, polish your long swords and put on your armor. It’s time for you to release your righteous ardor in the woods and execute justice at sea. With blood and tears, pen down the dawn of your expedition now!

Requisites for the theme song:

The song should be optimistic and relevant to the content of the game.

The composers should own full copyrights of their submissions. Plagiarism is strictly forbidden.

The “Battle Online Corporation” reserves all the right of final interpretation.

Prizes:

Winner will be able to pick one from two prizes:

3000 soul coins

1 million dollars cash

Ba Lun read the introduction of the songwriting contest, then the prize options, with his eyes wide in shock.

He scanned the page for other comments and found that the other players appeared to be just as astounded as he was.

Invincible\_Loneliness: “I’m taking the 3000 soul coins! I’m going to immediately hire someone to compose the music for me. Soul coins, wait for me!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Invincible\_Loneliness: “Hey zillionaire, what if your song doesn’t earn you the prize and you lose all your money?”

Invincible\_Loneliness replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “I’m not short of cash. I’m only afraid to not have enough soul coins to squander!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “3000 soul coins! Oh my god. I’m feeling a little dizzy right now. No, my eyes are slightly blurry too. That makes approximately 2.4 million dollars after conversion... someone hold me tight before I pass out.”

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “I will pick 3000 soul coins!”

Strike\_Gold: “Only idiots will pick 1 million dollars over the soul coins. There is a major shortage of soul coins now. One can easily sell the soul coins for 2 million dollars.”

A\_Mammoth: “I personally know a famous lyricist. I’ll bring a few bottles of liquor to his place and develop a rapport with him. The prize of the contest is mine!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “A loser like me can only sit here quietly while I watch you experts tear each other apart!”

Ba Lun fell silent after he read the comments.

Undeniably, he was very tempted to join the contest. On top of the alluring prize, he had the opportunity to compose a theme song for the game he really liked. His dream to be a rocker was reignited.

Finally, he found a notebook in his drawer. Then, he lifted his pen and began to write down the music...

The next day morning, a few of his good friends rushed to the school's music room after they received Ba Lun's phone calls. Shocked, they stared at Ba Lun who had dark circles under his eyes.

"Help me out, brothers!" Ba Lun said feebly.

Noticing that his good friends were exchanging looks in confusion, Ba Lun handed them the copies of music score he prepared beforehand:

"The Phoenix (The Immortal Bird)"

"Ba Lun, did you write this? I heard that you've been obsessed with video games recently. What makes you start to play with music again?" his friends exclaimed.

Ba Lun shook his head weakly and told them about the songwriting contest.

"So, are you willing to help me?" Ba Lun asked.

Seeing that Ba Lun was staring at them expectantly, his friends looked at each other before they giggled.

Ba Lun put on a grin after he received the answer from his friends.

They formed a band with a guitarist, a bassist, a drummer, a lead singer, and a member who was in charge of the rhythm section.

The five of them gathered in the music room after Ba Lun got some rest. Promptly, they took up the challenge of composing the song:

"Put on your war paint

You are a brick tied to me that's dragging me down

Strike a match and I'll burn you to the ground

We are the jack-o-lanterns in July

Setting fire to the sky

Here, here comes this rising tide

So come on

Put on your war paint”

.....

Silver clouds with grey linings

So we can take the world back from a heart attack

.....

Then I’ll raise you like a phoenix

Put on your war paint

The melody resonated across the music room, attracting the attention of many students.

Listening to the upbeat song, they subconsciously stopped in their tracks as they gradually felt moved by the sonorous melody and overwhelmed by the hopefulness of the music.

.....

The theme song contest was led by Lu Wu, who reckoned that he might possibly be surprised by the players’ talents as he awaited Wu Guoyi’s reply.

Being the only judge of the contest, Lu Wu’s workload had increased significantly since the day the theme song contest officially commenced. He was caught off guard by the innumerable submissions that swamped the inbox of his secondary email.

Expecting assistance, Lu Wu looked at Bei Li who was savoring her meal. However, she replied to Lu Wu with merely an assuring gaze and an encouraging gesture.



Flustered, Lu Wu had no choice but to pull himself together and begin to screen the submissions.

To ensure that he was fair to every player, he listened to every song carefully before he sieved the awful ones out. Then, he compared the remaining songs in order to choose the better ones.

After five days of hard work, Lu Wu was left with three songs.

Lu Wu liked all three songs immensely. The finalists were:

“Who Rules Over the Land of Beiqi’s Destiny” by Invincible\_Loneliness

“The Awakened King” by Midnight

“The Phoenix (The Immortal Bird)” by Ba Lun

Although he genuinely enjoyed all the songs, there could only be one winner. Lu Wu contemplated to decide on the winner.

After he repeatedly listened to the songs, Lu Wu finally decided to crown Ba Lun’s “The Phoenix (The Immortal Bird)” as the champion.

In comparison to the two other songs, Ba Lun’s song was able to pump up the audience more effectively. Therefore, it was apt to be the theme song of a war game.

After the result was decided, Lu Wu sent an email to Ba Lun to notify him about his victory. Meanwhile, Lu Wu also informed Ba Lun that the reward would be credited to his account after the song was officially released.

Next, Lu Wu only had to wait for Wu Guoyi to hire a professional singer.

# Chapter 48 - Ao Jian

Chapter 48: Ao Jian

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

At the peak of the Hidden Tiger Mountain which was located at the border of Dragon Nation.

Two silhouettes were standing apart amidst the clouds as they stared at each other.

The man, who was dressed in green, carried a Green Mountain Longsword in his hand. He gazed into the distance expressionlessly with an unyielding and egoistic aura.

The other man had a black robe draped around his shoulders. He carried a red sheath on his back and, in his hand, he held a black longsword, which could maneuver the clouds surrounding the mountain.

“Ao Jian, I have won again!”

Blood dripped down from the wrist of the man in green before he loosened his grip and dropped the Green Mountain Longsword on the floor.

“During the battle that year, I accidentally killed your father. It was my fault and I understand your desire for revenge. However, your talent in kendo is still lacking compared to mine. It will not make any difference even if you practice for another ten, or even twenty years. You will never be qualified to be my adversary,” the man in black spoke as he looked at Ao Jian, appearing perturbed.

“Talent?” the expression of the man in green slowly turned from composed to anguished.

In order to revenge, he left his family behind and committed his life in perfecting his swordsmanship. Was his obsession toward swordsmanship ultimately in vain?

Ao Jian was overwhelmed by resentment. He lifted his head up once again, this time with a ferocious expression. He reached out to grab the Green Mountain Longsword that had elevated in the air before he tightened his grip around the sword.

“Let’s do this again!”

Sparks flew from the intense sword fight atop the mountain, visible even through the misty clouds. The gleam of their blades flashed around their surroundings.

“Ao Jian, you don’t have a stable sword spirit. If you continue to battle, beware of going astray in kendo!”

The man in black made a slash with his longsword and created a gigantic sword shadow to encase himself within. In spite of the swamping Sword Qi, he was kept safe and secure within the shadow.

“You shall die!”

Ao Jian’s eyes turned crimson red and he had become a complete maniac as he heedlessly swung his longsword. The demon in him grew incessantly.

“Bang!”

A clear clang resonated across the atmosphere. The Sword Qi at the mountaintop immediately dispersed as though the source of the Sword Qi had been destroyed, while the Green Mountain Longsword fractured.

Following a loud thud, Ao Jian dropped to his knees before he spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Sigh. Ao Jian, you have been deeply engrossed in kendo. But now, because of kendo, you have turned monstrous! Repent and be saved. It’s time to let go of your sword now!”

Ao Jian gave no response. He stared at the broken longsword with a pair of soulless eyes as though his spirit had been extirpated.

“Sigh...”

Wu Qing heaved another long sigh before he sheathed his black sword and left the scene.

Once again, the cloud surrounded the mountaintop. Ao Jian, like a soulless body, continued to stare emotionlessly at the broken sword.

A year later, it was drizzling when Ao Jian reappeared on a street, which was paved with blue slate tiles, in an old town.

Following a byroad, he left the town before he traveled along a muddy road toward the peak of the mountain.

When he arrived at the mountaintop, Ao Jian overlooked the two tombstones that were set up side by side. They were almost completely covered with weeds. Before long, he left the place.

He was obsessed with kendo as though his life was attached to the sword. He had sacrificed too much in the process of sharpening his swordsmanship. He had no regrets even if he had to go through the unbearable pain and grief after his wife and daughter's death.

Ao Jian, whose very name means majestic sword, was born for the sword and thus, was named after it, too.

This was what his father told him. Hence, he never stopped working on his swordsmanship.

However, at this moment, Ao Jian was completely lost.

His father was accidentally killed by Wu Qing in combat. Despite the fact that he had given everything up to cultivate his swordsmanship, he still could not prove to be a worthy rival for Wu Qing, the man who murdered his father.

He did not know what he should do next. Neither did he know where he could pursue the abstruse Supreme Kendo.

Confused and dispirited, Ao Jian continued his journey without direction and purpose. All he wanted was to search for the Supreme Kendo that had been imprinted on his mind.

On this day, Ao Jian stopped at a corner of the street, looking unkempt and depressed.

As two young men were walking past him, he overheard their dialogues.

“Hey, have you heard about the fight between the Demolition Officers and Guardian Angels in the wild yesterday? There was an assassin who played as the berserker and he was totally invincible! He must be adept at his swordsmanship in real life as well. I hope I can be his apprentice and learn from him...”

Upon listening to the conversation, the misted eyes of Ao Jian, who was still hiding in the corner, lit up. He stood up abruptly and stopped before the young man who was speaking. He reached out to grab the man by his arm.

“The swordmaster? Where is he? Tell me!”

“Ouch, you’re hurting me!” agonized, the young lad’s face was flushed red. He defended himself by slapping Ao Jian in his arms.

“Tell me. Where is the swordmaster?”

“Battle Online. He’s in the game, Battle Online. His name is Mu Jiuge...”

This was Ao Jian’s first time in using a virtual reality device. He clumsily adjusted his outfit and put on the virtual reality headset before he logged into Battle Online.

Ao Jian was astonished by the true-to-life virtual world that was laid before his eyes.

He grew up in an ancient town far away. Since he was a child, he committed all his time practicing his swordsmanship as he was obsessed with it. That explained why this was his first ever encounter with such a high-tech device.

Fortunately, the game provided tutorials to guide the players as they created a new character. With the help of the manual, he chose a berserker who was equipped with a sword and officially joined the game.

Ao Jian, whose swordsmanship had achieved the Microcosm Realm, was very sensitive to the difference between reality and the virtual world. However, even he suspected if everything before his eyes was real.

His sole purpose here was to look for Mu Jiuge to personally witness his swordsmanship.

He did not kill a single monster throughout his entire journey. All he did was to ask and search for Mu Jiuge's whereabouts.

At last, he met Mu Jiuge from the Demolition Guild after almost half a day's search.

"I want to challenge you!" Ao Jian said the moment he met Mu Jiuge.

Looking at the level zero that elevated above Ao Jian's head, Mu Jiuge shook his head before he chuckled and said, "Come back again after you've reached a higher level!"

"You are afraid to accept my challenge? The first rule in practicing kendo is to be courageous. You don't deserve to cultivate your swordsmanship!" after being rejected by Mu Jiuge, Ao Jian shook his head as he walked away.

Similarly, Mu Jiuge had devoted his life in sword fighting in reality. Therefore, Ao Jian's words had certainly infuriated him.

"You're no one to comment on me. You, conceited man, I'll fight with you if you insist!" Mu Jiuge retorted.

With a grin on his face this time, Ao Jian turned around before he lifted his starter longsword.

Unlike other players, Mu Jiuge bought a longsword from the shop instead of other powerful weapons that could be helpful to the berserker such as the Greatsword or the Battle Axe.

They were separated by twenty-six levels, but Mu Jiuge was completely stunned during the beginning of the fight.

The swordsmanship and skills exhibited by Ao Jian were nothing like Mu Jiuge had seen before. Ao Jian bonded with his sword as one. Mu Jiuge felt as if he was fighting with a single sharp, lethal sword.

Within three quick rounds, Mu Jiuge had been attacked more than ten times. However, Mu Jiuge's sword did not even touch Ao Jian once.

Mu Jiuge believed he would have been defeated if it was not for his high level, good attributes, and defensive protective gear.

# Chapter 49 - Demonic Sage Of Ten Swords

Chapter 49: Demonic Sage Of Ten Swords

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

After a few rounds of violent exchanges, the bloody ‘-1’ that continuously appeared above Mu Jiuge’s head caused his face to turn pale.

He could not believe that his swordsmanship, which he took pride in, was merely child’s play in front of this man.

“Go to hell!” eventually, Mu Jiuge could not help but to unleash his berserker’s skill, the Groundbreaking Slashes.

A fiery red blade surfaced from the ground. It formed a crescent shape, then charged toward Ao Jian.

Upon seeing this, Ao Jian focused his gaze before he nimbly dodged the blade and avoided the attack by the skin of his teeth.

“Wu, one of the inheritances in the Spirit Summoning Palace seems unstable!” Bei Li, who was eating, said in a serious tone.

“Huh?” puzzled, Lu Wu stared at Bei Li.

“Let’s go and have a look!” Bei Li’s consciousness entered the artifact and Lu Wu quickly followed after seeing that.

The battle between Mu Jiuge and Ao Jian was still ongoing. Mu Jiuge could not help but use his skill after he learned that Ao Jian was a strong opponent. After all, his dignity did not allow him to fail.



However, he was surprised by the fluidity of Ao Jian's sword skills. Ao Jian was able to avoid Mu's skills and, at the same time, struck him with his sword.

Facing such a skillful opponent, Mu Jiuge was slowly worn out as the fight continued. He panicked when he saw his health that was soon going to be depleted and messed up his subsequent performance.

Conversely, Ao Jian remained cool and ruthless as he moved his sword agilely as though it was a part of his arm and launched multiple attacks toward Mu Jiuge.

“Ding! You have killed the player, Mu Jiuge.”

As the notification appeared, Mu Jiuge slowly fell onto the ground with resentment written across his face before he eventually turned into black smoke and vanished into thin air.

Ao Jian was surprised by Mu Jiuge's extremely ordinary swordsmanship. In fact, Ao Jian thought Mu Jiuge's skill was almost terrible. It was not what he expected from a swordmaster.

In spite of the disappointing battle, Ao Jian was astonished when Mu Jiuge showcased his skills during the later part of the fight.

Ao Jian could clearly sense the change of the surrounding energy when Mu Jiuge exhibited the skill. Ao Jian was completely amazed by it.

A man with the worst swordsmanship had actually fought and simultaneously activated the energy of heaven and earth. What was deemed impossible by Ao Jian had happened right before his eyes.

When Ao Jian was pondering over the question, a notification popped up and Ao Jian sensed that a great force had landed on him.

[Server Announcement: Congratulations to player Ao Jian for comprehending the sword spirit and achieving the hidden character class: The Demonic Sage of Ten Swords.]

Lu Wu and Bei Li were dumbfounded to see what had happened.

According to Bei Li's settings, some of the hidden character classes in the Spirit Summoning Palace would only be unveiled under certain conditions.

As these valiant spirits still carried their remaining consciousness, they were allowed to choose their inheritors based on their own will.

As the actual location of the Spirit Summoning Palace was located within the artifact, the valiant spirits could absolutely feel the player. However, this was the first time the valiant spirit connected with the player, triggered the settings of the artifact and revealed the inheritance.

“What power is this!”

Ao Jian was horrified as he could clearly feel a force of the Supreme Kendo lingering above his head.

He appeared enthralled by the domineering yet overwhelming energy as his lips gently trembled.

This was the power of ultimate kendo that he had never possessed and had always yearned for.

Ao Jian raised his hand, intending to touch the energy above his head. However, at this moment, the energy rushed into his body.

In the meantime, the artifact was activated and all the inheritance was digitized.

Then, a man with a wrinkled face, who was carrying a Nine Spiritual Sword, appeared in front of Ao Jian.

The character class menu of the Demonic Sage of Ten Swords popped up.

[Demonic Sage of Ten Swords]:

Background of Character Class: Jian Chou devoted his life to comprehend kendo to avenge his father's death. Owing to his lack of talent, many times

he almost lost his life. While the other swordsmen continued to grow stronger, he was no match for his rivals. He went into seclusion for thirty years and vowed that he would never leave the mountains until the day he grasped the ultimate kendo.

Thirty years had passed when Jian Chou finally left the cliff of despair with nine swords and mercilessly killed his enemies.

Quote from Jian Chou: “One’s lack of talent can be curbed by a sword. If one sword is not enough, use two; if two swords are not enough, use three. I spent thirty years to comprehend kendo and created ten swords. And, I am the tenth sword.”

Character Class Introduction: The Nine Spiritual Swords will be upgraded alongside the player’s level. When one has fully grasped the kendo, one can slash the heavens, the earth, and all their foes.

Character Class Weapon: Unique character class, unarmed.

Character Class Growth: No additional attributes. Not allowed to acquire the berserker’s skill.

“Demonic Sage of Ten Swords... Demonic Sage of Ten Swords!” Ao Jian murmured with a blank look on his face.

“No. Where did the energy go? Where is it? Give it back to me now!”

Aggrieved, Ao Jian howled as he could no longer feel the energy after it fused into his body.

At this moment, he suddenly turned his head and found nine spiritual swords of different colors, that were levitating in the air, behind him.

“It will be upgraded alongside the player’s level...” realization hit Ao Jian hard as he reread the menu. He then rushed to the Mansion of the Dead.

Flustered, Lu Wu and Bei Li watched as Lu Wu sprinted toward the Mansion of the Dead, not believing that the level-zero player had actually earned the inheritance.

Unbeknownst to them, Ao Jian almost thought that his supreme inheritance was gone when it was actually being digitized.

After he learned that only upgrading his personal level could trigger the power of the Demonic Sage of Ten Swords, Ao Jian embarked on his journey to upgrade his level and grasp the true purpose of swordsmanship.

After Ao Jian had comprehended Jian Chou's Demonic Sage of Ten Swords, Ao Jian reckoned that this might be the time for him to take his revenge. This was the true Supreme Kendo! He believed that if he thoroughly understood the power of Jian Chou's kendo, he would be able to defeat Wu Qing!

Jian Chou's kendo was aimed for revenge. Just like Ao Jian, Jian Chou had an enemy who was far stronger than him. Ao Jian felt as though they shared the same experience.

To quote Jian Chou, if one was not as strong as one's rival, he or she should use two, if not three swords. Jian Chou's kendo was what Ao Jian had always desired.

However, Ao Jian did not know that Jian Chou's valiant spirit was moved because they shared identical sword spirit. That was why Jian Chou passed his inheritance to Ao Jian.

At this moment, Ao Jian had found his purpose in the game. He regained his enthusiasm while his cracked sword spirit was once again consolidated.

# Chapter 50 - The Cultivator

Chapter 50: The Cultivator

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

After Ao Jian had advanced into the hidden character class, the news was heavily discussed by the players in the forum. Who is this player? Is the hidden character class powerful?

Before long, one of the players uploaded a 10-minute video to the forum and triggered a tumult amongst the players.

In the video, a Level 4 player was seen challenging the netherworld creature at the Ghost Mountains.

The players were astonished to find the nine glowing Spiritual Swords levitating behind the Level 4 player. His style appeared to be extremely glamorous.

It was inconceivable for other gamers that a Level 4 player could effortlessly defeat the netherworld creature, which was far stronger.

He continuously changed the Spiritual Sword in his hand as he utilized his Shenfa to stealthily move around and attack the netherworld creature. Not only that, his every strike landed accurately on the netherworld creature's vital body parts.

The video lasted for 10 minutes. The Level 4 swordsman single-handedly killed the netherworld creature with his incredible ability before he picked up the Netherworld Pearl and headed to the Ghost Mountains.

The players who had watched the video were greatly impressed by the man's skills.

Strike\_Gold: “He is the true boss! He must be the player who has successfully achieved class advancement and become the Demonic Sage of Ten Swords.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “I take my hat off to this man! He performed his skills perfectly as though he was a bot! I have scrupulously watched the video thrice. Every step he took was well-judged. Moreover, his every attack hit precisely on his enemy’s vital body parts, namely the head and throat. He is the real boss!”

A\_Mammoth: “A bot-like player makes the most formidable opponent!”

God\_Slayer: “After I watched the video, I have a sudden urge to replace my Greatsword with a Longsword. If I were the opponent, I would yield to his skill at my own will!”

A\_Rough\_Man: “Before this, I used to always wonder why berserkers would opt to use the Longsword, a light weapon, during fights. The damage of the Longsword is not as impactful as the Greatsword and Greataxe. However, after I watched the fight between Mu Jiuge, the Demolition Officer, and the bot-like player, I learned that the Longsword is the most powerful weapon, given that you are exceptionally skillful!”

Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “He is probably the godlike man who, according to Old Mu, was defeated thoroughly by a Level 0 unimportant player! Initially, I refused to believe it, thinking that it was merely a joke. But now, I am absolutely convinced!”

Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “The Demolition Guild needs mighty men like this. Join us! (Clamour till our voices crack)”

Watermelon\_Taro: “The number of experts is increasing. Today, they have all risen and their eyes are fiery. Can we launch an attack at Cha Na now? My patience is wearing thin!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “Talented man, please relax! We shouldn’t act impulsively. When our team grows more mature, we’ll definitely beat Cha Na!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Wow! It was an outstanding play! Upon witnessing his skills, I began to admire this bot-like player deeply!”

.....

Just like how it was showcased in the comment section, the swordsmanship of the bot-like player had impressed the other gamers tremendously. Apparently, his expertise was beyond the public’s belief.

Out of curiosity, Lu Wu did a little research on Ao Jian’s soul, only to find out that the strength of his soul was noticeably stronger than the other players.

In Bei Li’s opinion, the player had definitely gone through cultivation in real life and his personal ability must be sufficiently good. Otherwise, it was impossible to strengthen one’s soul to this level.

Lu Wu was astounded by Bei Li’s theory, “It’s possible for one to go through cultivation in real life?”

Similarly, Bei Li was surprised by Lu Wu’s questions, “When the underworld truly exists, why is it impossible for cultivation to be carried out in real life?”

Lu Wu replied, “If that’s true, why haven’t I met any cultivator?”

“Had you visited the underworld before this?” Bei Li asked a rhetorical question while she looked at Lu Wu as though he was an idiot.

Lu Wu was dumbstruck by Bei Li’s rather sound reply.

At this moment, Lu Wu’s mind was filled with graphics of cultivation, zombies, Taoism, Buddhism, and immortality. Nevertheless, he was an experienced man.

Bei Li stared impassively at Lu Wu who was engrossed in his fantasy.

“You don’t have to dwell on it. The underworld is at its Dharma-ending age because of the dissipation of reiki. Cultivators might exist but they are as

rare as hens' teeth and you will hardly meet one throughout your entire life.”

“Then, why would a cultivator join the online game? Have they discovered something?” Lu Wu could not help but ask after a terrifying thought struck him.

Upon listening to the question, Bei Li chuckled, “Wu, you’ve underestimated the power of the artifact. The Lord King of Beiqi has invested his whole life to forge the artifact. Even if they run a thorough investigation, they will not be able to uncover the underworld. For them, this will just remain a game.”

Lu Wu heaved a sigh of relief. He was afraid that he would turn into the cultivators’ target. He would be in deep water if Kunlun, Shushan, or any other virtuous forces collaborated to arrest him for the felonies he had committed.

“Wu, it actually benefits us when a cultivator joins the game.”

“How so?”

“I’ve never told you before. You only know that the King of Beiqi forged the battle artifacts in order to conquer the underworld. However, you didn’t know that he will never antagonize a player. Instead, he may even aid the players as they develop their strength.”

“But, why!” Lu Yu was baffled.

“Because their souls have been marked by the battle artifact. If they are disloyal to the King of Beiqi, their souls will be recalled by the artifact to be exterminated! This is a crucial part of the Lord King of Beiqi’s plan to ensure that there’s no traitor under his reign!”

Lu Wu was shocked by Bei Li’s words. He did not expect the battle artifact to be this potent. Then, he recalled about his plan to put the game on the map. He was pumped up.



Lu Wu's plan was to turn the underworld into a second world for mankind. Regardless of their age, everyone would be able to have fun in this world. Killing monsters was only one of the fun activities. That means if his plan works out...

He will rule mankind!

"Little Li, can I ask you a question?"

Curious, Bei Li lifted her gaze and asked, "What is it?"

"Can you tell me about your background?" Lu Wu took a deep breath and summoned his courage to ask the question.

It was a question that had been buried in his mind for a very long time. Not only she participated in the development of the terrifying artifact, she also gained the trust from the Old Ancestors. Besides, her ability was outstanding. That was why he had always been curious about her true identity.

"I... I was... adopted by Lord King of Beiqi," Bei Li responded awkwardly as she played with the corner of her shirt.

Lu Wu was caught off guard by the answer. After a short while, he put on a grin on his face and reached out to ruffle her hair.

"It's fine if you don't want to talk about it now. I'll patiently wait for the day when you are ready to tell me the truth."

A hint of dejection flashed across Bei Li's eyes, but she gave a confident nod.

"Wu, I'll definitely tell you when it's time! But, you have to believe me when I say that our fates are intertwined. I will never betray you even if the three worlds are against you!"

Lu Wu smiled and patted Bei Li's tiny head again before he left the room. Then, he went to prepare a plethora of delicious dishes as a reward to the hardworking game master.

# Chapter 51 - Do You Play Battle Online, Too, Master?

Chapter 51: Do You Play Battle Online, Too, Master?

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

The sun was rising from the east and its beaming light dyed the Cachito Mountains red that were usually covered with white snow throughout the year.

Gu Yu (Invincible\_Loneliness) widely opened his arms to feel the amazing nature in this serene world. His cheeks had turned pink because of the cold air, yet he enjoyed the moment. Though incomprehensible, it was all shown by the expressions in his eyes.

Gu Yu stood on the highest cliff and looked down. The red crimson mist was like rolling waves and underneath was a sliver of silver lining. The mountains within resembled intertwining snow dragons, while the piercing cold wind clashing in the air created howling sounds like the roars of a raging dragon.

As he looked back at the few squad members, there was an expression of helplessness shown on Gu Yu's face.

It was an order by his father to hike up to the peak of the Cachito Mountains. He had no choice but to obey the command and come all the way here.

Otherwise to Gu Yu, he would rather be cooped up at home playing Battle Online. At the same time, he could collect some soul coins to level up his game. That would make him happier.

His father was a business tycoon who owned countless properties and estates.

According to his father, he was once an ordinary extreme sports athlete. One year, he came to the Cachito Mountains with his team members for a wingsuit flying challenge sponsored by a dairy beverage company.

When his father climbed to the top of the mountain, he met a mysterious man. According to his father, this man's guidance and blessing had led him to his success today.

An atheist like Gu Yu obviously would not take it seriously but merely treated it as a fable.

Naturally, he did not believe in the existence of any magical persons or divine entities. However, he just could not disobey his father, so there he was, obediently carrying out his father's request.

Gu Yu's father had even spent a fortune to hire a team of professionals to protect and help him on his journey to the peak of the mountain. At the same time, he was given a piece of jade by his father. He was to present the piece of jade when he reached the top in order to meet the mysterious man.

Gu Yu grew increasingly excited as he approached the mountain top.

He finally knew why his father liked extreme sports. It was the feeling of accomplishment in conquering nature.

As he stepped toward the peak of the mountain and looked down, he saw mountains shrouded in clouds and mist. He then gave a loud cry of excitement.

At the time, little did Gu Yu notice when the jade in his pocket suddenly flashed with a beam of light. In the meantime, in a wooden hut at the top of the mountain, a man wearing worn-out clothes who was seated cross-legged opened his eyes slowly.

"This is great! Hehe, it was said that the mountains at the Cliffs of Desperation are much higher than the peak here. I shall challenge it soon!" Gu Yu mumbled alone in excitement.

He had only treated this hike as an amusement.

While looking at his squad setting up camp for the night, Gu Yu took out his oxygen cylinder and took a few breaths. After informing the squad that he would explore the areas deeper into the mountains, he then walked in that direction.

He did not believe that anyone could survive in this place where the air was so thin and the wind so strong. The only thought he had in mind then was that his father had either been fooled by someone, or deceived by illusions...

As Gu Yu walked around the towering stone pillar and was about to continue moving forward, he was surprised to find a smiling bald man in thin clothes looking at him from a near distance.

Gu Yu stood there in silence.

There's really such a master? Gu Yu was astonished in disbelief.

“You're here!”

The man appeared to be the same age as himself, but Gu Yu was able to sense years of vicissitudes from him. It was a weird feeling.

“So... you're the master my father spoke of?” Gu Yu asked suspiciously.

“It's too much an honor to be called a master, but if your father is Gu Yuan, then I am the one you're looking for.”

“Yes, yes, yes. My father is Gu Yuan. He wanted me to look for you,” Gu Yu replied responsively.

The bald young man then nodded, “Please come with me.”

At that moment, Gu Yu was convinced a little. One had to be very skillful like a master in order to survive in such a place.

He followed the man for a few hundred meters and a wooden hut appeared in front of Gu Yu. The man then opened the door and with a smile on his face, gestured for him to enter the hut.

Gu Yu saw his motion and stepped inside.

It was simple and crude inside the hut. There was a wooden bed and two wooden chairs, but there was no blanket or food of any sort except some white-colored plants. Gu Yu was surprised. He was extremely curious to know how the man survived that place in such a condition.

Seeing the man sitting at the bedside, he then sat on a wooden chair next to it.

“Back in the day your father saved my life. He disrupted my cultivation when I was about to lose myself and get taken over by the demonic side. I told him that I will grant him two requests. The first one was already fulfilled and now, please tell me the second request,” Qi Ming spoke with a faint smile on his face.

Gu Yu went blank for a second and said, “Err, my father has always said that I am useless, that I only know how to play games. He was hoping that you, master, could show me the light and guide me, to see if I could repent from my mistake...”

Gu Yu was to a point ashamed when uttering those words. Although he did not think that he had any problems, his father was resentful toward Gu Yu for failing his expectations. His father thought that the Gu family would eventually fall one day if Gu Yu inherited the family business.

Gu Yu disagreed with his father on this. He would continue gaming as usual and occasionally had some fun outside. He always believed that the wealth possessed by his family was unlimited, so why should he tire himself so much? One should be having as much fun as time allowed.

Qi Ming nodded after hearing what Gu Yu had said. He gave it some thought and nodded again, “Both you and your father have different

personalities. Just as your father had said, if you're going to inherit the family business, you'll definitely lose everything."

Gu Yu felt unsettled for a few seconds, yet he had to ask, "Do you have any way to deal with it, master?"

Qi Ming nodded, "I can pray for you with The Art of Five Fortune Ghosts to increase your luck in fortune. Under the protection of the Five Ghosts, your luck in fortune shall prosper. No matter how incompetent you are, you will still be able to preserve your family business."

Gu Yu was stunned and speechless, he was somewhat assured by the master, yet he did not think that he was useless until that extent.

In terms of spending money, the biggest expense he had made lately was only on collecting soul coins in the game. He had not done anything over the line. How could someone compare him to a wastrel?

Qi Ming glanced at Gu Yu and smiled, "Alright then, let's start. After this, there will be no more attachment as what I've promised is fulfilled. It is a blessing to me indeed."

As soon as he finished talking, Qi Ming extended his arm and pointed at the ground. Gu Yu was flabbergasted at what happened next.

A dark vortex appeared slowly from the ground and cold air blew from the inside. Gu Yu could not help but shiver.

The cold was bone piercing. It was unbearable even when he was wearing thick protective clothes.

Such a trick was really a shock to the belief of an atheist like Gu Yu.

"Five Ghosts of Fortune!" Qi Ming bit his finger and the blood from his finger was sucked into the dark vortex.

"The successor of the Ghost Fortune Sect, Qi Ming shall borrow the power of the spirits and ghosts!"

Qi Ming's face was looking pale as blood continued to flow out of his body. His gaze, however, appeared firm.

At the side, Gu Yu was stunned as his worldview was overturned at the moment.

However, Gu Yu's eyes were enlarged as soon as he saw five translucent figures floating gradually from the dark vortex, "Master, do you play Battle Online, too?"

# Chapter 52 - Qi Ming Returning To The World

Chapter 52: Qi Ming Returning To The World

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

These five figures looked very familiar to Gu Yu.

Were they not the ghosts from the depths of the Ghost Mountains? Compared to the Wandering Souls, they were almost the same except that they looked more solid now.

In normal days, it would be a piece of cake for Gu Yu and his team to eliminate dozens of such ghosts. It was also because of this that Gu Yu was stupefied, not able to discern what was actually happening.

Qi Ming was a little confused as he glanced at Gu Yu who was dumbfounded. Even so, he did not query but turned to look at the dark vortex again.

After the Five Ghosts appeared, Qi Ming bit his own tongue and spat out some blood.

The blood floated in the air and split into five portions, each of them then entered the bodies of the Five Ghosts respectively.

The bodies of the Five Ghosts became even more solid as a result. At this time, Qi Ming said while pointing at Gu Yu, “Five Ghosts bring wealth!”

As if the five Wandering Souls had received an order, they rapidly approached Gu Yu and hovered around him. Between them and connecting them together was a transparent lacing.



Qi Ming was pleased as he watched the scene. He extended his arm and waved. The Five Ghosts faded away little by little followed by the slowly disappearing dark vortex.

“It’s done. You may go now. The fate between me and the Gu family has come to an end. We shall be strangers from now on. Even if you wanted to meet me, I will not appear,” Qi Ming appeared to be slightly tired.

Gu Yu felt weird after hearing Qi Ming’s words. He stood up and started searching around the room. While Qi Ming looked at him cluelessly, Gu Yu went through everything in the room before coming back to his original position, “Master, where did you hide your virtual reality projection devices?”

“Virtual reality projection devices?” Qi Ming was taken aback.

“Master, don’t fool me! The Five Ghosts that you just summoned are known as ghosts, right? Do you really think I’ve not played Battle Online before? I could kill dozens of those per day!”

According to Gu Yu, Qi Ming must be a player of Battle Online. He had used the virtual reality projection technology to fool other people. If Gu Yu had not played this game himself, he would surely have believed him already.

Qi Ming was stupefied as well, though he could understand from his words that Gu Yu had seen the Five Ghosts before. He even knew the names of the Five Ghosts.

Looking at Qi Ming who was bewildered, Gu Yu grinned, approached Qi Ming and patted his shoulder, “Which character class do you play, master? I have set up a guild, let’s level up together, shall we?”

“I don’t understand what you’ve just said,” although he was puzzled, Qi Ming calmly shook his head.

“Hey, don’t pretend anymore, it’s just five ghosts. I have even killed the netherworld creatures, steel zombies, and the Fire Demon before. These

ghosts are nothing to me, Five Fortune Ghosts? What fortune nonsense is that! I could butcher dozens of them in one day yet they never give me any good stuff!”

As he heard this, Qi Ming frowned, “You know about the netherworld creatures and steel zombies?”

As the successor of the Ghost Fortune Sect, excluding the Fire Demon, he had seen before the other two ghosts in the illustration handbook of the sect. However, Qi Ming was shocked that Gu Yu, who was just a common person, knew so much about the ghosts.

“Why wouldn’t I know? Have you been to the official web forum of Battle Online? Do you know about the loaded user Invincible\_Loneliness who has been collecting soul coins daily? That’s me!” Gu Yu boasted proudly.

“This Battle Online that you mentioned, what is it exactly?” Qi Ming was very curious, he could not understand why the secular world had information about the underworld.

“It’s Battle Online! Stop with your pretense, I was already very clear about it!” Gu Yu’s eyes widened.

“I still don’t understand,” Qi Ming replied honestly.

“Alright, alright. The favor is done. I can go back and report to my father now, you may continue with your act!” looking at Qi Ming who was still pretending, Gu Yu waved his hand in the air and walked out of the wooden hut.

While looking at the white scenery outside, Gu Yu hummed a tune as he walked. As what he had in mind, the master was simply a charlatan. He even guessed that underneath the wooden hut of this master, there had to be space for storing living supplies. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to survive without eating and drinking.

But he did not care about all these. Gu Yu was in a very good mood thinking that he could continue with his game when he reaches home.

.....

Even after Gu Yu had left, Qi Ming was still frowning.

At first he thought he would have settled everything and finally able to retreat into the mountains without any attachment to the common world, but after his encounter with Gu Yu, his mood was very disturbed instead.

Qi Ming was not able to comprehend even after giving it much thought. He then took out a satellite phone from his bedside, installed the battery and dialed a number.

After a while, the phone call went through.

“Grandfather, how are you free to call me!” a voice resembling a slightly old man was delivered through the satellite phone.

“Do you know about Battle Online?” Qi Ming thought for a while and asked.

“Battle Online? I’m not sure, please hold, I’ll have someone to look into it.”

After he finished speaking, there was a voice of giving orders to his subordinates on the other side of the line.

About five minutes later, the same voice appeared, “Grandfather, here’s what I’ve found. It is actually a virtual reality game and it is said that the game is extremely real.”

This should be it, Qi Ming thought.

“In these few days, I will leave the mountain to meet you, so please prepare a set of equipment for me by then. I need it,” Qi Ming hung up the phone as soon as he finished speaking.

In the meantime, on the lawn of a certain golf club, a man in his fifties who looked rather old was holding a golf ball. He had a weird look on his face.

After his father was born, his grandfather had followed after an old man in a black robe. It was said that he went to seek immortality. Since then, there was no news about him at all. Just when everyone thought that he had disappeared for good, he appeared suddenly one day.

It was during the time when his father was approaching old age. Yet, his grandfather remained his young looks. It really shocked everyone.

It was also because of his grandfather that he was able to succeed in his career. Only then he knew that his grandfather had already become a legendary monk.

He was not able to track his grandfather at all except a few occasions of his appearances.

He was expecting something important when he received his grandfather's phone call out of the blue. However, it turned out that the reason his grandfather leaving the mountains was merely to play video games. He was dazed when he heard it.

# Chapter 53 - The Battle Of Cultivators

Chapter 53: The Battle Of Cultivators

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

At the entrance of the Ghost Mountains.

Qi Ming's figure appeared.

He chose to return to the world again because he could not resolve the confusion in his heart. He even ordered his descendants to prepare equipment such as the virtual reality headset and then he registered an account in the game.

After experiencing the gaming content, Qi Ming was in absolute shock.

Even though he had never been to the Underworld, he really suspected that the gaming scenes before his eyes were built according to the blueprint of the actual underworld.

To understand the truth, he had even ordered his grandson to investigate the situation of the proprietor of this game.

However, the outcome showed that the proprietor of the game was only an ordinary person and had no strong background. All of these seemed peculiar.

There was no information leakage of any sort regarding the research team behind the game. Such a tight blockade was really surprising.

His grandson planned to continue the investigation but was stopped by Qi Ming.

To him, the proprietor that came out from the investigation was only a disguise. There must be a scary cultivator behind the scenes.

He even suspected that the ability of the person behind all this had reached the state where he had access to the Nine Nether Regions, making him a person like the Earthly Deity who could travel back and forth between the Yin and Yang.

He did not understand why the powerhouse wanted to create this game. However, as the heir of the Ghost Fortune Sect, he was curious about the underworld and he felt the need to explore the place no matter what.

Therefore, Qi Ming chose to return to the world this time and settled down under his grandson's arrangement.

However, his grandson seemed confused.

From the grandson's point of view, he had always thought that his grandfather was a free but profound person who had been hidden from the world. But nowadays, he would only stay indoors to play games, until the extent of totally not stepping outside at all.

He was having a mental breakdown in his heart as his grandfather's image started to crumble and the whole world became unfamiliar.

.....

While experiencing the game, Qi Ming slowly understood that leveling up could make one stronger.

After leveling up several times, he became addicted to that feeling as he found out that his body strength in the game increased as the attributes became stronger. This feeling felt so real and at the same time solidified his guess last time.

In the game, Qi Ming chose the character class of mage which was more relatable to his own ability. He also learned his first skill of 'Yin Soldier Summoning Skill' at the Cultivation Pavilion.

After using the skill several times, Qi Ming felt shocked.

This was because the releasing of the skill could trigger the movement of energy particles in the air. Other players could not sense this, but as a cultivator with a powerful state of mind, he could sense the movement clearly.

To testify this matter, he spent three days' time to release the skill and realize the movement tracks of space energy.

After ensuring that he had fully mastered the movement tracks of this beginner's skill, he started to try it in reality. The result was shocking.

Although he failed several times, he actually did summon a Yin soldier that was half-complete to the world of the living. The game was unreal but the scary thing was that the Yin Soldier Summoning Skill could actually be released in the living world!

Such a shocking discovery appalled Qi Ming and at the same time made him realize the horror of this game. He suspected that the powerhouse behind the game was attempting to use the game as a medium of inheritance.

Qi Ming was totally addicted to the game due to a combination of factors such as enhancing his cultivating techniques in the game, for the inheritance which might or might not exist and his yearning toward the underworld.

But, what freaked out Qi Ming's grandson, Qi Lu was the moment when his grandfather asked for money from him without a hint of shame. Initially, he did not take it seriously. However, when he asked his grandfather what he was going to do with the money, Qi Ming said something he just learned from the official web forum, "Buy soul coins and get fortified with cash!"

Qi Lu was stunned!

His impression of his grandfather changed drastically at that moment.

Conversely, Qi Ming did not take this matter seriously.

As the players in the forum said, “How can you be strong without using cash!” Besides, he could not explore the game properly without coins, not to mention that he still had to learn new skills and buy new equipment. He had to spend coins everywhere.

As a 100-year-old man, Qi Ming deeply understood a principle at the moment, that gaming experience could only be improved by using cash.

.....

Coming to the Ghost Mountains this time, Qi Ming walked alone into the mountains as usual.

When he was about to enter deeper into the mountains, he suddenly discovered a netherworld creature standing beside a heap of giant stones.

As he mingled around the forum very often, Qi Ming knew that the netherworld creatures were species that seldom drop items after being killed, so he was feeling delighted. When he was just about to attack the creature, a figure flashed out from beside him and overtook him.

“It’s mine!” the man turned around his head, glanced at Qi Ming coldly and walked toward the netherworld creature.

“Don’t you know about the courtesy of first-come-first-serve?” Qi Ming was not angry but he was not planning to let go of the creature either. He followed the man decisively.

“Whoosh!” a red long sword appeared out of nowhere and was held in the hands of Ao Jian.

At the same time, there were eight Spiritual Swords with different colors appearing behind his back, hanging in the air and emitting streams of the shining Sword Qi.

Seeing that, Qi Ming frowned as he could feel the overflowing Sword Qi. Other than that, he also felt that the person before him was quite different from other players he had seen before.



“Do you want to die?” Ao Jian looked at Qi Ming coldly while holding the Spiritual Sword in his hand.

“I have always seen people fighting over creatures on the forum. This is my first time encountering this. Please, enlighten me,” Qing Ming smiled and hit the ground with his wand. All of a sudden, black vapor started clouding and the Yin soldiers crawled out from the soil one after another.

With that, two real-life cultivators started their battle for the first time in the game.

See that Qi Ming was not giving up, Ao Jian became cold-hearted and with a swing of his red sword, he released a beam of sword light as he charged toward Qi Ming like lightning.

Without being frightened, Qi Ming started controlling the Yin soldiers to guard the attack while releasing a ‘Yin Corrosion’ and backed off continuously.

During the fight, Ao Jian was surprised to discover that the Yin soldiers Qi Ming had summoned were totally different from that of other players.

As if every one of them had its own conscious mind, they even knew how to avoid an attack actively and foresee the next attack, which seemed very peculiar.

Naturally, Ao Jian did not know that Qi Ming was a cultivator with a powerful state of mind and practiced spells in real life. To him, multitasking was a piece of cake.

However, Ao Jian already had some speculation in his heart. He did a quick duck and barged toward Qi Ming.

Seeing that, Qi Ming did not panic. Instead, he started wrestling with Ao Jian by slowing him down with the Yin Corrosion’s poison. At the same time, the Yin soldiers could always defend the attack coming from Ao Jian at critical moments.

For a moment, it was a tie between both parties.

After fighting again for a while, Ao Jian suddenly stopped attacking and asked, “Are you a cultivator?”

Qi Ming smiled and said, “If I guessed correctly, you are using the Ao Family Sword Style!”

# Chapter 54 - The Law Of Reincarnation

Chapter 54: The Law Of Reincarnation

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

After hearing Qi Ming mentioned the sword style he was using, Ao Jian was stunned.

“Who are you?” Ao Jian asked boldly after putting away his red sword.

Qi Ming smiled, “Is it that important to know who I am? Since we are both cultivators, then this netherworld creature...”

“Impossible, it’s mine!” Ao Jian interjected Qi Ming coldly.

“It’s a tie between us. Moreover, I was the one who discovered it first.”

Ao Jian did not reply this time. The red Spiritual Sword in his hand turned into twinkling lights and re-formed behind his back. Then, Ao Jian reached out both hands to release a skill, where green and blue Spiritual Swords at his back flew out and rested in the grip of his hands.

“A tie? You’ve underestimated me!”

Qi Ming was helpless against Ao Jian’s attitude. Ao Jian was truly from the Ao family for his bad temper.

However, Qi Ming was not planning to give up. He did not want to walk away from the opportunity of finally coming across a netherworld creature.

Resuming the fight, Qi Ming was surprised to discover that Ao Jian’s sword style had totally changed. He kept changing the weapon in his hand and his style became more offensive and complicated. It was unpredictable,

sometimes as aggressive as scorching fire and sometimes as cold as ice, making it hard for Qi Ming to defend.

Again, Ao Jian got close. Qi Ming backed off as he tried to control the Yin soldiers to block the attack. However, he saw the Nine Spiritual Swords behind Ao Jian detaching from his back simultaneously and charged toward him as Ao Jian pointed his fingers at him!

Qi Ming was not expecting him to use Sword Manipulation.

The Yin soldiers in front of him were torn apart at once, but the Spiritual Swords did not slow down. Then, Nine Spiritual Swords penetrated his body all at the same time.

The scene before his eyes started to fade away. Ao Jian just glared at the fallen torso, turned around and walked toward the netherworld creature.

In the meantime, the Nine Spiritual Swords in his body vibrated slightly and returned to Ao Jian's back automatically before neatly arranging themselves into a fan shape.

Ao Jian had not used his full power from the start in the fight against Qi Ming.

Initially, he was just using the Ao Family Sword Style. However, after knowing that Qi Ming was also a cultivator, he realized that the Ao Family Sword Style would not be effective against him. So, he decided to change his attacking strategy by using Jian Chou's Demonic Sage of Ten Swords and ended the battle easily with his Sword Manipulation.

Seeing the power of Demonic Sage of Ten Swords, Ao Jian seemed calm outwardly but he was extremely excited in his heart. He knew that he had chosen the right path and that he was truly the mightiest swordsman. If he continued to comprehend, he would become a sword master one day!

Even though he had never seen Jian Chou in person, Ao Jian had long considered him as his respected teacher. He was determined not to disappoint Jian Chou's inheritance and become the greatest swordsman!

Aside from leveling up, another important reason he wanted to get the netherworld creature was realizing the importance of soul coins as he gained gaming experiences. Even Ao Jian, who regarded wealth as unimportant, had the desire for soul coins.

This was because other than enhancing the strength of his Spiritual Swords and leveling up, materials could be added to further increase the power of his Spiritual Swords.

There were a lot of materials being sold at the auction house, but one must have sufficient soul coins to purchase them.

The lowest price a netherworld creature could sell for was 100 soul coins. So, Ao Jian could not resist the temptation of getting a free netherworld creature.

Ao Jian was delighted now but Qi Ming who was logged out of the game got shell-shocked.

“Ao Jian, you little brat! You have angered me!” Qi Ming who had usually been easy-going and expressionless was experiencing a turbulent mood swing now.

This was the first time he met someone who showed him no respect at all and even cut him to death.

Qi Ming was still afraid when he recalled the scene of the Nine Spiritual Swords penetrating him at the same time.

“Sword Manipulation? That was definitely not the Ao Family Sword Style. Did he inherit those skills in that world?”

Thinking of this, a fire of passion was aroused in Qi Ming’s heart. If he can get it, why can’t I!?

What Qi Ming did not know was, during his battle with Ao Jian, an inheritance in the Spirit Summoning Palace within the Artifact Channel was

resonating. However, at the moment before the inheritance befell, he was slashed to death by Ao Jian and was forced to leave the game.

If Qi Ming knew that his inheritance was interrupted by Ao Jian, his level of hatred would have escalated beyond just snatching a creature and killing him.

.....

Lu Wu and Bei Li also left God's Eye after Qi Ming died.

Due to the appearance of cultivators, Lu Wu paid quite some attention to Ao Jian. He did not expect to see such a battle while observing Ao Jian.

To his surprise, Qi Ming was also a cultivator.

Lu Wu did not understand what was happening. Why did all these hidden cultivators show up one after another? Lu Wu was worried that they had found out the truth behind Battle Online.

However, regarding this, Bei Li had asked Lu Wu not to worry one bit.

First of all, these cultivators would be marked once they had gathered any Yin Body in the artifacts. Betrayal would mean death. Furthermore, Battle Online was considered as a game in the world of the living. No matter what, they would not be aware of the existence of the underworld.

Lu Wu raised his doubt regarding Bei Li's explanation. What if there was a cultivator who could travel between the Yin and Yang? If that cultivator met one of the players, everything would be exposed.

“You do not have to worry about this. Traveling between the Yin and Yang was something only the Earth Deities could do. There is no such powerful cultivator of that level because of the degrading soul energy in the world of the living. The Earthly Deities that once existed had already left and would not come back anymore.”

“Where did they go?” Lu Wu was curious.

Bei Li pointed at the sky and stuck her tongue out.

Lu Wu, “What?”

“Oh yes, there is one more problem. If a player met an extremely strong deity in the underworld, can the battle artifacts protect their soul from de-attaching?”

Lu Wu’s worry on this issue could be seen from his eyes.

Lu Wu was not worried at all if he encountered someone on Du Yan’s level. However, after knowing that there were deities in the underworld, he was scared that some audacious players would approach them and gave it a try to dance on the verge of death.

“Wu, do you know what materials the battle artifacts are made of?” instead of answering directly, Bei Li questioned Lu Wu while looking at him with a serious face.

Lu Wu shook his head.

“The Supreme Law of the underworld, reincarnation, is very intricately related to the battle artifacts. Wu, I cannot tell you the exact relationship between them now, but you have to understand that you don’t have to worry about this. No matter how strong a deity is, he is not above the law. No one can be above the Supreme Reincarnation!”

Hearing her explanation, huge waves started rolling in Lu Wu’s heart. More doubts arose in his heart. Why the old ancestor, a mere King of Beiqi would be involved with the Supreme Law of Reincarnation? Moreover, what is Bei Li’s true identity? Why does she know all of this...

However, he once said that he would trust Bei Li. So, he would wait until the day Bei Li tells him the truth!

# Chapter 55 - Christmas Battle

Chapter 55: Christmas Battle

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

Christmas, a festival from the West, was now popularized in the Dragon Nation and had become an important festival. But unlike in the West, Christmas in the Dragon Nation had a romantic atmosphere that could not be put into words.

Walking on the street at night, Christmas trees were placed outside many shopping malls. The streets were decorated with flashing neon lights and filled with Christmas vibes.

After finishing dinner, Lu Wu and Bei Li were hanging out at the shopping mall. They could see many couples in pairs.

Looking at Bei Li who was enjoying her ice cream, Lu Wu suddenly felt that this festival was not friendly to him.

Initially, Lu Wu planned to buy some new clothing for Bei Li but she did not seem to be interested. Her gaze was locked on the snack shops.

After giving Bei Li's head a rub, Lu Wu pointed at a children's clothing store, "It's time to get you some new clothes."

Bei Li was about to answer Lu Wu but suddenly, her expression changed, "Wu, let's go home!"

"What happened?" Lu Wu asked as he realized something bad might have happened.

"Cha Na is here!"

.....



During Christmas, there were fewer players in the game, which was rare.

Obviously, single people were excluded.

At this moment, the players who were wandering around Liuli District suddenly saw a huge black army marching toward them from Liuli District.

The players who saw this scene had their hearts skip a beat and quickly rushed toward the direction of the Mansion of the Dead. At the same time, they shouted in the guild live chat channel crazily, asking everyone to spread the news, or else they would soon lose control over the Mansion of the Dead!

As the game master, Bei Li found out the movement of Cha Na's army through the players who first discovered them. So, she had immediately asked Lu Wu to rush back home.

At this moment, thunderous roars of beasts could be heard at the border area between Liuli District and the Mansion of the Dead. A great army of 100,000 soldiers had arrived at the border.

At the very front of Cha Na's army and on the Skeletal Throne, Cha Na asked with a cold gaze, "What are those creatures along the way? Why are they here?"

The soulbringer beneath the throne bowed at Cha Na, "Lord Cha Na, these creatures always appear in Liuli District, but they are extremely vulnerable. I think they are a nomadic race from other large domains."

Cha Na nodded and turned his gaze toward the area of Mansion of the Dead, "March on!"

The Beast Cavalry comprising of zombie wolf riders, zombie elephant riders, and zombie rhino riders rode on after receiving Cha Na's order.

More and more players heard the news of Cha Na arriving. They quickly mobilized more players to form a temporary army, preparing to defend against their enemy.

As he got closer to the border of the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District, Cha Na became more confused as to why the creatures were increasing.

Eventually, he instructed the Yin soldiers to catch a few stragglers and bring them before him.

These players had seen the video of the seaside, so they were naturally familiar with Cha Na. Looking at the figure on the Skeletal Throne, the three captured stragglers started worrying.

The players frequently discussed on the forum that their idea was to attack Cha Na at the right time, but they never expected Cha Na to initiate the attack first. The worst part was that the number of players tonight was obviously lower than the last few days.

“Which large domain have you come from, and which race are you?” the soulbringer asked the three players after glancing at Cha Na.

“Descendant of the King of Beiqi, Gao Dashan!”

“Descendant of the King of Beiqi, Yu Dahai!”

“Descendant of the King of Beiqi, Peng Wanli!”

The three players were not afraid of facing Cha Na at all. They reported their identities out loud.

Having heard the replies of the three players, Cha Na was stupefied and had a weird expression on his face.

Slap! Slap! Slap! Seeing this, the soulbringer went forward and gave each of the players a slap on the face, “How dare you disrespect Lord Cha Na!”

“Fuck you!”

“Bitch, I dare you to hit me again!”

These players were clearly bad-tempered. After being slapped, they lost their temper and started scolding the soulbringer aggressively.

Slap! Slap! Slap! The soulbringer slapped them again while remaining expressionless.

“I shall ask you again. Which race are you and why are you here at the Mansion of the Dead!”

“Bitch, you’ll be dying a painful death and your son will have no butt!”

“Cha Na, take care of your dog! If you can’t handle it, tie a leash on it!”

Being restrained and slapped again, the three entrapped and angered players could only continue swearing and scolding.

The soulbringer was angered by their words. He turned and looked at Cha Na. After Cha Na nodded, he raised the sickle in his hand and beheaded all three of the players.

Looking at the players who turned into black vapor, Cha Na showed a surprised face. He did not say much but only instructed the army to march on and behead all creatures of the same kind along the way.

In Cha Na’s point of view, since he had moved to the Mansion of the Dead, he would not allow other races to settle here. This would be his territory before he breaks through the Ghost King’s Territory.

But as they got closer to the Mansion of the Dead, the number of players had suddenly reduced drastically. When the mansion appeared right before his eyes, Cha Na was dumbfounded by the scene before him.

There were hundreds of thousands of players densely packed together, looking at them from afar.

“Brothers, that bastard Cha Na is coming. Is everyone ready!?” Wu Guoyi, the temporary Commander In Chief growled boldly with his battle axe raised and his head turned to look at his brothers.

“Kill the bastard!” all the players behind chanted in unison.

Looking at the players' camp from far, Cha Na's face darkened, "They're quite a huge number. If we started a war, my army will suffer many unnecessary losses as well."

Seeing this, the soulbringer quickly said, "Lord Cha Na, we cannot go back to Liuli District. Even though there are a lot of them, they are weak. We will definitely win this battle!"

Hearing that, Cha Na nodded. To him, after killing several thousands of them, they would be terrified. The rest would be in disarray and easily defeated. He nodded and said, "Then, we shall fight!"

After receiving the order, several giant rhinos with war drums on their backs started marching forward with heavy steps from behind Cha Na's army.

Looking at the players' camp from afar, Cha Na slowly stood up from his Skeletal Throne. A huge banner that read 'Cha' was lifted behind him.

Then, Cha Na raised his hand up high and held his fist. Immediately, the sound of the war drums started to play at the back. Thump! Thump!

Roar!

The beasts growled after getting the command to attack. On the backs of the beasts, the Yin soldiers' thirst for blood could be seen in their eyes. They roared as they charged recklessly toward the players.

The image of hundreds of thousands of soldiers charging forward was devastating to the mind. The players who had never seen a real war was stunned by the sight before them.

As the smoke billowed, even the earth was shaking unceasingly as Cha Na's beast riders charged on wildly.

Then, Wu Guoyi lifted his battle axe, "Follow me and kill! We must take Cha Na's head!"

"Kill!"

The players came back to their senses after hearing Wu Guoyi's roar, with much boldness on their faces. All of them followed Wu Guoyi and charged toward Cha Na's army while crying out loud.

# Chapter 56 - Sacrifice And Madness

Chapter 56: Sacrifice And Madness

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

Cha Na's surprise assault caught Lu Wu and Bei Li completely by surprise. When they arrived at the battlefield, the war had already begun.

When the two powerful forces collided into each other, waves of players and Yin soldiers were knocked down to the ground. With that, the bloodbath began.

Faced with Cha Na's army which equaled them in numbers, the players were having a hard time defending on their own. They seemed to be losing in a one-sided massacre.

However, the players were utterly unfazed by the situation and attacked madly as they followed their comrades ahead.

As more and more members fell, the players' camp was pushed backward by Cha Na's army, slowly approaching the center of the Mansion of the Dead.

Cha Na sneered at the sight that was unfolding. Just as he had expected, this alien race would not be able to withstand any attack from him.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

The sound of battle drums was heard again. A rain of blood started falling from the sky. The Yin soldiers with bloodshot eyes cried excitedly at the sky.

“Kill! Leave no survivors!”

With Cha Na's command echoing in the air, every Yin soldier's eyes were crazed with bloodlust. Together, they pounced on the players again.

“Commander, there are too many of them. What should we do!?” Li Tianxia shouted at Wu Guoyi after cutting down a Yin soldier with his sword.

“Kill!” Wu Guoyi replied simply and charged ahead again. His battle axe danced around frantically, killing many Yin soldiers.

This is the first time the players encountered a real war. They could not adapt to this sort of extreme environment but they fought fearlessly, knowing that their base camp, Mansion of the Dead was just behind them. They were willing to give up their lives to protect it.

As their comrades continued to fall, it fueled the anger burning at the bottom of the players' hearts and their attacks became increasingly vicious. Under their ferocious momentum, Cha Na's army started depleting as well.

Cha Na's expression froze for a moment when he saw this happen before him. This was not what he expected. The fall of the player's comrades should have despaired the others, but it seemed like they were madder than before.

He only had 100,000 men, so the rising death toll distressed him greatly. Finally, he could not take it anymore. He let out an angry growl and jumped into the air, turning into a ferocious, muscular giant and charged toward the players.

“That traitor Cha Na is coming!”

“Prepare to die!”

The appearance of Cha Na drove the players crazier. Together, they swarmed toward Cha Na.

“You bunch of scum!” Cha Na bellowed angrily. He slammed his enormous palm on the ground as he approached the players.

The force of his palm left a large pit on the ground instantly. Every player in the area was smashed to pieces by the huge force.

Lu Wu and Bei Li spectated the war with sullen expressions. The players' camp had a very slim chance to win this battle.

At that moment, strings of messages started to appear in Lu Wu's mind.

“Master, Lu Mo requests to fight. I am willing to kill that traitor Cha Na and restore my father's glory!”

“Master, Fatty Li requests to fight. I am willing to kill Cha Na and restore glory to the King of Beiqi.”

“Master, Master Qu wishes to fight. I am willing to kill Cha Na and restore glory to the King of Beiqi”

.....

Lu Wu was stunned by the number of requests appearing in his mind from several dozen NPCs.

These NPCs had regarded the memories implanted during their creation as their own true memories. They were once subordinates of the King of Beiqi and therefore had the same hatred toward Cha Na.

Lu Wu glanced at the players who were fighting hard in the bloodbath and his gaze became more determined than ever!

“Requests granted!”

Receiving Lu Wu's command, Lu Mo's eyes flashed with deep hatred as he leaped from the Mansion of Dead toward the battlefield. The other NPCs followed his lead and hurried toward the same direction.

Cha Na's power was so great that almost no one could stop him. Facing his vicious slaughtering, the players were facing a challenge they had never encountered before.



Cha Na's patience was burning out as he was continuously attacked by the players. He inhaled deeply and spat out burning hot hellfire from his mouth.

The hellfire was overbearing. Once a player was contaminated, he would be burned to a puff of dark smoke and forced to leave the game.

As the hellfire spread rapidly, player casualties continued to rise.

At the moment of crisis, dozens of figures appeared out of thin air.

They stood in front of the players and defended against Cha Na's hellfire together, saving the players from a fatal attack.

The appearances of these figures shocked the players. They never expected the NPCs to help with the war.

At that moment, Lu Mo and several others were assisted by Lu Wu's soul power. Although their own strength was fueled to the maximum, they could never reach Cha Na's level due to the limits of their foundation. They were obviously ready to give up their lives for this battle.

Cha Na looked at Lu Mo and the others mockingly. Then, he raised his fist and smashed it forward forcefully. Immediately, hellfire gushed out from the ground and spread ahead rapidly.

"Leave!" Lu Mo looked back while struggling and shouted at the players who were still rooted to the ground.

In Lu Mo's memories, the players were real. Just like himself, they were descendants of Beiqi. He was not willing to let them sacrifice in vain.

"I said leave!" Lu Mo shouted again. His face, red from hellfire burn, was ferocious and determined.

"Brother Lu, we will fight with you!" the players were determined and refused to leave. They resumed their series of attacks toward Cha Na.

As the players resumed their onslaught, Cha Na hardened his ruthless heart and increased the intensity of the hellfire in his mouth. It was getting harder

for Lu Mo and the other players to hold their defenses.

Amidst the burning hellfire, Lu Mo and the others grew weaker, and their soul power would soon be exhausted.

Looking forward at Cha Na, Lu Mo's eyes flashed with a glimpse of hatred. He then glanced backward at the players who came for support regardless of danger and he felt a surge of warmth flowing from the bottom of his heart.

They are here to fight for my father's glory, I can't let them down!

Having thought that, Lu Mo gathered all his power in his palm and smacked behind himself.

Giant energy waves rose and forced the incoming players to retreat, "Leave us! Live and avenge us!"

"Leave and avenge us!" Fatty Chef also directed all his strength to push the players back. The players were once again pushed backward by several yards.

"Don't forget the skills I taught you. Live on! You are the hope of Beiqi!" with a smile, Master Qu used the remaining of this strength to push away the players.

.....

The hellfire finally broke through the barricade formed by Lu Mo and the others, igniting and burning them. Even in the midst of the burning hellfire, their eyes remained hopeful as they looked at the remaining players.

The players were touched by the scene in front of them.

They remembered as clear as day Big Brother Lu who was like a neighborhood brother to them. He would read them stories, talked and listened to them with all his heart.

They also remembered Fatty Chef, who loved to joke but could also cook the most delicious meals ever.

They too remembered Master Qu, a tutor who was stern and reserved but had taught them attentively and relentlessly.

.....

The sacrifices of those familiar faces left the players dumbstruck.

As the bloody rain fell upon their faces, their expressions were dazed as they felt like they had lost something.

Once again, they turned toward Cha Na and his army. This time, their fury was unleashed without reservation.

# Chapter 57 - The Returning Comrades

Chapter 57: The Returning Comrades

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

A video was posted on the homepage of Battle Online's forum by one of the players that was forced to log out after being killed in the game.

[Our friends have died! I appeal for the return of my comrades to battle with me and avenge their deaths!]

In the video, Lu Mo and the rest of the team could be seen exhausting their last bit of power to push back the rest of the players. In the end, they were set on hellfire and burned to ashes.

The video had completely stunned the players who were not in the game.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "I could still remember our heart-to-heart talks with Big Brother Lu at night and the fine liquor that he shared with me. Rest in peace, big brother! I shall avenge your death!"

Cantabile\_years: "Rest in peace, brothers! I shall slaughter Cha Na and his army to avenge you."

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "I never thought this would happen while I was away on a date outside. I, Xueli, requesting to join the team! I'm going to kill Cha Na for revenge!"

Foodie\_XiaoJia: "Just the thought of not being able to taste Fatty Chef's food anymore makes me so angry!!! Wait up, I am on my way home. Hold on, my fellow brothers!"

The death of Lu Mo and the other NPCs angered the players. Many of them contacted each other and were rushing home to join the alliance.

During this time, most of the Battle Online players had learned about the incident on Christmas night from their guild's chat group or from messages between friends.

And the players' rage had been fully ignited.

Somewhere in an unnamed hotel room, a man was hastily dressing up. While his exasperated girlfriend was giving him a bewildered look, he rushed for the door.

At a certain karaoke joint, several guys simultaneously put down their microphones with indignation, quickly bid their friends goodbye and headed back to their homes.

In one of the bars, while a group of revelers was happily drinking, a man picked up an unexpected phone call and his expression immediately turned somber. He proceeded to say a few words to his mates. Then, the few of them immediately walked out of the bar and cabbled back to their homes.

Somewhere in a billiard room, a person was forwarding the message he received to his fellow pool players. At once, they paid the bill and rushed back to their homes.

.....

Just like that, similar events happened in many places.

One by one, the players appeared in the game. Once logged in, they were all invited by their comrades to join the battle for vengeance.

From the Demolition Guild's live chat channel, the guild master's roar sounded in the members' ears, "Brothers, I will be at the forefront. If I were to die in the battle, I want all of you to step over my corpse and charge ahead! Kill!"

From the Avengers Guild's live chat channel, Wu Guoyi bellowed, "Unity will keep us together, let us protect the Mansion of the Dead! Onward with me!"

From the Great Dragon Guild's live chat channel, Chen Ziyu yelled, "For the glory of the King of Beiqi, for our lost friends. Let there be no regrets tonight! Kill!"

From the Invincible Myth's live chat channel, Invincible\_Loneliness spoke in rage as he waved his long sword while staring at Cha Na from far, "Tonight, I vow to kill Cha Na, and I won't stop until he is dead!"

.....

At this point, every guild had decided to let go of their conflicts between each other and were preparing to launch a forceful attack at Cha Na.

Even Cha Na was stunned when he was faced with an increasing number of creatures gathering in front of his eyes. The number of creatures had impressively reached more than 300,000. On top of that, he did not even know where these creatures were coming from. It seemed impossible to exterminate them completely.

Lu Wu felt encouraged when he saw the players unite together. He then retrieved the music file from Ba Lun's email and let Bei Li digitize the data before uploading it into the artifact.

Thump! Thump! The sounds of the war drum resonated throughout the realm from the back of Cha Na's army. At the same time, background music started playing in the ears of all the players.

"The Phoenix (The Immortal Bird)"

Put on your war paint

You are a brick tied to me that's dragging me down

Strike a match and I'll burn you to the ground

Setting fire to the sky

Here, here comes this rising tide

So come on

Put on your war paint

Silver clouds with grey linings

So we can take the world back from a heart attack

The music resounded throughout the battleground, concealing the beat of the drums while firing up the passion within the players.

“Roar!”

“Kill!”

The two torrents collided once again. The players turned their anger into strength, showing an overwhelming power of combat against their opponents.

The frightening thing in a battle was not one’s weaknesses, but the lack of determination to fight to the death.

Under the influence of the background music, the players went on without a single step back and even managed to push back Cha Na’s army.

As the heat of battle continued to rise, Cha Na was starting to feel helpless against such a huge number of players, even with his own attack. What scared him even more was that the number of players was still increasing by the moment.

In this battle, the players’ forces were slowly overpowering Cha Na’s army in terms of morale.

“Charge on, fellow Night Killers!” under the command of Ye Xue’er, the group of assassins gave a loud roar and rushed toward the frontlines.

One after another, large red figures emerged from behind the enemy's army, shrouding over everyone. With a few swings of their gigantic bloody blades, fresh blood splattered in the air.

This squad of assassins was assembled by Ye Xue'er with a huge amount of coins. Consisting of ten members, each of them had farmed more than 10,000 points of Blood Essence to become the first batch of players to advance their character classes to Cursed Apostles. Hence, they were able to unleash their powerful energy in this battle.

The Night Killers were slaughtering the Yin soldiers with their demon-like powers while Cha Na could only stare in horror.

“Night Killers! Naraka Realm! You are the descendants of the Cursed Clan!” Cha Na exclaimed with a horrified expression.

He recognized the power of the Cursed Clan. He himself used to be a member of the army team that laid siege on the Cursed Clan, a powerful clan that required the King of Beiqi himself to defend against.

He would not have guessed that the weaklings before him had found out how to use the forces of the Naraka Realm. The fear in Cha Na's heart started to spread.

Not to mention, the deaths of Lu Mo and the others had utterly fired up the anger in the players' hearts. Their desire for vengeance was unceasing and their attacks were unstoppable until the blood of Cha Na is spilled.

“Roar! Cha Na you old thief, I want you dead!” a berserker broke away from the crowd. With reddened eyes, he darted toward Cha Na while swinging his Greatsword and slashed at Cha Na's thigh.

Memories of his breakup half a month ago and his heart-to-heart talk with Lu Mo at that time floated in his mind. Recalling Lu Mo's sincere advice and genuine smile, he became even more infuriated.

“Kill!” Invincible\_Loneliness from the Myth Guild took off his cape to expose the etched runes on his body and proceeded to clench his fist. As an



emerald lit up, he leaped toward Cha Na. Next, a ruby glowed as he concentrated all his strength into his fist and smashed onto the top of Cha Na's head, knocking him a few steps backward. The punch also left an imprint on the top of Cha Na's skull.

After spending a huge sum of money to acquire soul coins, Gu Yu had finally gathered all the materials required for class advancement. He became the first-ever Rune Master in the game and he had shown powerful skills.

In the meantime, a figure leapt onto the battlefield, capturing the attention of the Yin soldiers.

This person yielded Nine Spiritual Swords. A circle of Sword Qi revolved around him and a blade storm followed his presence, creating a space of vacuum.

Under Ao Jian's control, the Spiritual Swords demonstrated unparalleled power as they reaped through the bodies of the army like the scythe of a Grim Reaper.

Ao Jian was not aggrieved by what had happened, but he knew only one thing, that Jian Chou was his mentor and his mentor had always been loyal to the King of Beiqi!

Cha Na was so stunned by the entrance of Ao Jian and could not help exclaiming, "That's Jian Chou's swordmaster! I thought he was dead!?"

# Chapter 58 - Destiny Is Incredible!

Chapter 58: Destiny Is Incredible!

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

However, this was not the end of Cha Na's nightmare.

Numerous arrows began raining down on Cha Na's rear troops and immediately, there was a burst of dazzling lights that blew up a large batch of the Yin soldiers.

“Impossible! This is impossible! The strength of the Sun Chasing Archer... but he died long ago, how could this be?!”

The sudden appearance of these once-familiar skills launched Cha Na into a panic.

Memories of him and a few of his former comrades, who had been loyal subjects to the King of Beiqi, arose in his mind. Even with their great strength and capabilities, these comrades had been lost in battle.

“Argh! Comrades, advance forward, we shall not stop until we are dead!” Wu Guoyi roared.

“Yes!” the players roared in unison as they took a heavy step forward uniformly, shaking the earth as they did.

One look at the increasing morale of the army of players and Cha Na's army had lost its original indomitable force, and was forced to retreat.

However, the players were determined to kill every last soldier of Cha Na's army. Forming a thousand meter long front line facing the enemy, the army of players lead by ten Night Killers charged ahead to attack the enemy.

Furthermore, the Magic Division began summoning the Skeleton Army. In no time, a wave of Yin soldiers had appeared, making the players' battle array look even more epic.

“Gou Zi, heal our comrades!”

Gu Yu's furious order rang loudly through the MythGuild's live chat.

Subsequently, a small white dog jumped high into the air and unleashed an Inherited Skill, making green rain dew fall from the sky.

Under the droplets of rain dew, the injured players on the front line got on their feet once more. Lifting their weapons, they continued their onslaught of slaughter.

Tonight was bound to be a sleepless night for the Battle Online players.

After four hours of continuous fighting, the players had pushed back Cha Na's army to the border between the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli, yet there were still no signs of the battle ending.

Players who had died in the battle continued watching the battle through the live broadcast on the website and once their respawning cooldown time ended, they were quickly integrated into the battle again.

The strength and capabilities displayed by the players' camp in the past four hours of constant fighting had cut into Cha Na's Yin soldiers' fearlessness. They had never seen such endless and fanatical madness on the battlefield.

It was as though these beings were not afraid of death. Even on the verge of death, these players would try to plant a few stabs or sink their teeth into them with their last breath.

At this point in the battle, more than half of Cha Na's army had been killed or seriously wounded and even Cha Na himself held up a face as pale as a ghost. By suffering such a huge loss, he knew that he would no longer have a say in the Land of Beiqi.

Although Cha Na wanted to retreat, it was all too late now as the players did not have the slightest intent of letting any of them go. He was certain that even if his army were able to return to Liuli District, this bunch of wild players would just continue to pursue them.

He would never have imagined that the power he had accumulated for so many years would be buried at the hands of these players.

In desperation, Cha Na roared as he launched himself into the horde of players.

Yet, although Cha Na was powerful, the players were undaunted.

“Cha Na! Die!”

Everyone circled in on Cha Na, trying frenziedly to cause some damage to him no matter how insignificant it seemed. In less than half an hour, a terror-stricken Cha Na could no longer withstand the brunt of such frenzied attacks and had retreated back to his own army.

Presently, his body was wounded from countless cuts and stabs caused by the mob of angry players. As the old saying goes, even the bites of a colony of ants could kill an elephant. Despite his overwhelming strength, the extensive damage received was still unbearable to him.

Seeing Cha Na’s forced retreat, the excited players gave an earth-shattering yell.

Under these circumstances, Cha Na finally gave in and roared loudly.

“Retreat!”

Aware that Cha Na was going to order a retreat, the crowd of players surged forward.

“Cha Na, you dog, fuck you! You will die today!”

“Charge on! Avenge our dead brothers! Tonight, there is no turning back!”

“Brothers, have courage! Kill all of Cha Na’s scum!”

“Scum, don’t even think about leaving! Kill!”

The players’ blood pumped with adrenaline as they saw the fear apparent on the Yin soldiers. All of them charged toward their enemies, swinging their weapons in the air, not leaving any opportunity for Cha Na’s army to escape.

Within all of the guilds’ live chats, the commanders bellowed orders excitedly for troops to continue their attacks at the retreating army.

Soon, the battleground began shifting from the Mansion of the Dead to Liuli District as the players pursued the retreating army. At last, Cha Na’s army was finally cornered at the Underworld Sea with no place to run.

After eight hours of hard battle, the first light of dawn broke through the horizon. The battle had lasted the entire night and the players’ side had lost more than 400,000 lives, but with the ability to respawn, more than 200,000 lives remained. As for Cha Na’s forces, about 80,000 were killed or seriously injured while the remaining soldiers had already lost their spirit to fight knowing that they were trapped on the sandy beaches of Liuli District.

“Brothers! Victory is in sight. Let’s cut off Cha Na’s head to avenge our lost friends!” Wu Guoyi gave out the last command as he raised his sword at Cha Na.

“YesS!” the players roared in unison, moving steadily towards the remaining Yin soldiers.

Cha Na’s heart filled with regret as he stared at the hordes of players advancing in his direction.

If he had been given a second chance, he would not have provoked this bunch of lunatics. He had now lost all desire to continue this battle.

He had once thought that by killing part of this group of beings, he could frighten them into submission. How foolish.

“Kill!”

The battle resumed as the players launched their final attack.

One by one, the Yin soldiers faltered under the deafening shouts for death from the players' end. At this point, any resistance was futile and Cha Na lost all hope as the dead bodies of his Yin soldiers began piling up.

He took a glance at the ocean, then back at the impenetrable force of the players in front of him with hatred. A second later, he lept towards the sea.

“Don't even try to escape!”

Seeing that Cha Na was deserting his troops in escape, Gu Yu gave a yell as the runes on his body glimmered. He sprung into the air forcefully, concentrating all of his strength into his fist to land a blow on Cha Na.

“Whoever stops me shall die!”

Cha Na roared, and he too raised his fist to strike Gu Yu.

As their two fists collided, Gu Yu disappeared immediately in a trail of black smoke. However, Cha Na's body also froze in the air from the impact and started falling downward swiftly.

As it happened, a dozen figures surrounded him.

In an instant, ten Night Killers swung their bloodied blades at Cha Na. From the side, Ao Jian carried out a sword spirit infusion and directed nine Spiritual Swords that sped toward Cha Na.

“Fuck off!” Cha Na's fists lashed out masterfully, smashing into several Night Killers. However, Cha Na still sustained several attacks in addition to the nine Spiritual Swords having made a bloody cut across his body.

At this moment, the other players also swarmed in on him, ensuring that Cha Na was not able to escape.

Cha Na who had already used up most of his energy in the night-long battle could only weakly try to fend off the swarming players.

He wanted to attempt another escape, but as soon as he leapt up, nine bolts of Annihilation suddenly appeared to strike him back into the mob of players.

Instantly, all the players exhausted different methods to pin him down in their efforts to prevent him from running away.

Feeling the energy and strength that was draining away by the minute, Cha Na cried out in misery and anger. He then proceeded to heave himself up as he used his remaining strength to leap toward the ocean.

This was his only chance. If this escape was unsuccessful, then only death awaited him!

The players screamed in rage as they saw Cha Na leaping up. However, they were helpless as they had worn out all their means of attack.

At this moment, not far away, Ye Chen took a deep breath and steadily raised his Sun Scorching Bow.

As Sun Chasing energy was dispersed, an energy-charged arrow slowly formed on the bowstring. Taking aim at Cha Na's figure, Ye Chen gave a loud cry and released his hold on the bowstring.

The supercharged arrow, carrying the hopes and dreams of the players as well as Ye Chen, cut swiftly through the air and punctured Cha Na's body from behind.

Ye Chen's eyes gleamed as he watched the body of Cha Na fall into the sea, muttering to himself.

“Destiny is incredible!”

# Chapter 59 - Annals Of Great Battles

Chapter 59: Annals Of Great Battles

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

This time around, the falling Cha Na had truly fallen. The fighting throughout the night had completely consumed all of his energy, and he no longer had any lethal capabilities or skills to utilize. He had nothing but a broken and tired body.

Facing another onslaught from the players, with some of them climbing onto his body to stab and cut him, Cha Na's eyes flashed with indignance as he thrashed his arms about in attempts to fight off the players. However, with the constant frenzied attacks from the mob of players, the burning fire of life in him began to diminish slowly.

Eventually, his body fell to the ground, the soul flame within his body finally extinguished.

Immediately, the white light of collective leveling up flashed through the area.

“Roar!”

Looking at the sun rise up the horizon, all the players raised their weapons and cheered in unison!

The battle on Christmas came to a joyful stop with the death of Cha Na, and everyone felt extra jovial and satisfied.

In this peaceful world, only Battle Online could bring them the prime excitement of clashing blood and metal alongside the taste of humans' most primal survival instincts.



The players' blood pumped with lingering adrenaline as tens of thousands of players shouted in excitement, unable to repress their inner exhilaration. At the same time, a large number of players flocked to Ye Chen, raising him up in the air in celebration.

Ye Chen's shot had exceeded everyone's expectations.

It could even be said that most players had not been confident in his last shot. As far as Ye Chen's archery went, it was the butt of everyone's jokes in the gaming forum and was the subject of ridicule to everyone.

Yet this time, at such a critical moment, Ye Chen's performance had made all the players cheer for him.

Off the battleground, the players who saw this scene were slamming the table in excitement.

“Ye Chen, you're such a fucking genius! I really want to give you a kiss now, you've made us all proud!”

“You didn't screw this one up. I give a perfect score for this shot!”

“Smooth-sailing, Wu Guoyi! Ye Chen, this last shot was the best in the game!”

“That was awesome. This shot will be recorded in the game's history books! It was so epic!”

“Suddenly, I'm this punk's fan now. Fuck it. From now on, whoever dares to make fun of Ye Chen, don't blame my wand for being cruel!”

“It's a celebration for all of us, for the victory of our Beiqi army!”

“Everyone did a great job. The nine hours of hard work was worth it, we finally won the battle!”

“Cheers to our victory!”

“We are the strongest!”

.....

At this moment, all the players were giddy with excitement as they cheered and shouted by the beach to vent their hot-blooded spirit.

Lu Wu smiled as he saw this scene and acted to capture and save this scene of excitement with his artifact. Simultaneously, a sheepskin book appeared in front of all the players in the game, titled with the “Annals of Great Battles” written on its cover.

The pages turned slowly.

“December 25, 2318, Merry Christmas! After nine hours of fighting, the Beiqi Army finally forced Cha Na’s army to the coast of the Underworld Sea, killing the rebel Cha Na and winning an epic victory! This Christmas battle shall go down in the Annals of Great Battles!”

Below the text was a picture of all the players shouting excitedly while holding their weapons up in the air.

[Server Announcement, all players who participated in this Christmas battle win an Epic Title: Aeonian]

[Aeonian (Epic Title)]: Dedicated to the warriors who fought hard during the Christmas battle on December 25, 2318!

Attribute of Title: Two free additional trials of Instance Dungeon every day!

Looking at the picture captured after the battle, the players raised their weapons in excitement and cheered on once again.

They felt honoured and proud of this achievement. Not only had they been contributors to this epic battle, they had also been awarded with an epic level title, the highest glory that no one had ever achieved before!

Outside the server.

“Congratulations everyone, give yourself a pat on the back! An Epic Title! That’s so cool!”

“I’m so happy! Although I was killed, I’m really happy!”

“Thanks for this wonderful Christmas, you guys! I will remember this forever!”

“I could never have imagined that I would be able to participate in such a real battle. From being frightened to being determined, and then to being angry in fighting for a cause. Thanks to the comrades who fought side by side with me! Thank you all!”

“Our Beiqi Army is the strongest! Let’s go to war! Our glory will fill the pages of the Annals of Great Battles!”

“Moving forward into the future, Xue Li, member of the Beiqi Army is ready!”

“Moving forward into the future, Wu Guoyi, member of the Beiqi Army is ready!”

“Moving forward into the future, Gu Yu, member of the Beiqi Army is ready!”

“Moving forward into the future, Chen Ziyu, member of the Beiqi Army is ready!”

“Moving forward into the future, Ye Xue’er, member of the Beiqi Army is ready!”

.....

Everyone wrote their oaths to join future wars on the forum notice board as they firmly believed that the glory of the Beiqi Army would not stop here. In addition, they also wanted to challenge themselves with a new battle and a new phase of reigning in the coming year of 2319!

.....

Subsequently, the players walked toward the direction of the Mansion of the Dead as they laughed merrily. At the front of their troop, Cha Na’s military

flag had been torn off the flagpole and replaced with his decapitated head. It had been brought back as a souvenir and was afterwards hung onto the outer high wall of the Mansion of the Dead.

Many players then began taking photos with Cha Na's decapitated head that hung outside the high wall. Each of the photos were uploaded onto the forum to show off the results of their hard work.

Today was a celebratory day for the players. Thus, it formed a rare sight where all the players were hanging out and having a celebratory meal at the Mansion of the Dead instead of rushing off to complete a quest, to level up or to look for treasure.

All the players took out their fine wines, spirits, and food from their inventory to share with each other.

After the celebration, the players instinctively gathered outside the Mansion of the Dead to erect a monument to commemorate Lu Mo and the dead. It was to this monument that all the players gave a deep bow to as a sign of respect to their sacrificed heroes.

Lu Wu felt that the death of Lu Mo and the others was a great pity as well, but it had been their exact sacrifice that had motivated the players' passionate fighting spirit.

Although he would be able to recast the souls of Lu Mo and the others, it was pointless as they had already passed on. They would have no recollection of these players and the memories they had shared together. They would just become brand new NPCs and would no longer be the person that the gamers used to know.

After a moment's consideration, Lu Wu gave up the idea of reviving Lu Mo and the others. However, he would recast their soul and send them back into the game with a different identity.

Just like the erected tombstones, there could only be one of each player in these players' hearts. So it was for the best to let them stay in the hearts of these players and became part of the history they remembered!

# Chapter 60 - New Expansion Pack (Ferocious Waves)

Chapter 60: New Expansion Pack (Ferocious Waves)

**Translator:** Larbre Studio **Editor:** Larbre Studio

When the Christmas battle had ended, the exhausted players that had fought strenuously for a whole night eventually started to log out of the game.

It was at this point in time that the official website for Battle Online released an update notice.

[Maintenance and Update Notice, addition of new expansion pack 'Ferocious Waves']:

During the Christmas battle, the Beiqi Army fought hard and obtained possession of Liuli District after an arduous fight. However, within the North Rocks lies a much more terrifying and formidable enemy awaiting the challenge of players. In the mysterious region of the Underworld Sea, countless treasures and ancient ruins await your exploration and domination.

With the Rock Ghost King in the North and the Underworld Sea in the East, new challenges have once again arrived. The clarion call for war has sounded again. So let's put on our battle gear and set sail for the ferocious waves.

[Content Update]:

Special items added in shop: Specter Warship, Specter Ship

[Specter Warship (Guild-Specialized)]: A naval battle weapon specially made for large-sized guilds and has the ability to convert ingested spiritual

materials into energy. Players are able to choose their own cultivation method.

#### Specter Warship Main Cultivation Branches:

**Phantom form:** Speed is the main evolutionary direction. Should the owner choose this mode of evolution, the Specter Warship will turn all converted energy of spiritual materials into an increase of the ship's navigation speed and efficiency. Special navigation abilities may be uncovered in later evolutionary stages.

**Armor form:** Hull hardness is the main evolutionary direction. Should the owner choose this mode of evolution, the Specter Warship will turn all converted energy of spiritual materials into an increase of the ship's hull hardness. In later stages, special impact skills such as Wrath of the Dragon Horn and Armor may be evolved.

**Calamity form (special):** With this state as the cultivation mode, the Specter Warship will acquire the dual evolutionary direction of the Phantom and Armor forms. At the same time, there is a probability of acquiring a primary consciousness that is capable of mastering Oceanic Power in the process.

**Note:** Please be careful in choosing the Calamity form. In this state, the spiritual materials required for consumption for the evolution of Specter Warship will be multiplied.

Price: 3000 soul coins

**[Specter Ship]:** Build your very own Specter Ship with more than a hundred types of cultivation methods waiting for players to explore in their sail toward the ocean!

Price: 200 soul coins

#### Details on Marine Treasure

**Son of the Sea (Fruit):** A mysterious fruit blessed by the sea and a priceless Epic Level treasure. After ingestion, players obtain the blessing of the

Underworld Sea God and gain a Gifted Level ability by chance.

Qinglin Wood: One of the best spiritual materials for the evolution of Specter Warships and Specter Ships, it provides the opportunity to perceive special abilities.

Spiritual Sea Fish: In the Underworld Sea, there are millions of Spiritual Fish. By ingesting a Spiritual Fish, players acquire relevant attributes of the eaten fish.

Fish Classification Levels: Fish Level (useless, normal), Spiritual Level, Sea Spirit Level, Spirit Channeling Level, Sky Spirit Level, and Ocean Spirit Level.

(Note: Ingestion of a Spiritual Fish above the Sea Spirit Level offers opportunity for special abilities!)

Marine Ruins

At sea, there are numerous islands and inheritances left behind by powerful sea clans. For details, please feel free to explore the area yourself.

Maritime Disasters

The mysterious Underworld Sea is filled with numerous undercurrents and natural disasters. Please pay attention to your safety when exploring.

Addition of new NPCs such as Weapon Forgers, Skill Instructors, and Sea Navigators

[Maintenance time for this update: 12 hours, apologies for the inconvenience caused]

Seeing this notice, the players on the forum went into a buzz.

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Haha! I, Xueli, am finally going to be a pirate king!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “The naval headquarters have been established, the pirate king from above please surrender yourself!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “Isn’t the Son of the Sea fruit the Devil’s fruit? Damn, I was trembling with excitement and could already imagine a magnificent sea war happening, but when I saw that the cheapest Specter Ship requires 200 soul coins, I could only shrink into the corner and sob uncontrollably. The word ‘fuck’ isn’t enough to explain my emotions!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “The Calamity Ship looks good (funny face). Also, I’m accepting soul coins indefinitely. Don’t assume that I don’t have enough money, I’m just afraid that you don’t have enough soul coins. Players with soul coins please join this group (318815704)”

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “So sad, I’m really short on soul coins. Why hasn’t this bastard game opened up the top-up channel?! And who is the bastard boss of this game, did he actually give the research and development team salary?! (Angry)”

Little\_Tiger: “Looking for a sugar mommy, one that buys me soul coins!”

Chief\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “There are so many treasures in the Underworld Sea. I have a hunch that I will soon acquire a hidden character class inheritance.”

Cultivating\_Longevity (Qi Ming): “Wow, this world is getting more and more wonderful. Let’s not talk about it, I’m going to ask my grandson for money to get FortifiedByUsingCash!”

Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome replied to Cultivating\_Longevity: “Grandson? How old are you?”

Cultivating\_Longevity replied to Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: “Hehe, I’m over 120 years old.”

Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome replied to Cultivating\_Longevity: “Haha (Middle Finger)!”



Director\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “Interesting, seems like we have another goal. No matter ocean or land, we Demolition Officers will be the first!”

harder\_said\_than\_done: “Naval Battle? In reality, I’m a chief mate, looks like it’s time to fight! (Surprise.jpg)”

Prandtl: “As an explorer, I’m ready to sail! Other than that, I want to collect soul coins to build my own ship and start my own great adventure on the sea ~Happy~”

After the release of the new expansion pack Ferocious Waves, the response from the players was very strong in addition to being curious about the Underworld Sea region. Suffice it to say, the price of soul coins fluctuated again soon after the release of the expansion pack.

All of the major guilds wanted to build a guild-level Specter Warship one step ahead of the others. Thus, under mass acquisition and demand, the price of soul coins began to rise to the point where it was practically priceless.

This was also because the players were full of curiosity and had a deep desire to explore the sea. They also wanted to build their own Specter Ships and were therefore unwilling to sell their soul coins.

This then further led to many complaints on the forum as a few hundreds of thousands of players pinned a thread of comments titled “Rubbish game, top-up channel still not open, we strongly protest!” at the top of the main page of the forum. Their purpose was very much obvious, which was to force Lu Wu to quickly open up a top-up channel.

However, Lu Wu merely glanced at it as he continued to peel an apple calmly. Then, he put it near Bei Li’s mouth and watched her eat it bite by bite.

Top-up? What top-up? Such a thing does not exist!

Authorized user, please understand!

# Chapter 61 - Warship Moira

Chapter 61: Warship Moira

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The opening of the new expansion pack had made all the players feel excited again. Hence, shortly after the maintenance period, a large number of players poured into the game.

Upon entering the game, the players' vision moved to the new CG trailer associated with the expansion pack.

The sight of the words 'Ferocious Waves' appeared to them in dark blue characters. Thereafter, the scene switched from Liuli District to the Mansion of the Dead to the sky above the Underworld Sea.

The graphics kept on changing, showing seabirds singing in the sky as fish leapt out of the water from time to time, creating splashing waves of white amongst the blue. Everything seemed extremely pleasant and peaceful.

At this time, the words 'Void Ocean' emerged, followed by a huge black warship that broke through the words to land heavily on the surface of the sea sea, setting off a huge wave as it did so.

As the warship appeared, the sky flashed and thundered while the wind picked up to form a hurricane. Countless sea monsters emerged from the sea, roaring in the direction of the warship as they swarmed toward it.

Surrounded by the sea monsters, the warship looked like it was about to be torn into pieces at any time.

“Roar!”

At that moment, a loud roar resounded from within the warship, overpowering the roars of the sea monsters. With that, a huge phantom of

an eight-clawed monster appeared above the warship.

“Moira! It’s all up to you now!” at the foredeck, a man clad in black robes waved and pointed at the densely packed monsters at sea.

The huge monster called Moira turned and looked at the black-robed man, then its twinkling scarlet eyes blinked as if to answer the man. Subsequently, it broke away from the ship to pounce toward the sea monsters.

The moment Moira came in contact with the sea, a huge vortex suddenly appeared on the sea’s surface. Almost immediately, the surrounding sea monsters were pulled into it and torn into pieces.

After tearing apart all the sea monsters, Moira waved its eight claws as it let out a loud roar to the sky before floating back onto the warship in phantom form and slowly fading away.

At this moment, the black-robed man came to the edge of the boat and leaned against the railing. He looked at the sea that had been dyed red from blood and smiled.

“Moira! Time to eat!”

As soon as he finished his sentence, the scarlet color in the sea visibly faded whereas the hull of the ship began to shine with a dark red light. Vaguely, a slowly wriggling on the surface of the hull could be seen, as if this was not a warship at all, but a living monster.

Thereafter, the graphics slowly dimmed while a row of introductory data emerged.

[Moira Level 13 (Calamity Specter Warship)]: Top-level Warship Moira bred through ingestion of a large number of sea creatures’ blood and spiritual materials!

Attribute Introduction: Hull Hardness Level 14; Navigation Speed Level 12 (A total of 24 levels from low to high)

Abilities Introduction: Wrath of Moira; Armored Impact; Sea Spirit's Blessing; Bloodlust (Special Passive Skill)

[Wrath of Moira]: Summons the spirit of Warship Moira for 30 minutes. The cooldown period is one day.

[Armored Impact]: Speed is increased by 100% in one minute while hull hardness is increased by two levels. The cooldown period is six hours.

[Sea Spirit's Blessing]: With the blessing of the sea, navigation speed is increased by 30% for three hours. The cooldown period is one day.

[Bloodlust (special passive skill)]: Under the cultivation of the captain, Moira obtains a new evolutionary direction. Besides being able to evolve through ingestion of spiritual materials, it also acquires the special ability to ingest the blood of sea creatures for evolution.

Overall Evaluation: A Disaster Level Warship with Bloodlust as its evolutionary direction.

As the data slowly disappeared, a line of words emerged again at the end of the graphics.

[Would you like to own such a warship, named and cultivated by yourself? Then, the sea is your ideal choice!]

Upon watching this CG trailer, the players burst into rapid discussion on the forum once again as lines of comments flew through the CG continuously.

“How should I cultivate to get a warship like Moira? I really want it!”

“Damn, different cultivation methods induce different abilities! How challenging! What should we do if we cultivate a weak warship?”

“In reply to the one above, only the weak will cultivate a weak warship. My warship will definitely be the strongest! Roar~”

“I'm selling myself for a sugar mommy, I want to cultivate a ship.”

“I have decided on a name for my ship, I will call it the Golden Meryl!”

“Can the one upstairs shut up? That’s my boat! Put it down! No one is allowed to take this name before I collect enough soul coins to build the Golden Meryl. This wand will only give warning once!”

“All I want is Moira, already in tears!”

“Slams the table, do you all even have enough soul coins? What are you arguing about without soul coins? Even though I too want Moira! Cry!”

“I want to cultivate a warship with an invincible defense. The name is already decided, it shall be called Invincible. I’m already in a fantasy and I can’t extricate myself. My heart is full of anticipation!”

“Looking at the surging waves on the CG, I wanted to recite poems for everyone, but I am uncultured, so I can only say, damn the waves are so big!”

“Good poem up there, I’ll give you a thumbs up”

“Oh sea, you are all water!”

“Shut up, the one upstairs! You’re even more uncultured.”

“I feel as though the price of materials is going to increase. Players should go to the auction house quickly to buy spiritual materials. The price is definitely going to skyrocket!”

“It’s time to hoard lots of materials and make a fortune. We just need to wait for the filthy rich to buy at a high price.”

“Fuck, why did you guys say that out loud, don’t you know how to keep quiet when making a fortune? (Angry)”

“We’re still short of three people to make up a ten person group. Come on, anyone with soul coins and a good character. Each of us will pay 20 soul coins. Let’s set sail first! As for the name of the ship, we can discuss it! In

addition to that, our captain is a beauty~ The ownership of the ship also has to be given to the captain.”

After seeing the contents of the CG, the players began having a heated discussion on the cultivation methods and the names to be given to their respective Specter Ships.

The opening of the new expansion pack could only be considered as a brand new experience for the players, making them look forward to the follow-up of the game.

.....

The death of Cha Na’s army during the Christmas battle had made Lu Wu a fortune of soul coins.

In collecting enough soul coins, the material storage room and the equipment depot of the Mansion of the Dead had been built during the maintenance period.

As for the Specter Ship that was seen by the players, it was originally a blueprint from the weaponry room that had been researched and digitized by the omnipotent Bei Li.

It was seemingly Lu Wu’s intention to open the main quest from both sides at the same time.

After all, besides the Rock Ghost King, the Sea King was also an overlord that was a big headache for Lu Wu.

With the threat of the Sea King, the players were not safe in Liuli District, so Lu Wu simply allowed the players to start the ocean development route in advance. When the players became stronger, then there would naturally be no reason to fear the Sea King.

At the same time, Lu Wu also set up a portal between the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District so that it would be more convenient for the players to go back and forth.

In the shop, there were also many new things besides the most important specter ship.

Such as fishing tackle, bait, and so on.

The emergence of such things excited some players in the game because they had learned from the expansion pack on the official website that the Spiritual Fish of the Underworld Sea were all gems.

It was also because of the emergence of these new items that there was a new category of life players who would make a living with this in the game.

# Chapter 62 - The Fisherman Laboring For Money On Livestream

Chapter 62: The Fisherman Laboring For Money On Livestream

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

After logging on to the game, all the players walked out of the Mansion of the Dead in surges as they headed toward the Underworld Sea region.

This could only be attributed to the anticipation created inside the players' hearts from the update notice and expansion pack that described and illustrated the Underworld Sea region.

Meanwhile, on the official website's livestream platform, the number of viewers on one of the livestream channels was growing rapidly, catching the attention and curiosity of Lu Wu.

“Build your personal raft, become a fisherman, labor for soul coins to buy a ship!”

On the channel, two players relying on the resources from the beach were making a tutorial on how to build a raft, teaching players in extreme detail the method to do so. Since most players could not afford to buy Specter Ships, a lot of them were actually learning and observing very earnestly.

By chopping down trees to form suitably sized wooden columns and using vines to replace rope in tying the wood together, these two players had built a simple raft within the span of three hours.

Looking at their finished product, the two players smiled.



“Everyone, now that the first step of laboring for money in order to buy a Specter Ship is done, let’s head out to sea!”

Thereafter, these two players spent 10 soul coins on buying fishing equipment and bait before pushing their raft off to the Underworld Sea, using wooden oars to paddle them toward the high seas.

From the comments:

“It looks so crude... why do I get the feeling that this raft will probably fall apart with a single wave?”

“My two brothers, I hope your fishing endeavor end up favorably, and that you end up earning enough soul coins to buy a Specter Ship. Let’s work for it together!”

“Hope you get a good harvest! If you guys fish up a Spiritual Fish, I’ll buy it!”

“To be honest, rather than use this kind of raft, wouldn’t it be easier to just go diving. I mean, you wouldn’t even need fishing equipment like that, it saves money (funny)”

“What do you do if you meet a monster at sea? (frightened)”

“I have a deep fear of the sea and there’s actually monsters in this one, I will not set sail unless it’s in a ship! Over my dead body!”

With the well-wishes of the other players, the two players paddled their way out to sea.

An hour or so later, land had already faded away from sight and was hardly visible. The two players then stopped paddling and took out their equipment to begin fishing.

As time passed, the creel on the players’ raft began filling up with fish. Yet, although these two players were very experienced at fishing at sea, they seemed to not have the luck to match it. They had spent around two hours fishing, but they had not caught a single Spiritual Fish.

At this moment, the fishing rod began shaking again, and the player, Ba Mu's face lit up with eagerness, his hand slowly reeling in the line.

However, this time, he did not reel it in as smoothly as he did the past few times. It seemed as though the fish that had been hooked was especially vicious and was violently struggling to get away with surprisingly enormous strength.

The situation made many watching players realize that this was probably the moment they had been waiting for.

At the same time, Ba Mu's face was also shining with glee, but his glee soon turned to anxiety as he realized that this fish was just too strong and no matter how hard he was tugging and pulling, he could not reel in the fish. At this point, the raft had also begun to move further toward the ocean with increasing speed because of the force exerted by the fish.

"Bro, help me out here, we've got a big one!" faced with such a tough struggle, Ba Mu could hardly hold on any longer and was quick to seek help from his companion.

Subsequently, the both of them began pulling together, holding on to the fishing rod stubbornly as they leaned backwards, locked in a battle of strength with the fish.

From the comments:

"Wow, a live version of the old man and the sea."

"You've definitely caught a shark this time!!!"

"If you all continue moving like this, I'm afraid you won't be able to find your way back, brother!"

"Hang in there, work for that Specter Ship! Imagine the wondrous future, just hang in there!"

"Maybe it's a small-sized sea monster (funny)"

“I bet it’s a Spiritual Fish!”

It was quite obvious that Ba Mu and his little companion were just no match for the creature at the bottom of the sea. At this point in time, their faces were already red from their efforts and their hands that were holding the fishing rod were also trembling.

Hence, Ba Mu grit his teeth and simply spent two soul coins at the shop to buy two bottles of endurance tonic in recognition of the situation they were in. Taking turns to gulp down the tonic, they then continued their battle of strength.

Both of them felt somewhat better after taking the tonic, but the battle of strength had no end in sight and they were now floating further and further away from land. In fact, they could no longer see any land at all. All they had now were directions on the map and even so, they were still very confused as to where they currently were.

This battle of strength lasted a full five hours. Most of the watching players who went off for a meal had come back only to see that these two people were still trying to reel in the fish.

Just as the two players were on the edge of giving up, the force pulling on the fishing rod was suddenly released, making them almost fall backward into the sea.

While the two players blustered in confusion as to what had just happened, a large red fish broke through the ocean’s surface and leapt up, splashing waves that glittered colorfully under the sunlight before diving back in.

The two of them hurried to pull on the fishing rod again as both their faces lit up in joy.

This was because in the instant that the fish had leapt out of the water, they had seen the attributes of this fish.

[Hawthorn Fish (Sea Spirit level)]: Sea Spirit level fish with gentle qualities, earns 10 to 30 additional points of related attributes after

ingestion, also provides a small probability of oceanic capability comprehension

(Note: option to sell to shop for 200 soul coins)

In the comments:

“Damn, you’ve struck gold, you’ve hit the jackpot!”

“Well I’ll be damned, you guys actually reeled in a Sea Spirit level fish. Thankfully, it’s gentle, otherwise you guys wouldn’t have been able to defeat it! (funny)”

“What’s that note underneath the attribute section? Option to sell to shop? I fucking regret selling my Netherworld Pearl to the shop, I mean, the selling price for it on the market now is 150 soul coins!!!”

“I agree, I didn’t know it before but selling to the shop is a great loss.”

“I’ll buy this fish for 250! Sell it to me! Sell it to me!”

“I’ll have it for 300!”

“Sell it to our Myth Guild, our chairman has soul coins, but we can buy it with cash. You name the price.”

The comment area suddenly burst with discussion at the sight of a Sea Spirit level Spiritual Fish and there were already offers for purchase and negotiation. Seeing this, Ba Mu and his companion were once again filled with determination to reel in this Hawthorn Fish.

Although it was of a gentle nature, the Sea Spirit level Hawthorn Fish was extremely strong and it was still very hard for the two of them to handle it.

Yet as time began to pass, the Hawthorn Fish’s energy started depleting and the raft that was being pulled on slowed down as the resistance to the fishing rod reduced as well. Noting the change, hope was reignited within the both of them and they hastened to pull on the fishing rod, wanting to bring the Hawthorn Fish onboard the raft.

Just as they expected, there were only a few bursts of resistance when they reeled it in as the Hawthorn Fish had already expended all its energy struggling to swim away.

With victory so close in sight, Ba Mu and his companion both smiled.

However, exactly as the Hawthorn Fish was about to be pulled out the water, a dark shadow of something about a thousand meters wide appeared beneath the raft.

As this gigantic shadow floated upward rapidly on the livestream, all of the watching players held their breaths.

When the Hawthorn Fish finally broke the water's surface, large jaws appeared from the depths of the water to swallow both the raft and the Hawthorn Fish whole.

Immediately, the two players grappled around unsteadily, but as a wholly dominant energy surrounded them, their bodies were instantaneously ripped apart.

# Chapter 63 - A Misfortune Might Be A Blessing In Disguise

Chapter 63: A Misfortune Might Be A Blessing In Disguise

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Now, the players, who were watching the live stream, could finally see the true face of the creature.

Its head, that was exposed above the water, was over a kilometer wide. Similar to a tiger's head, there was a red king-like character blazing on the center of its head. Light gleamed on the brown-colored scales on part of its body that was seen above the water.

The players could feel its overbearing aura even through the live stream.

As the giant beast dove into the water, a message popped up.

[Taowu (Overlord of the Void Ocean): The supreme king of the ocean who has ruled the Void Ocean for tens of thousands of years. Its ability has reached the level of an Ocean Spirit!]

Specific information: ? (Unidentifiable!)

In the comment section:

“Wow~ They caught an Ocean Spirit of the highest level...”

“Damn, it's so huge! This creature is gigantic. I reckon a creature as big as this can swallow a dozen Cha Nas in one gulp!”

“I'm terrified!”

“Well, I’ll be damned! What kind of creature is this? It’s at least 10,000 meters long! This is so horrifying!”

“Damn. I once secretly wished to get lucky and catch a Spiritual Fish of the Ocean Spirit level, thinking that I’d make a fortune from it. But, can I fucking catch this? I’m speechless.”

“You can certainly catch it. Why not? Didn’t you see how our two little friends successfully caught it? Although they did pay a huge price for it (this is hilarious).”

“So this is the level of an Ocean Spirit... I’m so scared!”

“I’m dumbstruck. If this Ocean Spirit was caught, I reckon that even a warship like Moira would be defeated immediately!”

“The brothers were abundantly lucky. They met the most powerful one in the Void Ocean the first time they sailed. It’s such a waste that the Hawthorn Fish is gone. They are now finished alongside the boat!”

“Damn. Can you not compare a vicious beast of this level with Cha Na? It’s too ferocious!”

“Oh my god. For a second, I thought that I was watching a disaster film about a giant beast... no one could beat the luck of these two men. It was a Spiritual Sea Fish. Then, it upgraded to the supreme Ocean Spirit. That’s so scary!”

“Ding~ Congratulations to the two brothers. You have successfully become the fisher of the Ocean Spirit. Congratulations!”

“This is the Overlord of the Void Ocean? The Sea King’s boss? Wow. It’s so difficult to conquer the water!”

“I accept the challenge. My Naraka Warship has already aimed its main cannon at it!”

“It’s just an Ocean Spirit. Believe it or not? I can fight a round with him!”

“I believe that you’ll be eaten within one round? (hilarious)”

“I think that the Hawthorn Fish probably attracted Taowu’s attention. Perhaps, it was too hungry and conveniently swallowed the brothers, too. They were really lucky.”

All the players, who were watching the live stream, were startled when the live streaming channel blacked out.

The size of the Taowu was sufficient to distress a person immensely, not to mention that it had not shown its ability yet. All the players felt that they were no match for this powerful overlord of the ocean.

However, challenges were supposed to act as motivations. After a heated debate, the players vowed to take down the strong rival and share the Spiritual Meat of the Ocean Spirit with one another.

Even Lu Wu and Bei Li were extremely shocked by Taowu’s advent.

One could only explain this as a coincidence when the overlord, who spent most of its days resting at the bottom of the Void Ocean, would unexpectedly appear at the surface of the sea to hunt for fish. It even ate the two fishermen who really had terrific luck.

Before long, a message was published in the forum. The audience quickly crowded around.

“What happened? Where is my Spiritual Sea Fish? I am confused!”

Comments:

Watermelon\_Taro: “I’m taking up the front row! By the way, congratulations on catching an Ocean Spirit!”

Ba Mu replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “I’m asking about the Spiritual Sea Fish. Don’t talk nonsense!”

Watermelon\_Taro replied to Ba Mu: “I saved the video of your live stream. You should have a look! (hilarious) — Video Attachment”



Strike\_Gold: “Whoops! Congratulations, brother! You’ve successfully shown us Taowu’s charm! He’s so charming!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Bro, do you want to take revenge? (hilarious)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Is that the original poster? Hugs~ The Hawthorn Fish is currently in Taowu’s stomach.”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Many of my guild members told me to watch your live stream just now. They said there were great deals, asking me to purchase them. But, I was speechless the moment I entered the live streaming channel and saw the scene!”

Cultivating\_Longevity: “Taowu? The vicious beast is so scary. I predict that it is not far from becoming a god.”

Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: “Can I kill it with a single arrow?”

A\_Mammoth replied to Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: “Of course! Brother Ye Chen is always the strongest man!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest replied to Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: “Of course you can! Our big brother, Ye Chen, is a headwind artifact. One Taowu is nothing. For him, two Taowus are only worth one arrow!”

Assassin\_Creed replied to Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: “Brother Ye’s arrows are unstoppable. Be it Taowu or the Ocean Spirit, he can kill them with a single arrow. He can even puncture the heaven vault and bring down the sun to make it into a ball!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: “Brother Ye, you’ve been rather confident lately (hilarious). Also, @everyone: Promise me, let’s not be an obsequious dog, okay? (hilarious)”

Crayon\_Shinchan @everyone: “But first, let me pat the dogs who have just commented (hilarious)”

Ba Mu: “I’ve finished watching the video. What the hell! Taowu was too harsh. Give me back the Hawthorn Fish! (grief)”

After watching the synopsis of the video, many players, who missed the live stream, were stunned, too. The players started to discuss enthusiastically about Taowu's strength in the forum.

However, the players' astonishment did not die down. Three hours later, Ba Mu respawned at the Mansion of the Dead and logged into the game again. Following that, he created another post in the forum.

The post immediately caused a tumult within the forum and attracted the attention of all the players.

“Hmm, when I was swallowed, I might have grabbed something by accident. It seems to be something amazeballs. Let's take a look at this! This is its first appearance. We should evaluate it and guess its price!”

A picture was attached to the post. A light blue spine, which was about the length of an arm, appeared before the players' eyes, coupled with a screenshot of its attributes.

[Demonic Dragon Skeleton (fragment): The skeleton of a Demonic Dragon, a vicious beast from the ocean of a Sky Spirit level. It can be used to make Purple Weaponry and Armor.]

(It can be sold in the shop in exchange for 800 soul coins!)

# Chapter 64 - : The New Year'S Event

Chapter 64: The New Year's Event

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The players were envious of Ba Mu to be able to obtain such a treasure from the ocean even after his death.

As a result, the players became more avid to explore the Void Ocean.

There was even a phrase going around the forum:

“Do you want treasure? Then, set sail!”

Within a few days' time, there were a hundred warships from the guilds, while the number of the minor Specter Ships had reached tens of thousands. The navy of the Beiqi Army had gradually taken its form.

On this day, Battle Online posted another notice on its official website, attracting the attention of all the players.

[Notice of the New Year's Countdown Event]:

Thanks for the players' constant support to our game. In conjunction with the celebration of a new year, we will launch a special event. Players with outstanding performances throughout the event will earn special rewards.

Throughout the three days of the event, all players will earn 10% extra from defeating monsters. The event consists of three activities...

First activity: New Year's Countdown Fishing Competition (Day One)

This event will begin on the night of New Year's Eve. Players can look for the Sea Navigator on the coast of Liuli District to register for the event beforehand. After the event has officially started, players will earn points for every fish they catch, while the score is dependent on the type of fish that is captured.

The first 1,000 players will win a Level 20 Red Weapon or armor (based on player's choice) of the player's respective character class. The top 100 players will be rewarded with 200 soul coins, while the top 10 players, 300 soul coins. The top three players will gain 500 soul coins. Last but not least, the winner will be rewarded with 1,000 soul coins and crowned with the event title, the New Year's Star.

The corresponding points for different fish types during the event:

Normal fish (1 point)

Fish of Spiritual Level (50 points)

Fish of Sea Spirit Level (500 points)

Fish of Spirit Channeling Level (4000 points)

Fish of Sky Spirit Level (80000 points)

Fish of Ocean Spirit Level fish (Immediate advancement to the Championship!)

Fish of special types (1000 – 80000 points)

The players were thrilled to learn about this event. Looking at the corresponding points for different fish types, the players could no longer stay cool.

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "I'm clenching my fists. Developers, please come here and take this fishing rod. Show me how to catch Taowu of the Ocean Spirit level with this!"

Crayon\_Shinchan: “(covering my face) That’s a little too much! You’re even thinking about the Ocean Spirit already. If someone catches it, I’ll eat shit on a live stream!”

Strike\_Gold: “For players like us, the Sea Spirit Level is already our limit. Even if we work as a team, the most we can handle is a fish of Spirit Channeling Level. But, are we supposed to sacrifice our life to catch this Ocean Spirit? (covering my face)”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Hehe~ That’s interesting. On the day of the event, I’ll go fishing in the deep sea with my Black Pearl Warship~”

Watermelon\_Taro replied to Invincible\_Loneliness: “Boss, bring me along. I have neither a ship nor a warship. I’m afraid that I will never be able to catch anything by the shore!”

Cultivating\_Longevity: “I haven’t gone fishing for at least sixty years. Hehe, how I miss it~”

Soda\_Water: “You’re all finished. I’m going to bring out my grandfather, the fishing addict. He is a strong competitor!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Soda\_Water: “What? Even your grandfather’s joining, too? That’s so cool!”

Soda\_Water replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Not only my grandfather, my parents love fishing as well. Our whole family shall fish together! (cool)”

Second activity: New Year’s Treasure Hunt (Day Two)

Throughout the event, the New Year Certificate will auto-refresh every ten minutes at the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District. All players can search for this certificate in these two areas during the event period. Players can redeem the rewards from the NPC Festive Messenger, with the certificate.

List of rewards:

1 New Year Certificate: Ten bottles of Revive Potion

5 New Year Certificates: One random Level 30 Blue Weapon

20 New Year Certificates: One random Level 30 Red Weapon

50 New Year Certificates: One Level 50 Skill Book of corresponding character class

100 New Year Certificates: Event title, the New Year's Star

New Year's Star (Blue title): The movement speed of the player, who wears this title, will increase by 10%

300 New Year Certificates: Inheritance of Character Class (Ghost Monster)

Upon reading the summary of the second activity, the forum was once again full of discussions.

Strike\_Gold: "I'd like to know if the New Year Certificates can be traded. This is a very important question."

Invincible\_Loneliness: "If it can be traded, then on the day they release the New Year Certificates, I will be standing right next to the ambassador and buy them all in cash~"

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Horrible. Wealthy players are so presumptuous. Wait till I gather all 300 certificates to redeem the inheritance."

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "I don't think it can be traded. It's time to depend solely on our luck. I, Xueli, am not asking for much. I only want the title of the New Year's Star. Next time, I shall be called as Xueli\_The\_Fleet\_Footed!"

Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: "Will this be predestined as well?"

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Ye\_Chen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: "Please don't be predestined anymore. It's terrifying. You'll give us a very bad gaming experience!"

Ye\_Xueer\_is\_the\_cutest: “I’ve achieved class advancement to be the Cursed Apostle. So I’ll just take the event title...”

Third activity: Sales at the shop (Day Three)

On the third day of the New Year’s event, there’ll be a 10% discount on all items in the shop. This event will last for an hour. Players are encouraged to make the most of the time to make their purchases.

The three activities were specially customized by Lu Wu for the players to celebrate the advent of a new year.

It was apparent that Lu Wu introduced the third activity to compensate the expenses.

The first two activities cost him greatly. On the third day, with a 10% discount, he expected a great number of players to hurry to purchase items. By then, he would be able to earn back the outlay.

After all, wool comes from the sheep’s back!

As someone who held the highest authority, Lu Wu certainly understood the theory.

The introduction of the event hyped the players up. They were all enthusiastically planning out a strategy to rule the event. The forum, once again, went into a fever.

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “10% discount! Hehe. I can finally build my cute little ship~”

Strike\_Gold: “I’m anticipating the event~ Brothers of the Great Dragon Guild, let’s all give our utmost effort during the event and get the first place!”

I\_Am\_Berserker: “The event sounds so interesting. But, where is our long-awaited top-up system? Who deleted the petition post? Come forward. Let’s see if I can twist your head off.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Oh yes! Now that I’m reminded, the top-up passage hasn’t been introduced. Are they planning to terminate this game? Is the boss trying to generate electricity with love? Is he going to pay us with love?”

A\_Mammoth: “Brothers, let’s create another post. We must tell them justly. We! Request! For! A! Top-up! System!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Agreed! How are we supposed to gain strength without the top-up system? It’s not right to do this for this game. You’re spoiling the market. What would the predecessors of the top-up passage think?”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Invincible\_Loneliness: “The predecessors would probably climb out from their tombs and thrash the boss of Battle Online. Explain to him what it means that we can only become stronger with the top-ups (hilarious)”

Lu Wu put on an indifferent smile as he read the comments. Then, he nonchalantly deleted the new post that was being upvoted uncontrollably!



# Chapter 65 - Wood Spirit Clan

Chapter 65: Wood Spirit Clan

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

In the North Rocks area, within the depths of a dense forest, an ancient large tree twisted its body slowly, its branches swaying like snakes.

“Cha Na is dead? A new power within the Mansion of the Dead? Is this information reliable?” the ancient tree split open as a deep and solemn voice sounded from within.

“Lord Rock, I’ve already investigated. The information is true, and Liuli District has already been occupied by these new forces!” replied the steel zombie commander below.

“I’d already thought of him ending up destroyed in our initial discussion about the division of territory where we chose to hand Liuli District over to him, but I didn’t think that he would have been defeated by a foreign force. I thought the Sea King would have been the one to end him instead. What a good-for-nothing!”

As the Rock Ghost King spoke, his body shook and the ground followed suit immediately as it began to tremble, making the soil below him fly up in different directions while his enormous body rose from the ground.

“Lord Rock, should we launch a war against the Mansion of the Dead? These foreigners of unknown origins are a tremendous threat!” asked the steel zombie commander instinctively.

“No. As you’ve said, this force is from an unknown origin. It’s best if we don’t brew conflict rashly so as to not let other forces reap the benefits of our fight.”

“Then... then what if they attack us?”

Upon hearing this, the Rock Ghost King burst into laughter, his immense laughter shaking the surrounding trees. He cast his gaze on the steel zombie commander.

“I am not Cha Na. Besides, aside from those old corpses buried under the ground, who else has the confidence to fight my army of Tree Demons within my territory in the Land of Beiqi?!”

The Rock Ghost King seemed to have thought of something, and he looked at the steel zombie commander again.

“By the way, what is the situation of the Wood Spirit Clan?”

The steel zombie commander was taken aback, but then he immediately replied, “Stubborn. They still refuse to surrender to you, my Lord.”

“My patience has run out. I have been very lenient towards the Wood Spirit Clan, but since they’re so unwilling, let’s just exterminate the entire clan!”

As the Rock Ghost King spoke, the trees in the entire forest began to twist and sway. From above, it almost looked as though demons and monsters were dancing riotously.

.....

Before the New Year’s event began, the players still chose to prioritize leveling up by fighting monsters. After all, there was only a small amount of players who did have enough soul coins to build their own Specter Ship and set sail out to sea.

At that moment, a few hundred players had congregated outside the entrance of the Ghost Mountains, their expressions grave as they looked at the dozens of figures before them.

The figures being surrounded all had the appearance of the human race, moreover, they looked incredibly attractive. It could even be said that they had wholly conformed to the human race’s standards of aesthetics.

However, the players knew that these people were not players of their own faction as they all had light green hair and dark green pupils. It was obvious that they were a foreign clan!

[Wood Spirit Clan]: A humanoid race masterful of the way of the Wood Spirit. Adults of the Wood Spirit Clan possess special abilities of growth, healing, divine protection, and so on.

“Wood Spirit Clan? Boss, should we kill them?” questioned a man with a wand in his hand.

The man who was called the boss did not reply, instead he looked at the members of the Wood Spirit Clan surrounding them and shouted loudly.

“Hey, what’re you doing here at the Mansion of the Dead? Don’t you know that this is the territory of the Beiqi Army?”

Upon hearing those words, the members of the Wood Spirit Clan who were initially unwavering in their determination to rebel like their lives depended on it all seemed startled.

A handsome man from the Wood Spirit Clan with a long bow on his back stepped out from the group. Sweeping his gaze across everyone at the scene, he then turned toward the leader of the Demolition Guild, Liu Chai.

“You say that you’re the Beiqi Army?”

“Duh, if not us, then who else?! You?” Liu Chai glared at him.

“As far as I know, the Beiqi Army of the Lord King of Beiqi had already been scattered. How could the Beiqi Army possibly still exist?” the man from the Wood Spirit Clan appeared to be very astonished.

“Millions of descendants of Beiqi exist, how could the Beiqi Army possibly collapse?”

Liu Chai glared at him again, “Speak up, what is your origin and why are you here? If it wasn’t for your human appearance, my brothers and I would’ve cut you all down long ago!”

Upon hearing the threat of action in his words, the man panicked a little, “We are the Wood Spirit Clan, a medical clan appointed by the King of Beiqi.”

“Appointed by the King of Beiqi?” Liu Chai was a little confused.

Subsequently, the man from the Wood Spirit Clan explained how his clan had been cornered in the North Rocks area after the death of the King of Beiqi. When they vowed to die rather than surrender to the Rock Ghost King, their entire clan was eventually exterminated and only a few dozen people had managed to escape.

After listening to the man from the Wood Spirit Clan, all the players present were stunned.

“So they’re allies?”

“Could they have been sent by the Rock Ghost King to spy on us?”

“I still think we should be cautious, let’s kill them!”

“We don’t know if they’re trustworthy. Go ask an NPC, they ought to know.”

The players of the Demolition Guild immediately began to discuss heatedly.

“Everyone, be quiet. Although you say that you’re allies, I don’t believe it, so let’s do it this way. You can come with me to see the butler of the Mansion of the Dead. If he says it’s true, then you can stay in the Mansion of the Dead, if not, then hmm...”

“Butler of the Mansion of the Dead?” the man from the Wood Spirit Clan was startled again.

Having stayed in Beiqi for so many years, not only had they never met the force before their eyes, they were also oblivious to the fact that the Mansion of the Dead had a butler.

However, under the pressing circumstances, the man from the Wood Spirit Clan only looked at the meager remainder of his clansmen with a trace of sorrow in his eyes and chose to compromise.

As a result, the few dozen members of the Wood Spirit Clan had their weapons confiscated by the Demolition Guild as they were escorted to the heart of the Mansion of the Dead.

Naturally, Lu Wu was already aware of this situation and had already asked Bei Li about it.

However, Bei Li was also utterly surprised by the existence of the Wood Spirit Clan. In her opinion, the forces that were extremely loyal to the King of Beiqi should have already been wiped out by the rebels. She had never expected that the Wood Spirit Clan still exist.

“I think I know the reason, it might be the specialty of the Wood Spirit Clan!” after pondering for a while, Bei Li lifted her head to speak.

“Specialty?”

“Yes, the Wood Spirit Clan aren’t the same as the other battle-type clans. They have extremely weak fighting abilities, but they’re an auxiliary-type clan that possess healing and restoring abilities. Evidently, the Rock Ghost King plundered this clan, wanting to retrieve them for himself to improve the combat strength of his own forces, but he didn’t succeed!”

After Lu Wu found out that the Wood Spirit Clan was truly loyal and devoted, he gave the butler a new command prior to the arrival of the Demolition Guild and the others.

Upon arrival of the members of the Demolition Guild, they met with the butler whose gaze suddenly turned to the Wood Spirit Clan who were encircled in the center.

“You... you all are still alive!”

The Wood Spirit Clan was confused.

“It must truly be the blessing of the King of Beiqi. I never imagined that you would actually be able to survive the ambush of the rebels,” the butler’s eyes were brimming with tears as he spoke.

The Wood Spirit Clan was now even more confused.

At that moment, they were stupefied. Who in the world is this emotional old man before us? He acts as though he is very familiar with us!

# Chapter 66 - Players' Dyeing Vat Of Influence

Chapter 66: Players' Dyeing Vat Of Influence

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

After asking the butler, the players found out that the members of the Wood Spirit Clan were indeed allies.

This allowed the players to let their guard down, and they began to engage in small talk with the members of Wood Spirit Clan.

The Wood Spirit Clan was also curious about these players that called themselves the descendants of Beiqi and were very willing to talk to them.

However, the more they talked to them, the more confused the Wood Spirit Clan became. They almost thought that they had crossed over to the Mansion of the Dead in a different dimension.

This was because the Mansion of the Dead that the players spoke of was definitely not the Mansion of the Dead that they knew.

For example, according to the players, the King of Beiqi and the Black Dragon King had perished together. The Wood Spirit Clan only wound up even more confused as they did not even know who the Black Dragon King was, only that he seemed like a powerful person.

The Wood Spirit Clan was also extremely confused as to who Lu Mo and Fatty Chef were. As they took in bits and pieces of information, they started to have an existential crisis, wondering if the life they knew to be was fake. It was either that or the players themselves were fake.

However, the same thought occurred to all of the Wood Spirit Clan after they had heard how the players had united as one and killed Cha Na after a

night of fighting.

These people are so good at bragging that they do not even blink when they do it!

The Wood Spirit Clan suspected that these players would continue bragging until the cows came home if they were not stopped.

In their opinion, although Cha Na was weaker than other Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals, he could not possibly have been as weak as described.

However, this doubt turned to shock when they saw Cha Na's decapitated head hanging on the wall of the Mansion of the Dead. They realized that these guys truly were strong.

The appearance of the Wood Spirit Clan was quickly revealed in the forum by the players, with many curious players from around the world flooding in just to catch a glimpse of the Wood Spirit Clan.

The players' friendliness had made the Wood Spirit Clan let their guard down, and they too began to mix around the players.

However, the players' enthusiasm had also made some maidens of the Wood Spirit Clan feel very uncomfortable as they felt that these players were approaching them with some sort of intention.

In the forum:

Kindred\_Spirit: "What a pretty and gentle girl from the Wood Spirit Clan, a thought suddenly appeared in my mind."

Assassin\_Creed replied to Kindred\_Spirit: "It is impossible, all the girls are very kind, don't even think about flirting with them."

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "The guys of the Wood Spirit Clan are very handsome too, unfortunately I already have a boyfriend, so I can only enjoy some eye candy~"



Millenium\_Cold\_Iron: “I got injured when I leveled up at the Ghost Mountains, but then I met a girl from the Wood Spirit Clan who healed me, I feel like I have fallen in love (Embarrassed~)”

Cutie\_King\_Slime: “Sure enough, 2D beauties are the real beauties. My lonely soul burns, I want to reserve one in advance!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “I seem to smell the stench of loneliness... (funny)”

Watermelon\_Taro replied Crayon\_Shinchan: “You’re probably the most powerful troll in this forum! (funny)”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “Hehe~ (funny)”

Pmurt: “Going out to sea to watch the sunrise and sunset with a girl of the Wood Spirit Clan, together in the beautiful sunset...”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Pmurt: “I suspect that there’s an important message hidden in your ellipsis, I will report you first! (funny)”

.....

Lu Wu welcomed the arrival of the Wood Spirit Clan and had further requested the butler to arrange an area between the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District to become the new domain of the Wood Spirit Clan.

According to Bei Li, the Wood Spirit Clan were loyal to the King of Beiqi, and they had outstanding abilities that would allow them to play the roles of military doctors during battles, all of which could help the players.

The Wood Spirit Clan and the players had different thoughts on the history of Beiqi, so in order to be safe, Lu Wu had instructed the butler to bring the Wood Spirit Clan to the Mansion of the Dead. Using the excuse of having them swear their loyalty upon the statue of the King of Beiqi, Lu Wu had them read out the pledge of allegiance on the artifact prepared by Bei Li.

After the artifact had received the pledge of allegiance, the Wood Spirit Clan were then sent into the artifact for memory modification to become new NPCs.

Lu Wu did not care whether the players intended to flirt with the Wood Spirit Clan, as there was a set regulation in the game that only allowed players to be together if it was consensual.

This regulation, proposed by Lu Wu and set up by Bei Li, was initially set to protect the players. Later, protection for NPCs was added and players were then only allowed to have intimate contact if their intimacy levels had reached the score of 100.

Lu Wu also used the artifact to include the Wood Spirit Clan into the protection list, so the players were unable to cross the line unless everything was consensual.

During this period, the Wood Spirit Clan integrated into the crowd of players quickly. To them, the players were gifted combatants with special talents and were part of a secret force cultivated by the King of Beiqi.

However, the Wood Spirit Clan were stunned when the players showed them their gift of the undead for the first time.

These beings had the terrifying ability to return to normal within three hours even if they had died. The sheer knowledge of this shocked the Wood Spirit Clan to their core.

Now they knew how these people, who called themselves players, and the descendants of the King of Beiqi, had defeated Cha Na.

They also felt the absurd relief of having allied themselves with these players.

However, since the Underworld was enormous and mystical, they slowly got used to the idea of it after getting closer with the players. At the same time, they used their inherent talent and capabilities to become the players' medical aid station.

In the beginning, they felt panicked when players would come to them for help after getting poisoned or seriously injured, and they would give them

emergency treatment. Yet after a while, the Wood Spirit Clan got used to it and became calmer, in fact, even calmer than the players themselves.

When they came across those who were seriously injured, they could even mention phrases that they had learned from the players.

“Bro, why are you scared? You’ll be fine after three hours. Your injury is incurable, it’s better to die earlier and return online earlier!”

“Ah, your injury is too troublesome, why don’t you die first and empty your bed for the next person?”

“Hey bro, your injury is a little scary. Let’s not waste any more time, could you please die first?”

The changes in the Wood Spirit Clan stunned the players, but as a result, the cultural and societal gap between them had disappeared. Now, they would even mix around and chill with the players.

In addition, the Wood Spirit Clan had another ethnic characteristic, which was wine-making.

The wine produced by the Wood Spirit Clan tasted mellow and had the effect of regenerating vitality points. Moreover, it was not intoxicating at all. The players loved it very much and were often found trying to curry favor with the people of the Wood Spirit Clan in order to drink some wine.

After getting closer to the players, the people of the Wood Spirit Clan were inevitably affected as well. Occasionally, some internet slang would spill from their mouths, and these kinds of changes shocked Lu Wu. One’s environment truly does determine the character of a person.

Even the peaceful, easy-going and elegant Wood Spirit Clan were unable to escape the destiny of being badly influenced when they were together with the players.

The reputation of the Fourth Disaster was truly well-deserved!

# Chapter 67 - New Year's Eve

Chapter 67: New Year's Eve

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

New Year's Eve.

Countless players walked out of the Mansion of the Dead in pairs toward the coast of the Underworld Sea in Liuli District.

That was where the activity would start.

With the arrival of dusk, the coast was seen to fill up with ships and rafts of various sizes while the shore was crowded with people.

The players rubbed their hands together, waiting for the activity to start. They were getting ready to compete with each other by sailing out to sea.

Lu Wu, who was already prepared beforehand then began to condense an enormous clock above the sea.

[The activity is about to start. Everyone, please get ready, any player that leaves the shore to enter the ocean before the activity starts will be deemed to have forfeited their competitive rights!]

Accompanying the countdown on the clock were countless brilliant fireworks that filled the air above the coastline, illuminating the sky.

Soon after, the sound of the countdown bell rang.

Dong! Dong!

Ten... Nine... Eight... Seven...

One!

At the end of the countdown, the game notification sounded again.

[The New Year's activity has officially started! This activity will last for six hours, all fish caught during this time guarantees an accumulated reward. The fishing contest begins!]

Gazing at the sky overflowing with fireworks, all the players cheered as they set sail with their mates, heading toward the direction of the brilliant moon hanging above the sea line.

The players who did not have guild warships or ships followed along, rowing their small rafts.

This activity relied mainly on the enthusiasm of the players because it really did not depend on how strong one's ability was, but how much luck that one had.

However, because many players had already seen the video of Ba Mu fishing, most of the players moved around in small squads. After all, if the Spiritual Fish was of a higher class, it would be harder to handle for one person. Furthermore, if there were more people, they could look after each other.

As for the players who had neither Specter Ships nor rafts, they fished around the shoreline. Even though the chances of getting a Spiritual Fish were lower, they decided to try their luck since this activity was based on luck. Maybe fishing near the shore would bring about a lavish reward.

Not only did the New Year's activity this time attract all the players, even the Wood Spirit Clan had rushed over due to curiosity.

They smiled widely as fireworks burst open in the skies and the cheers of the players rung in their ears.

To them, this was one of the celebration ceremonies for the players' culture, so they joined in curiously as well, looking at the players fishing. They were so enthusiastic that they even set up a barbeque, grilling fish for the players that were fishing.

As the first player caught a fish, the ranking board appeared as well. All the players could clearly see the translucent ranking board hanging on the upper right corner of their screen, stating their current ranking.

Below the ranking board was an activity chatroom, an area where the players could communicate with each other.

After about half an hour, a hundred Guild Level Specter Warships sailed into the Void Ocean. Once they entered this part of the ocean, they then went their separate ways, each choosing a different spot to start fishing.

At the same time, the ranking board was changing almost every second, the ranking of the players moving back and forth. At this stage, it was hard to tell who would be the winner.

.....

At the edge of a cliff along the coastline, a bald man held a fishing rod in his right hand and a bottle of Wood Spirit liquor from the Wood Spirit Clan in his left. He took a sip of the liquor every now and then lazily, but his piercing gaze remained on the water's surface.

Shi Hu was absolutely sure that he would not win any of the top spots in this fishing competition. After all, a boorish and unrefined person as himself had no knowledge about fishing. Moreover, he was clumsy when it came to fighting monsters to level up. He had entered this competition just for fun.

That was why he had chosen not to work with a small team. Instead, he had found himself a remote cliff edge to casually fish upon while watching the moon and feeling the sea breeze.

As for the potential harvest, Shi Hu was still very excited about it.

He was excited to send the fish that he had caught to the shore for the brothers of the Wood Spirit Clan to cook scrumptiously and did not really care for the marks accumulated in the competition.

From his point of view, he was just as useless as a salted fish. Rankings and rewards did not exist for him! The most important thing was to wine and dine to his heart's content.

Shi Hu effortlessly excused his mentality by calling himself a player for life. All the fighting and killing was too bloody for him. In his mind, to live a life of ease and leisure was the real relish of being a human.

Drowned deep in his thoughts as the sea breeze swept across his face, Shi Hu fished calmly, not even the slightest bit as nervous as other players.

He had pretty good luck as he had already caught three marine fish, three Lischke, and a huge lobster within two hours.

The elated Shi Hu glanced at his creel, preparing to send his catch to the Wood Spirit Clan's barbeque stall after catching one more fish.

Subsequently, he cast his fishing rod and waited patiently again.

At that moment, the sound of the game notification could be heard, while a line of red-colored words appeared on the ranking board in the upper right corner.

[Congratulations to player Sun Qi who caught a Tiger Fish (Spiritual Sea level), obtained 500 points, currently placed second on the board!]

When the notification appeared, a picture appeared in the chatroom.

The picture was of a white puppy enthusiastically holding a fish bigger than the size of its own body in its jaws with a line of words below the picture.

“Sure enough, Gou Zi is the king of the game, obtaining a Spiritual Sea Fish, hehe, the Myth Guild blesses you!”

Shi Hu cast a brief look undisturbed, then went on to admire the moonlight.

[Congratulations to player Meng Shao Chun who caught a Blood Spirit fish (Spiritual Sea level), obtained 500 points, currently leaping to third place on the board!]

Another notification appeared, causing Shi Hu to sigh. He gazed at the ocean and nagged uncontrollably.

“Those with great luck like to show off all the time, while those who have bad luck can only look in their empty bags and weep. I curse all of the lucky ones and hope that they’ll stay single for all of their lives!”

After speaking, Shi Hu felt his fishing rod quiver slightly. He realized that a fish had taken the bait and snapped out of his distracted mood as he started to reel in the fishing line.

It was just as he thought, the rod was easily lifted. Clearly, there was no good outcome.

Yet after Shi Hu lifted his fishing rod, his mind went blank for a moment. What kind of trick is this?

A weird-looking fish with the head of a dragon and the tail of a fish was hanging on the fishhook. He remained stunned for a while before he started using the Artifact to analyze.

After he saw the analyzed characteristics, Shi Hu widened his eyes as a notification was announced throughout the whole region.

[Congratulations to player Shi Hu who caught an extremely rare fish called Ao (Spiritual Sea level), obtained 1000 points, currently leaping to the first place on the board!]

[Ao (Spiritual Sea level)]:

Legend has it that during the olden times, the golden-colored and silver-colored carps wanted to jump over the dragon’s gate to fly into the clouds and become dragons, but the moment that they jumped over the gate, it closed, so they could only have the head of a dragon with the tail of a fish. Thus, they were named Ao. Male Ao are golden-scaled and gourd-tailed while female Ao are silver-scaled and hibiscus-tailed. Always roaming the sea, this kind of fish is a branch of the offspring of Ao, and its blood is not pure.



(Note: This fish does not have the pure blood of an Ao, although it is listed as a rare fish, it will be divided into the Spiritual Sea level. After the conversion of the accumulated marks, it will be listed as the lowest type of rare marine species at 1000 points.)

Looking at the Ao in his hands, Shi Hu had a mental breakdown.

He had accidentally just levelled up as king of the game... Can I take back my words now...

# Chapter 68 - New Year's Eve Countdown

## Chapter 68: New Year's Eve Countdown

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Based on the occasional pulls, it seemed to be a rather weak Ao. Thus, Shi Hu appeared to be stunned.

As he glanced at the scoreboard, he realized that his name came in first place. The corners of his lips twitched as he recalled the curse earlier on. All of a sudden, he found the situation both funny and extremely embarrassing.

The moment Shi Hu caught Ao, numerous questions asking for the selling price started to arise in the event's chat box.

Yet, Shi Hu ignored them. Instead, he chucked the Ao into the creel. Then, he swiftly lifted the creel and headed toward the sandy shore.

For sale? He would not put it up for sale. Even though he did not consider himself realistically wealthy, he still owned and sublet more than ten houses. In other words, he was neither short of food nor clothing. Playing games was something he did just for fun, hence the issue of money never crossed his mind.

Thus, it turned out that the Sea Spirit Level fish was the first of its kind to be placed over the barbecue pit.

A few fellows from the Wood Spirit Clan were dumbfounded by Shi Hu's action of generously grilling such a premium-priced Spirit Fish. To them, this was a reckless waste of natural resources.

If it were up to them, they would have used it to make elixirs or rear the creature to see whether there was room for nurturing.

However, since Shi Hu was insistent, they did not speak any further.

In a flash, the sandy shore was filled with the meaty fragrance of Ao.

As he gazed at the spam questions asking for the selling price in the event's chat box, Shi Hu contemplated before chuckling. Then, he moved the cooked Ao which was skewered on a twig to the corner of his mouth and triggered a screenshot.

“Ka-cha.”

Immediately, Shi Hu meanly uploaded the screenshot into the event's chat box.

“I heard that you guys are looking for this? Mmm~ It tastes quite good~”

After posting the photo, Shi Hu sat by the barbecue pit and savored his food while reading the replies of the enraged players in the chat box.

After munching for a bit, Shi Hu's eyes widened.

The Spirit Fish had a silky smooth and tender texture. When the shredded meat was broken into delicate strands at every bite, a rich flavorful fragrance would fill his palate. The aromatic scent was caused every inch of his body to relax.

This sort of intense experience on his taste buds bewildered Shi Hu.

He had never eaten anything as scrumptious as this. At the same time, he could not stop munching and it was not until he bit into the twig when he realized that his food was gone.

[Digested Ao, earned a free attribute of 15 points!]

When the game's prompt appeared, Shi Hu threw the twig aside and let out a breath of hot air. At that moment, his entire body loosened up and his

desire for the Spirit Fish grew.

With an insatiable appetite, Shi Hu stood up and gazed at the girl from the Wood Spirit Clan before pointing at the creel,

“Miss, I’ll gift this creel to you~ I shall continue fishing now.”

The girl from the Wood Spirit Clan was stunned as she nodded her head. She was still astonished as she found it hard to believe that the Sea Spirit Level Ao was gone just like that.

After consuming the Spirit Fish, Shi Hu was overcome by the pleasure on his taste buds which he knew he could never experience in real life.

There was no point in continuing his original plan of having a big seafood feast. This time around, he decided to return to the beach and try his luck. Who knows, today might be his lucky day.

.....

The fishing competition resumed with endless announcements popping up periodically, stimulating the desires of the players for the Spirit Fish.

Even if they could not catch a Spirit Fish, being short-listed would ensure the reward of an equipped weapon equivalent to the price of a standard Spirit Fish. All the players were hoping to be the lucky one.

The shores of Liuli District were scorching. Everyone was fixed on their fishing rods as they hoped that their next catch would be a Spirit Fish.

Meanwhile, at the region of the Void Ocean, while there were plenty of fish in the sea, sea creatures would emerge from time to time.

Once a small sea creature is spotted, none of these large associations would hold back. Instead, they would immediately steer their Specter Warships and ram it!

The simple collision had no significant effect on Specter Warships as these battleships had self-healing powers.

Waves of small naval battles were taking place within the Void Ocean.

Even though the players were unfamiliar and untrained in naval battle, they continued to mess around in exhilaration together.

Some players even went to the extent of posting mischievous photos of fished up sea monsters on the activity chatbox. The festive atmosphere of the whole game was filled with joy.

Due to the overcrowded situation at the Wood Spirit Clan's barbecue stall by the shore, no room could be spared for the remaining players. Many players then cleverly improvised by setting up their own barbecue pits. Unfortunately, they were not as accommodative as the Wood Spirit Clan because they imposed fees and earned lots of soul coins through their services.

As long as the players had tasted the Spirit Fish, they would naturally be captivated by its excellent fragrance.

This experience was deeply relatable to Lu Wu. At this moment, he and Bei Li were observing the happenings in the game while feasting on a Spirit Fish that was left in a shop by a mindless player.

The Spirit Fish's acquired flavor was addictive to Lu Wu, not to mention the glutton Bei Li.

After devouring the entire Spirit Fish, there was no effect on Bei Li's face yet Lu Wu's face reddened. It felt as if a warm current was flowing through his body, causing him to fall into a relaxed state.

While rubbing his belly, Lu Wu was already mentally plotting the tactics of conning a few more Spirit Fishes from the players.

.....

The launching of this event ran smoothly. When the event came to an end, a bell was sounded off, ringing from the ears of the players as the jumping scoreboard came to a halt.

[The New Year's Fishing Competition has ended. The rankings are as follows]:

First place: Sang Yu

Second place: Shi Hu

Third place: Ye Jingjing

Fourth place: Sun Qi (Little White Dog)

Fifth place: Feng Xiaoxin

...

After the event had ended, all the ships and boats were on their return voyage.

Meanwhile, by the shore, countless players sat down together, sharing their rewards of the day while boasting to one another on what they had experienced at sea.

This was the first time for many people to spend a holiday in a game. They enjoyed this kind of atmosphere.

The relationship among themselves was complicated within the game. They could either be supportive comrades or notorious enemies or even a group of buddies who savored on delicacies by the beach.

This sincere attitude of treating one another with open-heartedness in the game by the beach was comforting, not to mention memorable as well.

Removing the superficial masks of reality may enhance the crudeness in them, but what was there to be afraid of?

With amplified voices, mouthfuls of liquor were gulped down as words were spoken freely under the moonlight. Standing before the campfire, a friendly challenge was held where everyone was to drink for each other. This sensation was amazing and truly enjoyable!

As the sea breeze fluttered, everyone drunkenly waited for the arrival of dawn in the dark night of New Year's Day!

# Chapter 69 - New Year's Day Treasure Hunt

## Chapter 69: New Year's Day Treasure Hunt

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

On the second day, players who had taken their break offline went back online to start preparing themselves for the event of the second day.

As compared to the fishing competition, more people were looking forward to this event. Countless players were hovering between the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District in search for their most suitable feng shui spot. Then, they waited quietly for the event to begin.

At 8pm, following the players' anticipation, the game's prompt appeared.

[The New Year's Day Treasure Hunt begins now and will last for six hours. The game credentials will be refreshed every ten minutes!]

At this very moment when the announcement was made, Lu Wu thought of something. Then, graceful and lithe figures which were clothed in traditional red dresses while carrying bamboo baskets started to appear above both the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District.

Along with the official opening, these ladies began to waft around the air, simultaneously pulling out New Year's Day certificates which appeared like red envelopes unceasingly from their bamboo baskets, scattering them toward the ground.

All of a sudden, all the players surged and rushed toward the rain of red envelopes.

The value of New Year's Day certificates was clear-cut. It was as good as giving a free bonus to the players. Even if that person had picked up just



one New Year's Day certificate, it would already be sufficient to exchange for ten potions.

The lucky red envelope rain persisted in both regions for about a full minute, covering a wide area. The players were simply ecstatic.

The most thrilling part of this event was the hidden character class. This opportunity was open to every player, and everyone was looking forward to being the lucky one.

.....

At the border between Liuli District and the Mansion of the Dead.

With the commencement of the game, Qi Ming, who was well-prepared way beforehand, pounded his staff on the ground. Dark fog tumbled on the ground as dozens of Yin soldiers emerged.

Then, with a change in Qi Ming's thoughts, the Yin soldiers rearranged themselves into a horizontal row, each three meters apart, before they began to advance.

Multitasking was simply easy for Qi Ming. So long as the red envelopes were found along their way, Qi Ming would command his Yin soldiers to collect them. In this manner, their speed of collection would be significantly faster than the other players.

Qi Ming's method quickly caught the attention of others.

A mage was extremely astonished when he saw how Qi Ming operated. He also summoned dozens of Yin soldiers to model after Qi Ming's method in collecting certificates.

However, no matter how hard he tried, these Yin soldiers appeared to be incapable of executing commands other than attack and defend.

“Damn, I'll report this!”

The indignant mage went behind Qi Ming to take a video of how he collected game certificates and posted it on the activity chatbox.

“I’m reporting this man for cheating! All of us had to go through the same compulsory education for nine years, so why is it that he can have such outstanding Yin soldiers!”

Many players became restless upon the sight of how Qi Ming collected all the red envelopes.

“Perhaps it’s like what you said, his Yin soldiers were educated, that’s why they are outstanding (comical!)”

“After watching the video, I tried it but my Yin soldiers were like broken off writing, totally unmanageable!”

“That’s multitasking. Do you know the ability to draw a circle with your left hand and square with your right concurrently? Some people are just gifted, you simply can’t compare!”

“True! So far, there are no cheaters in this game. Don’t you see that there are many honest players in this game?”

“This is so cool. Indeed, great people shall remain great wherever they go. There are more and more gods in the game!”

“A 100 meter long blanket search, this man is terrific. Look out for the one at the top of the list, it should be him!”

“Sure enough, it’s a cheater again. Here goes another suffocating operation, we mortal players just can’t hold a candle to that!”

.....

Just like what the players had said, Qi Ming had escalated to the top of the list within an hour with his super multitasking talent and was constantly widening the gap from his competitor which was ranked second on the list.

Unlike Qi Ming's systematic and steady blanket-search strategy, other players' games appeared to be a crazy, disorganized, and aimless wild chase.

Once again, the Wood Spirit Clan was confused upon seeing the sight.

Based on what they could see, this race does indeed possess unique characteristics.

Yesterday's fishing was understandable, but what is going on with today's lunatic-like running on the mountain?

"Elder brother, are they all fools?" a little girl from the Wood Spirit Clan who seemed to be about seven or eight years old raised her head and asked her elder brother curiously.

This man from Wood Spirit Clan who was referred to as the elder brother patted his younger sister gently on her head,

"Mind your words, we have to respect the custom of other races!"

"Oh!" The little girl nodded, "Then I will go and play with them!"

The man's expression congealed upon hearing her, "No, do not play with the fools!"

The little girl was speechless.

.....

The treasure hunt event lasted for six hours. When the bell rang, some players yelled in excitement while some were dejected.

[The New Year's Day Treasure Hunt officially ends now. All players with game certificates please proceed to the Event Messenger Area to redeem your rewards. The certificate rankings are as follows]:

First place: Qi Ming (328 certificates)

Second place: Xueli (133 certificates)

Third place: Qi Wen Jiang (102 certificates)

Fourth place: Lu Shun (102 certificates)

Fifth place: Li Chu Xuan (101 certificates)

.....

With the powerful ability and talent of multitasking, Qi Ming surpassed everyone with his outstanding performance.

As the event ended, many players began to flock toward the Event Messenger Area based in the Mansion of the Dead. It was also a time for Lu Wu to give out a lot of things dear to him.

As expected by everyone, once the redemption activity began, Qi Ming redeemed the hidden character class (Ghost Monster).

[Congratulations to Qi Ming for successfully redeeming the highest reward of this event, the hidden character class, Ghost Monster]

Amidst the envy and praises from other players, Qi Ming felt a surge of power flowing through his body. A string of data appeared in front of him.

[Ghost Monster]:

Character class background: After 10,000 years, the most powerful ghost bred in the Ghost Mountains formed the spiritual body of the Ghost Monster. It used to be the strongest overlord of the Ghost Mountains. After its voluntary allegiance to the King of Beiqi, it died in the Battle of the Abyss and was sent to the Spirit Summoning Palace by its descendants for worshipping.

Character class abilities: Spirit Summoning, Strength of Ghost Monster, Destruction

[Spirit Summoning]: Summon all kinds of ghosts for its use. The quantity and strength of ghosts summoned increases with the character level.

[Strength of Ghost Monster]: A 200% increment in strength attributes when used. All damage from carrying Strength of Ghost Monster will last for ten minutes. It has a cooling period of four hours.

[Destruction]: Stimulate the use of Strength of Ghost Monster for a wider damage range. After the activation, the character's body will explode within five seconds for a damage range of 100 meters. The intensity of the damage decreases according to the distance from the character.

Seeing that he finally possessed the inheritance, Qi Ming revealed a smile on his face.

After so many years of hard work, it was the first time he thought that it was just an easy task to possess the inheritance.

But when he saw the third ability of the inheritance of Ghost Monster, Qi Ming was stunned.

Isn't that a suicide attack? It doesn't really match my identity!

# Chapter 70 - The Cliffs Of Desperation

## Chapter 70: The Cliffs Of Desperation

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The third day of the new year was finally the day when Lu Wu would regain what he had given.

Just as he had expected, as a result of the once in a blue moon full discount, tons of players who had been reluctant at first had all relentlessly changed their equipment or bought whatever they needed.

Lu Wu's soul coins were finally back to their original amount.

This time the New Year's Day event had brought great enjoyment to the players and thus it created a great deal of feedback as well.

Though due to players' crave for top-ups, Lu Wu finally answered their calls in the forum and got ready to open up the top-up portal.

[Update preview. This update will open the top-up portal. All top-ups ratio will be 1 dollar : 1 dragon coin. All dragon coins can be used to buy beautiful outfits after the upcoming Fashion Auction Event!]

Fashion Auction: Three sets of fashion outfits will be presented for the auction every week using dragon coins as the bidding currency. Each outfit for each auction is limited to only 1,000 sets.

Invincible Loneliness: "Smile gradually freezing... What the heck are dragon coins? What about my soul coins?"

Cutest Ye Xue'er: "Report your addresses, time to embrace your execution you devs!"

Crayon\_Sinchan: “So happy to see how all the tycoons want it but are not able to get it (goofy)”

Assasin\_Creed: “I want soul coins. I don’t care, I only want soul coins!”

Xueli\_The\_Srongest: “Devs: In spite of your voodoo, I remain unmoving like a mountain while suppressing everything with my bare hands. How dare you mortals defy the game masters. Have you seen the submerging Taowu? Would you believe me if I said that with just a few clicks of the keyboard I can pinch it to death?”

Crayon\_Sinchan replied to Xueli\_The\_Srongest: “Legit!”

.....

Lu Wu understood the reason for the players’ grumblings about the top-up, but he simply did not have such a huge amount of soul coins for them to exhaust.

If he was to really initiate the top-up, he believed that his soul coins might be bought up by the players in a matter of less than ten seconds.

Lu Wu totally acknowledged the tycoons in the game. Players like Invincible Loneliness, Ye Xue’er, Liu Chai of the Demolition Officers, etc, each and everyone of them were lords of wealth.

Therefore, the passageway of soul coins top-up will never be up for grabs, not until he has made a fortune, at least.

What’s more is that those soul coins are of great use for Lu Wu. Every part of the game’s construction needs the soul coins, but of course, his expenditures are to enhance the earnings of soul coins whilst cultivating the capability of the players.

It was at this moment when Lu Wu reminisced the good old days of the war between the players and the Cha Na Army. It was through the destruction of the Cha Na Army that Lu Wu earned a great deal of soul coins.

Fueling war with battles will be the greatest way for the players and Lu Wu to learn and grow. He had already aimed his target at all the areas surrounding the Mansion of the Dead; ready to disclose the exploration mission again.

.....

As the curtains were drawn on the New Year's Day event, all the players were once again on the new journey of becoming stronger.

Though this time around, the players had many more choices to choose from.

Expansion of the sea, evolution of fortitude of the land, duplication of Treasure Hunt, etc, the diversity and playability of the game was slowly increasing alongside each update.

.....

Meanwhile, at the region of the Cliffs of Desperation.

Gu Yu (Invincible\_Loneliness) was with Sun Qi; a man and a hound preparing to climb to the highest peak in this area.

Ever since the climb up the snow mountain, Gu Yu fell in love with the feeling of challenging mother nature. He felt that conquering them created a sense of great accomplishment in him, hence this time he chose to take a shot at the much more treacherous Cliffs of Desperation.

As for why he brought Sun Qi along, the reason was of course because Sun Qi had the ability to regenerate vitality points. He would be a great support if they ever encountered any wild monsters along the way.

Sun Qi opposed Gu Yu's proposal at first.

Why look for trouble when they hadn't even finished tasting the miseries of life itself? To Sun Qi, this was totally how rich people would act when they don't have anything else better to do.



However, this firm attitude of his instantaneously changed when Gu Yu flung a stack of cash in front of him. Immediately, he wanted to follow, and that he actually likes mountain climbing, too!

Thus, a man and a dog came to the mountains of the Cliffs of Desperation.

This climb was different from all the previous ones as it was much more troublesome throughout the climb, for in the Cliffs of Desperation, an abundance of monsters awaited them.

Still, everytime Gu Yu got injured, Sun Qi would help him recover by donating some of his blood to him, with a long face that is.

Both had climbed for approximately three hours, but when they looked up, the peak of the Cliffs of Desperation was still nowhere to be seen, and the end was still heavily covered by the clouds.

Initially both of them wanted to continue their climb, but it was at that moment when Sun Qi's nose twitched and it said,

“Boss, there's a scent of wine here!”

Naturally Sun Qi's ability to express was liberated by Lu Wu, reason being this guy here kept on whining in the forum just because he couldn't speak. Finding him funny yet annoying, Lu Wu eventually allowed Bei Li to change the settings, allowing him to voice out like the others.

Hearing his remark, Gu Yu stood stiff and inspected their surroundings.

“Follow me!” Sun Qi's lightly scrunched its nose and ran toward a flat ground around the mountain.

Seeing that, Gu Yu followed its footsteps.

Halfway around the mountain, both of them swiftly stopped in their tracks. To their surprise, there was actually a wooden cabin not far away and what's more was that there was a vague bonfire-like shadow emitting from the inside.

A man and a dog glanced at each other before walking toward the cabin together.

The two surveyed the outskirts of the cabin. After they made sure that they were free from danger, Gu Yu raised his hand and knocked on the wooden door,

“Is anyone here?”

No one answered, and this made Gu Yu a little curious. Just when he was about to make his way in, the door creaked open.

A shaggy, white-haired elderly man with squinted eyes popped his head out and blurted, “Need something?”

“Uh, may I ask you about the Cliffs of Desperation?” Gu Yu uttered after a brief consideration while at the same time wondering why would this old man settle down here.

“Ask,” said the white-haired old man faintly.

“Aren’t you going to invite me in?”

Sun Qi’s sudden speech startled the white-haired old man, thus he exclaimed, “Fuck, you have a talking dog? Was he demonized?”

They were dumbfounded.

After discreetly holding down Sun Qi who was at the verge of leaping and chomping someone, Gu Yu blurted out, “Old man, I am curious about the reason why you are living here. Also, how high are these Cliffs of Desperation? I want to climb to the crest and take a look.”

“The crest? With your skimpy body and a dog, you want to climb to the top? Forget it!” insulted the white-haired old man.

If it wasn’t for Sun Yu yanking him backwards, Gu Yu would have almost lost it due to the white-haired old man’s sharp tongue. No matter what, he needed to teach this white-haired old man a lesson.

Just when Gu Yu was about to say something, the white-haired old man leaned sideways, indicating that the two may come in.

Both of them were confused but they still went in anyway.

The interior of the cabin was plain. There was a wooden table and a wooden bed. There were kerosene lamps on top of the wooden table and all around the cabin. Rusty iron pieces were scattered all over the floor, complemented with a hint of alcohol which permeated the whole cabin.

Having only a chair in the cabin, the white-haired old man signaled the both of them to sit on the wooden bed. Then, he turned, stepped into another room and brought out two glasses of fragrant fruit wine.

The two of them took the wine before Gu Yu asked, “Why did you say that we can’t climb to the top of the Cliffs of Desperation? Is there any danger?”

Hearing the question, the white-haired old man’s face turned solemn.

Thinking that the white-haired old man might reveal to him about the myths of the Cliffs of Despair, his expression gradually mimicked the old man’s.

“Fuck, the way your dog drinks is really human-like...”

Gu Yu looked over to Sun Qi and realized that he had already helped itself on the wine, followed with a hint of crimson on its cheeks. Yet after hearing the white-haired old man’s words, Sun Qi’s expression instantaneously became hostile.

Once again Gu Yu quietly suppressed the bared fangs of the ready-to-pounce Sun Qi and gravely asked again,

“Do you mind giving us some useful information?”

# Chapter 71 - The Seal Of The King Of Beiqi

## Chapter 71: The Seal Of The King Of Beiqi

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The white-haired old man looked at Gu Yu and Sun Qi as if they were a wacky duo,

“Why do you guys want to ascend to the summit of this cliff?”

Initially, Gu Yu wanted to say something for fun, but he figured it was not suitable for him to tell that to the indigenous people of the game. Thus, after some contemplation, he said once again,

“We heard that there’s a treasure on the summit of this cliff, so we want to ascend it to try our luck!”

“With just you and a dog?”

Sun Qi held down Gu Yu’s clenched fist quickly and hinted at him to calm down.

Gu Yu felt his temper becoming worse as he continued to experience the occasional sharp tongue of the white-haired old man.

Just when he was ready to explode in anger, the white-haired old man went into another room. A few moments later, he came out with a sheepskin scroll.

As Gu Yu and Sun Qi looked on curiously, the white-haired old man unfolded the sheepskin scroll on the table.

Both of them looked over the scroll immediately.

There was a towering peak at the center of the sheepskin scroll, but what made them wonder was that the peak was divided into many parts and the area of each part of the peak was drawn with a ferocious demon.

“Did you see something?” the white-haired old man stroked his beard and asked seriously.

Gu Yu nodded, “If I walk up the Cliffs of Desperation, there will be a demon guard at every stop, so it is very dangerous.”

The white-haired old man shook his head, “All of these demons are dead, so there is no danger!”

Gu Yu was speechless.

He clenched his fists once again but Sun Qi held Gu Yu tightly and hinted that he must restrain his impulse to lash out in anger.

“So can you tell us why you showed us this picture scroll?” Gu Yu asked through gritted teeth.

At the same time, he was prepared to accept the possible next sentence from this sharp tongued white-haired old man, “Just for fun.”

“I just want to show you this sentence on the picture scroll!” the white-haired old man said while pointing at the small sentence to the bottom right side.

When Gu Yu and Sun Qi heard this, they moved their heads curiously toward the scroll.

However, Gu Yu and Sun Qi had never seen these words nor the archaic language before, hence they appeared rather confused.

Fortunately, with the existence of artifacts, the automatic detection started to translate, and the words on the picture scroll began to distort.

[I, Beiqi, swear that generations of my people will guard the Cliffs of Desperation, get rid of evil, and defend fate!]

“What does that mean?”

Both the man and dog looked confused as they raised their heads.

“It is a long story,” the white-haired old man sighed toward the sky.

“Then cut it short!” Gu Yu answered curtly.

“Do you know who I am?” the white-haired old man’s expression turned serious again.

This white-haired old man is downright evil!

Nevertheless, these kind of words only appeared in the hearts of Gu Yu and Sun Qi. They did not actually say anything and just shook their heads at the same time.

“I am the offspring of the King of Beiqi!” the white-haired old man said proudly.

After he finished, the white-haired old man thought that Gu Yu and Sun Qi would be surprised, but he discovered that both of them were just staring at him as if they were staring at a moron.

“What? You don’t believe me?”

Gu Yu and Sun Qi did not answer him this time, instead they just turned around together and walked to the door.

After dealing with him for such a long time, turns out he is just a fool!

“Both of you stop right there!” the white-haired old man was anxious when he saw that he had failed to show off.

“What?” both of them turned back slowly and said emotionlessly.

“Take a look at what this is!” the white-haired old man took out a greyish seal from his pocket.

Gu Yu and Sun Qi looked at each other and wanted to leave again but both of them turned back again suddenly.

[The seal of the King of Beiqi (Ancient)]: The creator of the Land of Beiqi, the seal of the King of Beiqi was made by the first King of Beiqi and symbolizes the supreme power and glory of the Land of Beiqi (Expired)

“Hiss.”

“Hiss.”

Both of them were shocked as they looked at the introduction of the seal of the King of Beiqi.

“But why it was expired?” Sun Qi was confused.

“Maybe because it’s an old edition so it can’t function anymore,” Gu Yu shook his head.

“Now do you believe me!” the white-haired old man said happily.

Both of them looked at each other and sat beside the bed again. They looked at the white-haired old man as they awaited his story.

When he saw them sitting down, the white-haired old man sighed, “It’s a long story!”

“Then make it short!” Both of them said together.

The white-haired old man rolled his eyes, “My ancestor was the creator of the Land of Beiqi. He governed the Land of Beiqi for around a few hundred thousand years. These Cliffs of Desperation were his burial ground and the place he defended all his life.”

“The demon you saw on the scroll was once a subordinate who held vigil for him and also implemented his will after his death. It was the top Demonic God who guarded the Land of Beiqi!”

“What is the top Demonic God? Is it powerful?” Gu Yu asked curiously.

“This Cliffs of Desperation were a single horn on the head of that Demonic God... amazing, right?” the white-haired old man was slightly displeased at how Gu Yu interrupted his story.

“Hiss!” Gu Yu and Sun Qi shuddered when they heard this.

They knew that the height of the Cliffs of Desperation could even touch the sky. So if this was just a horn on his head, they could not imagine how huge this Demonic God was. It can probably be described as blocking the sun and sky.

“This means that your ancestor defeated this Demonic God, sealed it here, and made his descendants guard it?”

“Impossible, even ten of my ancestors could not defeat this Demonic God,” the white-haired old man rolled his eyes.

“I don’t know the specifics as to why the Demonic God was sealed, but it is still not safe even if the Demonic God had been sealed as his demonic thoughts will slither out sometimes. It was precisely because my ancestors had to fight against the Demonic God’s demonic thoughts that he used up his last strength and passed on at these Cliffs of Desperation less than 100 years after defeating the demonic thought!”

“But how is this related to the difficulty of climbing this hill?” Gu Yu asked curiously.

“It is not about difficulty, it is simply that you cannot climb this hill!” the white-haired old man’s expression became more serious this time.

“Why?”

“I’m afraid that you guys will be eroded by the demonic thoughts of the summit’s Demonic God and robbed of your bodies in order to become a new sockpuppet for the Demonic God.”

“All the demons on this scroll were originally sent by my ancestors to stop anyone from climbing up this hill!”



“How mysterious!”

Both Gu Yu and Sun Qi looked at each other, but their passion was burning like a fire inside.

“I’m warning you, don’t ascend the hill, or else having your bodies taken away would be a small problem. If you become the sockpuppet of the Demonic God, you will bring disaster on the Land of Beiqi.”

Facing the serious warning of the white-haired old man, Gu Yu and Sun Qi looked at each other again, then said in a righteous manner,

“Please don’t worry, for the sake of the safety of the Land of Beiqi, we will definitely not ascend this hill!”

# Chapter 72 - Demonic God(Part 1)

## Chapter 72: Demonic God(Part 1)

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Regarding the warning from the descendant of the King of Beiqi, Gu Yu and Sun Qi promised earnestly that they would listen to his words. For the sake of the safety of the Land of Beiqi, they would never climb the mountain.

Half an hour after they had said goodbye to the white-haired old man,

“Come on dog, hurry up, it’s getting dark. Put in a little more effort, we have to reach the top before we max out our time to be online.”

“Alright!”

With their strengthened bodies, it was easier for the man and dog to climb the mountain than it would be in reality. They kept on moving toward the summit of the Cliffs of Desperation.

However, as they were moving upward, both of them could feel a force continuously sweeping over them. It was like there was a pair of vicious eyes looking at them.

It took them eight hours, with short breaks in between, to finally pass through the clouds and see the summit of the Cliffs of Desperation.

It was also at this moment that Gu Yu’s heart wrenched.

He could not help but squat down and start to retch as all kinds of negative thoughts came into his mind. He felt that his body was as if it was out of his control, and both his eyes had turned red.

“Boss, are you alright!?” Sun Qi asked worriedly when he witnessed this scene.

At this moment, the crimson-eyed Gu Yu reached out his hand all of a sudden and choked Sun Qi by the neck, his fingers gradually tightening.

Sun Qi was so scared that he gave out a bark subconsciously.

“Boss, what’s wrong with you!?” Sun Qi tried to pull off Gu Yu’s hand, but he realized that his Red Ruby Rune had brightened up, and the strength of his hand was increasing slowly.

Just when Sun Qi was at a loss, Gu Yu let his hand go suddenly. He laid on the ground once again, his jaw dropped and his face appearing horrified as he began to pant heavily.

An indescribable strength shrouded all over his body just now. His mind was filled with various scenes of bloodshed and slaughter. Under the cover of this kind of negative emotion, he felt as if he almost had a mental breakdown.

It felt so real that even if he thought that it was just a game, he still had a lingering fear.

He once again stared at the summit, and thought about the warning from the white-haired old man. He was really scared this time.

“Boss, it’s quite creepy here, I feel like there is something staring at us...”

“You felt it, too?”

Gu Yu looked sullen. Before this, he thought that it was just his delusion, who would’ve known that Sun Qi had felt it, too.

“Are we going to continue...” the cowardly Sun Qi swallowed as he stared at the summit.

“What are you afraid of? There’s no big deal. It’s not like we are going to die in real life,” Gu Yu gave Sun Qi a hard look and said firmly.

Thus, Sun Qi had no choice but to keep on climbing to the summit with Gu Yu.

Finally, after another half an hour, the figures of a man and a dog appeared at the summit.

Gu Yu and Sun Qi were stunned when they saw the scenery in front of them.

A rusty and mottled pillar pagoda stood in the middle of the summit, and there was a black skeleton that sat beside it.

Both of them walked to the pillar pagoda curiously. They opened the screenshot function and took a few photos. Then, they started to look around this pillar pagoda.

Meanwhile, Sun Qi walked around the pillar twice. Suddenly, he lifted his right leg up.

“What are you doing!?” Gu Yu opened his eyes wide.

When Sun Qi realized what he was doing, he put down his leg in embarrassment, “I had no idea either, it seems to be a kind of instinctive reaction.”

In order to ease the embarrassing situation, Sun Qi decided to pat the pillar pagoda with his paw. When he touched it, a black light appeared, while green light also appeared from the body of Sun Qi at the same time.

The moment both those rays of light collided, Sun Qi was bounced off before hitting the ground brutally.

This made Gu Yu surprised. He quickly ran toward Sun Qi and helped him up, “Dog, are you alright?”

Sun Qi shook his head in confusion, “This pillar is weird. Just now, the moment I touched it, a sudden thought appeared in my mind. It seems like it’s telling me that it doesn’t like me.”

Gu Yu let out a sigh of relief when he saw that Sun Qi was okay. He stood up and walked toward the pillar once again.

Gu Yu thought of what Sun Qi told him. Then, he reached out his hand as well. He wanted to know the feeling that Sun Qi described just now.

When his hand touched the pillar pagoda, he could feel the negative emotions once again, and they were drilling into his mind in a craze.

At this moment, Gu Yu's eyes once again became red and the world of a raging bloody sea appeared before his eyes.

Above the bloody sea, a tiny figure was all huddled up as he swayed along with the waves.

Without knowing how much time had passed, this lonely figure kept on swaying. He would open its eyes once in a while and take a look at this world curiously. However, most of his time was still spent in deep sleep.

Gu Yu did not know why but he could feel that time passed quite quickly in this void. He did not know how many hundreds of years, thousands of years, or even ten thousands of years had passed before a light shot across the sky, appearing in this blood colored world.

Along with the appearance of light, gigantic waves surged on the bloody sea. The entire world began to tremble as it collapsed and shrunk before flooding into the little boy's body.

The light was getting brighter. In the end, this blood colored world was totally absorbed by the little boy, and the surroundings became deserted.

The little boy who was finally shrouded by the light, opened his eyes slowly.

“Wah!” he cried out for the first time in this new world.

“Why is it red?” a voice filled with confusion asked.

This time, a gigantic palace appeared before Gu Yu.

A few enormous giants were surrounding an altar. They looked at the little boy who was crying on the altar with confusion.

“Bloody red! Calamity! An ill omen!”

“Abandon the child. This child was born full of the power of blood. I’m afraid that he may bring an unknown fate to our clan!”

A few of the priests in the clan looked at the blood colored little boy, and spoke with a sullen tone to the King of Giants who was in heavy armor.

“No, he is my child. I will not abandon him no matter what happens,” the King of Giants picked up the child from the altar and placed him in his arms. Then, he touched the blood child’s face gently with his hand, showing a smile on his face.

At this moment, the blood child turned tears into laughter.

When they saw their patriarch walking away, a few of the priests gave out a sigh, but they were unable to do anything.

As time once again went by, the blood child started to grow.

Unlike the other people in his clan, children the same age as him already had a height of three meters and above. Meanwhile, he still remained with a height of just one meter. He was discriminated against by his fellow clan members as he was like a square peg in a round hole.

However, the blood child was not upset about it. He was living a happy life because he had parents who loved him very much.

One was the patriarch of the clan, while another was the newly appointed high priest. Under the protection of his parents, he felt extremely happy.

It was also at this time when the scene in front of Gu Yu became distorted.

When the scene became clear again, the world in front of him had changed drastically.

At the sky above the City of Giants, many coffins which were ablaze shot across the sky and fell from it. The entire City of Giants was covered in a sea of fire.

And the most terrifying thing were those fierce zombies who got out from the coffins that fell to the ground.

## Chapter 73 - Demonic God (Part 2)

From that point onward, an all-out war erupted. The giants rose up in defense against the zombies.

Unfortunately, the zombie army was too powerful. Even when they fought with all their strength, the giants were still unable to turn the tides.

Due to their opponents' merciless slaughtering, the number of casualties were piling up at a frightening rate.

Now, the blood child had also grown up into an adult, his height reaching almost six feet tall. He watched silently as the others who had grown up with him donned their armor and prepared to follow their fathers into battle. But his heart was gripped by an overwhelming pain.

He wished he could help his father in this moment. This was the first time that he felt so desperate for power.

The war raged on for days. The giants kept falling back to regroup and fortify their defenses. Over half of their numbers had already been lost, yet the zombie forces were still increasing in number.

This made the giants fall into despair.

At this moment, a coffin that measured about 320 feet long and 100 feet wide fell from the sky. When it landed on the ground, the entire City of Giants trembled, like it was hit by an earthquake.

As the cover of the coffin creaked open, a huge zombie appeared from within, its body wreathing with burning flames.

“Hiderigami!” several shamans from the Giants Clan shrieked.

When the figure appeared, the zombies immediately sank to their knees, as if they were welcoming a supreme being's arrival.



“The blood source!” a harsh voice boomed as Hiderigami opened his eyes. His gaze burned with desire as it locked onto the blood child, who was being protected behind the ranks of the giants.

“Surrender it to me!” Hiderigami demanded as he stared at the giants in front of him.

“Roar!” All of the giants raised their warhammers and thumped on their huge shields, facing off against their enemies unflinchingly.

Even the shamans who had once said that the blood child would bring calamity to their clan were now standing firm, their eyes resolute and steady.

Since he was accepted into the clan, he was considered one of them. Even if they did look down on him and had underestimated him before, the giants would never abandon one of their own because of the threats of some outsiders.

When he saw this moment, the blood child’s heart was filled with gratitude.

This time, Hiderigami did not say anything else. His eyes flashed red, and suddenly, all of the zombies got to their feet as they howled and threw themselves at the ranks of the giants.

Sadly, the gap between the strength of both armies was too wide. The giants could not hold off the zombies’ frenzied attacks, and so they fell, one by one.

The blood child’s eyes burned with hatred when he saw this scene.

At this moment, he hated himself for being so weak. He did not even have the strength to pick up a weapon, let alone fight against his people’s enemies.

He could only watch helplessly as his brothers died one by one in front of him. When he saw that even his father and mother had been torn to pieces by the zombies, the blood child broke down completely.

Tears of blood fell from the blood child's eyes as he gazed upon the war-torn ruins of the world.

At that very moment, Hiderigami appeared right in front of him. He stared at the little boy before barking out a sudden laugh.

“As a blood source, I cannot believe that you've developed emotions. How ridiculous!”

“Why am I so weak? Why am I so useless? This is unfair!” the blood child glared at the huge figure in front of him as his face twisted into a grotesque expression.

“You are weak because of your emotions. Now your only choice is to become my blood food, which is the fuel for my evolution,” Hiderigami cackled as he continued staring at the blood child.

The blood child stiffened when he heard these words. It was as if something had shattered, as a powerful strength started to well up within his body.

Right in front of Hiderigami's shocked gaze, the blood child started to grow taller and taller, surrounded by blood pillars that appeared out of thin air.

In the blink of an eye, the blood child had reached the same height as Hiderigami. Despite that, he continued to grow.

Hiderigami immediately hurled out his palm as the seriousness of the situation became apparent to him.

Boom!

The hills trembled and the earth quaked, while the blood child was thrown into the air after being hit.

However, the blood child's growth had not stopped at all. His body continued to expand as he flew through the air. Now, he was roughly the size of a tall mountain.

“Being emotionless will make you stronger! Being emotionless will make you stronger!” the blood child chanted to himself as a powerful strength that had never existed before started to course through his body.

The death of his parents and clan members had filled his mind with all kinds of negative emotions, which severed the last thread of attachment he had to this world. The strength of the bloody sea had been awakened completely.

In addition to the gifted talent from the giants, his body mass was still increasing. Even Hiderigami was shocked by what he saw.

“You are not a simple blood source... you are the source of the bloody sea!” fear arose in the heart of Hiderigami when he saw that the blood child had grown to the height of the sky.

He realized that he was completely wrong. Initially he had followed the scent of the blood source all the way here, but he did not expect that what he found was the source of the bloody sea, which was a power that even he could not control.

“Roar!” the blood child, who had transformed into a titan, emitted a mighty sound. Even the clouds in the sky were dispersed by his bellow, and powerful gales of wind were whipped up around them.

Confronted with this terrifying scene, Hiderigami had completely abandoned the thought of seizing the blood source. He returned to his coffin, and flew into the sky.

“Roar!” the blood child shrieked again when he saw that Hiderigami was trying to escape. His gigantic arm reached through the sky, and smashed toward the coffin.

“Boom!”

The entire expanse around them quaked from the aftershocks of that blow. Hiderigami’s coffin cracked and shattered as his body was blasted to a distance far away, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

“Roar!”

The power pent up within the blood child was too much for him to bear, yet he did not have any way to vent it out. Thus, he lifted his leg and brought it down hard on the City of Giants. The entire city, along with the zombies, were all crushed and buried into the earth.

“Kill!”

Now that he had no more emotional ties, the blood child had gone berserk. All kinds of negative emotions flooded his mind. At this moment, he wanted to destroy the world.

Calamity had fallen upon the world. The blood child kept moving forward, tracking the scent of Hiderigami. Every place that he passed by became victims to his anger. Countless species and beings were destroyed by his strength. He wanted to destroy everything under the sky!

Gu Yu was completely stunned when he saw this. The overwhelming strength that allowed the blood child to reduce the world to rubble shocked him to the core. Now, he had an inkling that the identity of the blood child must be the Demonic God that was mentioned by the white-haired old man.

At this moment, the scene had changed again. The blood child, who had turned into the Demonic God, appeared in a new place. He could sense the presence of Hiderigami here, thus he decided to commence the destruction of the entire area.

However, he could not do that so easily right now. This was because he encountered someone, a lady who was not even the size of an ant in his eyes.

“Hi, my name’s Li. Do you want to be my friend?” the lady asked the Demonic God with a smile as she looked up at him.

The Demonic God did not deign to reply. Instead, he smacked his hand downward as he roared ferociously. The tremendous strength seemed to warp the very dimension that they were standing in. However, the aftermath

of that attack was not as devastating as it used to be, as his palm stopped when it was about to collide with the woman.

The Demonic God howled in frustration, but his body seemed to be suppressed by an unseen force. He could not even move a single inch.

“Big guy, you are too dangerous. Please go to sleep, I will let you out once you know your place. We will be friends by that time. That’s a promise, okay!”

The lady smiled as she raised her hand. The gigantic body of the Demonic God was slowly lifted off the ground.

Then, the lady pressed her hand downward. As the Demonic God howled in anger, the ground cracked open, and his body sank into the earth.

Her strength was so great that even the Demonic God was incapable of fighting against it. He struggled valiantly, but it was all in vain. His body sank slowly, deeper and deeper, until he was completely submerged in the ground. Only the horn on his head was still visible.

Meanwhile, the graceful lady in the white dress smirked as she turned around and walked away.

Many years have passed since then. That Skyward Horn, which was once visible, had now been covered by dirt and soil, forming a mountain. The legend of the Demonic God was passed down through generations, and was still talked about widely among those who inhabited this land...

# Chapter 74 - Do You Long For Power?

Gu Yu was still dazed after he came out of the flashback.

“Boss! Are you alright? Why are you frozen in place?” Sun Qi hollered at him as he clung to his legs.

“Go away!” Gu Yu kicked Sun Qi aside. Then, his expression became very serious.

The previous scene was just like a dream, but he could clearly sense the Demonic God’s evil intentions to destroy the world.

From the Demonic God’s birth until his awakening, Gu Yu truly resonated with the change in mentality that he had gone through. That feeling was like *deja vu*, as if he himself was once the Demonic God.

He stared at the pagoda column. Obviously, the pagoda column was erected here afterwards. The skeleton must’ve belonged to the first King of Beiqi.

Gu Yu fell into deep thought. He did not know what was going on. Why would Sun Qi be repelled when he touched it, while he had a different experience when he did the same thing?

“Do you long for power?” a voice suddenly echoed in his mind.

The voice was familiar to him. Although it sounded much older and wearier, he could still recognize that the voice belonged to the Demonic God.

“You’re the Demonic God?” Gu Yu asked in his mind.

“Do you long for power?” the voice repeated.

“What bullshit are you talking about? Explain properly!” Gu Yu snapped impolitely.

Although he knew that the transformation of the Demonic God was brought about by external interference, it was undeniable that the Demonic God himself was the epitome of evil. Gu Yu thought that the Demonic God was trying to lure him into doing evil deeds.

After Gu Yu’s response, the voice remained silent for a few moments before speaking up again.

“Do me a favor, and I will repay you with boundless power!”

“Yeah, right!” Gu Yu was unimpressed.

.....

At that moment, Lu Wu and Bei Li’s expressions were solemn.

They had borne witness to everything that happened to Gu Yu just now, including the flashback that showed a part of the Demonic God’s memories.

Lu Wu suddenly turned to look at Bei Li, who jumped like a deer in headlights.

“I haven’t asked a single question yet...” Lu Wu said flatly.

Bei Li laughed awkwardly after hearing that.

“Tell me, are you that girl who addressed herself as ‘Li’?” Lu Wu stared at her unblinkingly, like a father who was questioning his child on whether he completed his homework or not.

“No!” Bei Li answered without hesitation.

Seeing that Lu Wu did not look convinced, Bei Li lifted her right hand and declared, “I swear that it wasn’t me, but I know who she is.”

Lu Wu pondered for a moment before speaking up again, “Previously, you told me that you’re only around 300 years old, but the girl that appeared in the scene looked like she was at least tens of thousands or a few hundred thousand years old. Can you explain how you got to know each other?”

Bei Li started to look awkward again as she remained silent.

“You have thirty seconds to organize your thoughts or come up with a story.”

Bei Li’s brows furrowed as she fell into deep thought.

After a few seconds had passed, Bei Li lifted her head. She opened her mouth, paused for a moment, then closed it again. She looked at Lu Wu with wide puppy dog eyes as she said, “Sadly, I’m incapable of making anything up.”

Lu Wu was speechless.

“Then just tell me the truth!” he sighed as he facepalmed.

“No can do. If I tell you now, then your soul will disintegrate on the spot, because it won’t be able to handle my secret!” Bei Li’s face contorted into a terrified expression.

“So magical?” Lu Wu was surprised.

“Yes, so in the meantime, I will try my best to strengthen the fortitude of your soul. I will tell you about everything when you are ready,” Bei Li answered in a serious tone.

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu could not make up his mind for a few moments, but he nodded eventually.

Since he had chosen to believe in Bei Li, then he would continue to do so. After all, she was the one who made his life so much more colorful and interesting than before, and they were growing increasingly attached to each other as time passed.



He felt that Bei Li must have her own reasons for not telling him everything.

But then, knowing that she had secrets yet he did not know anything about them was making him feel uneasy.

“By the way, since the Demonic God was so powerful, wouldn’t it harm Gu Yu’s soul?” although Bei Li had told him about the mystical qualities of the artifact, Lu Wu could not help worrying about Gu Yu.

“Impossible. The Demonic God’s strength is roughly on par with just a regular deity. Even though it’s not exactly common to see supernatural beings with such strength, there are still a fair number of them around. Anyway, his power is peanuts compared to the power gained from the Six Paths of Reincarnation, so you don’t have to worry at all.”

When he heard that, Lu Wu nodded. Then, he asked, “Also, the Demonic God was chasing after Hiderigami, right? Where is he now?”

Bei Li smiled enigmatically as she said, “That old corpse in the Burial Grounds belongs to the mysterious man who was once hailed as the strongest in Beiqi!”

.....

“Kill Hiderigami for me. In return, I will grant you unlimited power!” the Demonic God’s voice echoed in Gu Yu’s mind again.

“Hiderigami? Where is he now?”

Gu Yu had a deep impression of Hiderigami. Hiderigami was over 300 feet tall, and commanded a powerful army of zombies. Although he sustained a powerful blow from the Demonic God that sent him flying, he was somehow still alive.

“He’s right here!”

Just as the Demonic God’s last word fell, a scene appeared in his mind.

The ground was littered with corpses, while large numbers of bones piled up into mountains. There were even the skeletal remains of several gigantic dragons amongst the carnage. This entire place seemed barren and unforgiving to anyone who laid eyes on it.

“He is hiding here. Help me kill him, and I’ll bestow upon you insurmountable power!”

As Gu Yu heard that, his expression became troubled. To be frank, he did not like that Hiderigami guy either. If it was not him, the Demonic God would still be a little kid of the Giant Tribe, living happily ever after.

However, he was aware of Hiderigami’s strength. Even if millions of players tried to rush him at once, they would still be hard-pressed to defeat him.

“I’m not strong enough to go against him,” Gu Yu said honestly.

At this moment, deep underneath the mountain, a pair of evil-looking eyes snapped open. Within the irises, lava and burning flames overlapped, painting a picture of a burning hell.

At the same time, a wave of evil energy exploded from underground, funnelling through the horn to reach the peak of the mountain.

The white-haired old man, who was drinking in his hut, suddenly opened his eyes. Shock colored his face, but he shook his head right after. He picked up his urn of alcohol and continued to enjoy its contents.

“I won’t stop you this time. Let’s hope that you will cease your evil deeds when your obsession is fulfilled.”

At the peak of the mountain, a dense black mist started to form. A pair of red eyes appeared in the mist, shining with a bloody crimson light.

“You can’t do it, but I can!”

Just as the voice echoed, the black mist seemed to turn sentient, driving its way into Gu Yu’s body.

Lu Wu's heart skipped a beat when he saw that scene.

“Argh!” Gu Yu howled in agony as a wave of negative emotions flooded his mind.

A few moments later...

“Argh!”

The Demonic God was silent for a few beats.

“Why can't I possess it? Why is your soul attached so stubbornly to your body? Why? I can't believe this!”

The black mist started to toss and turn inside his body, battering itself against his torso.

“Arghhh! Arghhhhhhhh!” Gu Yu was still howling pitifully.

After several moments of this, the Demonic God was completely befuddled.

“Argh, my head is about to explode!”

“Cease your whining!”

The Demonic God shouted angrily as the black mist gushed back out of Gu Yu's body. Its red eyes once again appeared in front of Gu Yu.

“An immovable soul. Which deity are you a descendant of?”

“You piece of shit! I was originally considering how I could seek vengeance for you, but now that's just wishful thinking! How dare you try to possess my body!?” Gu Yu snapped back angrily as he cradled his aching head.

# Chapter 75 - Hidden Quest

As Gu Yu's soul was immovable, the pair of evil eyes turned its gaze onto Sun Qi, who was trembling while standing at the side.

“Woof!” Sun Qi was so scared that he barked on reflex.

However, the Demonic God merely spared him a glance before turning its attention back onto Gu Yu.

Wait, is that contempt I see? Pah! You have bad taste in vessels! Sun Qi was scared, but he was also grumbling in his mind.

“Lend me your body as a vessel, which will be returned after I kill Hiderigami. When that is done, I will grant you enormous power!” the pair of eyes stared directly at Gu Yu as the voice resounded in his head.

“Fuck off! I'm not interested in lending anything!” Gu Yi replied angrily.

Right at this moment, the game's notification tone chimed:

[The Ancient Grudge (Hidden Quest): Let the Demonic God assume control of your body for three hours. When the lending period is over, you will receive the Demonic God's strength as a reward!]

.....

“Are you sure about this?” Bei Li asked as she looked at Lu Wu, seemingly feeling touched.

“Yup. Since you said that you owe the Demonic God a favor, then I agree with it!” Lu Wu replied with a charming smile on his face.

“Thanks a lot. But rest assured, it's only for three hours. When the three hours are up, the artifact will remove the Demonic God's evil consciousness

from his body. Gu Yu will definitely not be harmed!” Bei Li said confidently.

Lu Wu nodded. He trusted Bei Li’s decision.

.....

As the mission appeared, deep underground, a floating contract appeared in the Demonic God’s mind.

[Swearing on the Demonic God’s body, under the witness of the Six Paths of Reincarnation, Gu Yu’s body shall be borrowed for three hours. Upon completion, power shall be granted to the host!]

The mission appeared at one side, while the other side received a Supreme Reincarnation contract. Both sides were stunned.

It seems that he is truly the descendant of a deity...

Now, the Demonic God was sure of Gu Yu’s identity.

On the other hand, Gu Yu’s determined attitude started to waver when he saw the mission. This was especially tempting as it was a Hidden Quest, meaning that it would not appear anymore if he chose to ignore it.

After a few seconds of contemplation, Gu Yu looked up and said awkwardly, “Umm... Mr. Demonic God... maybe we can discuss this just a little more?”

“Say no more! I agree with your reincarnation contract, I only need three hours!” the Demonic God replied.

Gu Yu was speechless at how fast the Demonic God agreed to this.

The Demonic God then left a mental imprint on the reincarnation contract, while Gu Yu decided to accept the mission.

“Emancipate your body!” the demon’s voice appeared in Gu Yu’s mind once again as the black mist attempted to re-enter his body.

At this point, Lu Wu finally lifted the ownership restrictions on Gu Yu's body.

Gu Yu instantly sensed that his body was no longer under his control. Although he could still observe what was going on in the outside world, he had lost the ability to manipulate his actions.

However, what happened next shocked Gu Yu to the core.

[Gained buff: Demonic God's strength, all attributes increased by 1000 points.]

[Gained buff: Demonic God's blood source, all attributes increased by 3000 points.]

[Gained buff: Demonic God's negative energy, immunity to negative emotions granted.]

[Gained buff: Demonic God's divine body, defense increased by 60%.]

[Gained buff: Demonic God's Giant talent, all attributes increased by 300 points.]

[Gained buff: The Ancient Heart, HP increased by 20 times.]

[Gained buff: Blessing of the Demonic God, dark attribute skills are now 300% stronger.]

[Obtained title: Great Emperor of Feng Du, all attributes increased by 5000 points.]

[Obtained title: Great Emperor of You Du, all attributes increased by 5000 points.]

[Obtained title: Great Emperor of Dong Yue, all attributes increased by 5000 points.]

[Gained the Demonic God's ultimate belief: Immense Bloody Sea, access to blood manipulation granted.]

[Obtained the divine scoreboard of the underworld, status [Immortality] granted.]

.....

A series of notifications popped up continuously, completely throwing Gu Yu for a loop. As the notifications kept on appearing, he could feel that his body was being flooded with endless power.

The good thing was that this power was not under his control, but rather the Demonic God's evil consciousness. If not, Gu Yu's body might have imploded on the spot due to the immense overflow of strength.

The newly empowered Gu Yu stood up slowly. A pair of flame-wreathed black wings sprouted from his back. Flames that were the color of blood burned in his eyes.

At this moment, Gu Yu had the absurd feeling that he could kill ten people at once by flicking them away with his bare hands. The power was so terrifyingly strong that even Gu Yu's soul was trembling from the pressure.

“I will keep my promise. Once everything is done, your body shall be returned to you, deity descendant!”

Upon saying that, Gu Yu's face morphed into a smirk. Then, he sank downwards and launched himself up into the sky with great force. The mountain peak crumbled from the aftershocks of his takeoff.

“Bring him along!” Gu Yu urged the Demonic God when he caught sight of Sun Qi tumbling in the air.

The Demonic God glanced at Sun Qi before stretching out his right hand. A wisp of black mist emerged, wrapping around Sun Qi and securing him in place to fly behind them.

Then, the Demonic God flapped his wings. The world turned into a blur and everything around them disappeared into a sea of white light.

When their surroundings became clear again, Gu Yu and Sun Qi noticed that they were hovering above a clearing that was littered by corpses.

Sun Qi, who was stunned speechless, suddenly thought of something. He quickly opened up the settings menu and turned on live streaming.

[Oh my god, my boss transformed into an evil god! He's going to bring disaster onto the Land of Beiqi. What should I do?]

As the Demonic God surveyed the corpse-littered clearing, he suddenly plummeted downwards, crashing into the earth like a meteor.

When the countless bones spirits that spawned in the burial grounds, as well as the players that were grinding in this area lifted their heads, they were shocked to see a blazing ball of flame descend from the sky, crashing thunderously into the ground.

Blinding rays of light were emitted from the impact point.

Kaboom!

Originating from the point of impact, all the skeletons and corpses within a five mile radius were obliterated by the tremendous wave of energy. Right in the middle of it was a crater than spanned a few hundred feet. Everything within the area of attack was destroyed by the Demonic God's unbelievable strength.

“Hiderigami!”

The Demonic God roared angrily. He raised his fist, and drove it viciously into the ground.

Boom!

The ground trembled under the force of his blow.

.....



At this moment, Sun Qi's live streaming channel had gained a truckload of viewers.

“This is the first thing I see upon joining! What the hell happened? (shocked emoji)”

“Who's this guy? How can he be so strong? Is he a Super Saiyan?”

“It's like a meteor crashing into Earth! What the fuck, who is this burning guy? Can anyone enlighten us?”

“Where is the host? Can you please explain what's happening? Why does this guy bear such a grudge toward the ground? Why is he tearing up the earth so badly?”

“The host is the little dog, right? No wonder he looks so familiar. (laughing emoji)”

“Little white doggy, please explain what's happening in your livestream! We want all the juicy details!”

Sun Qi replied: “Fellow friends, maybe you won't believe this, but this guy is my boss. He is also the leader of the Myth Guild, known to most by his username Invincible\_Loneliness. Currently he is possessed by the Demonic God, which means that he is currently destroying the world. As for the reason why he kept pummeling the ground, my hypothesis is that he's trying to drill a hole right through Earth as a warm up activity!

# Chapter 76 - The Demonic God Vs. Hiderigami

Soon after, Sun Qi's livestream broadcast was shared to several popular forums by his viewers, which attracted more people to the channel.

Everyone was shocked by Gu Yu's transformation into the Demonic God. They could not imagine that a single player could attain such strength.

"Hiderigami!" the Demonic God bellowed. He raised his hand again as black stripes started to appear on his palm. These stripes started to swirl quickly as they gathered energy.

"Reveal yourself!" the Demonic God clenched his fist, grabbing the energy ball that had coalesced from the stripes. Then, he smashed it forcefully into the ground.

Boom!

The earth crumbled as debris flew everywhere. It was like a tectonic event, land plates shifting back and forth, thrown into turmoil. The Demonic God's imposing aura permeated the atmosphere of the burial grounds, making even the usually bloodthirsty bones spirits tremble in place.

Vicious gales were whipped up by the commotion, which gusted around the entire place. It was as if Armageddon had fallen upon the land.

In the comments section:

"Oh my god, this is not the Invincible\_Loneliness that I used to know! This is so frightening..."

"How much money did he have to pay the game company for them to make him so overpowered? Is he still human?"

“This strength... is it possible for a player to achieve that? I’m so excited right now!”

“Even the earth crumbled from the force of his attack... is he really The Demonic God? I thought that the white doggy was just joking about it.”

“Are they going to release a new expansion pack soon? The Invasion of the Demonic God?”

“This is way too scary... Invincible\_Loneliness can probably go up against Tao Wu at this point!”

“I guess Invincible\_Loneliness must have triggered some hidden quest, which caused him to be possessed by the Demonic God. Do you think us players can even take him on in this state? I’m scared!”

.....

When the earth cracked apart, a gigantic coffin that was the color of blood started to rise up from underground.

When he caught sight of the blood coffin, the Demonic God’s red eyes glowed eerily. He lifted his right leg, and leaned forward slightly. Right after that, he disappeared, leaving an immense crater in his wake.

“Hahaha! Hiderigami!”

A grotesque smile appeared on the Demonic God’s face as he appeared in thin air. He slammed his fist downward as a gigantic hovering fist formed from his condensed Blood Qi, crashing into the blood coffin.

Boom!

Crimson rays shone from the blood coffin upon impact, staining the world with the color of blood. That scene reminded everyone of hell.

Under the unending assault of ferocious energy, the blood coffin started to emit ominous cracking sounds. Just a moment later, it exploded into pieces,

revealing the red-haired, crimson-eyed Hiderigami that was encased in the coffin.

Boom!

The crimson rays of light intensified, creating a halo around the Hiderigami's body.

The Hiderigami suddenly opened his eyes. His mouth fell open as he inhaled deeply. The crimson light that was bathing the outside world became distorted due to the tremendous suction force.

The Hiderigami's mouth gradually turned into a vortex, and the suction intensified as it sucked all of the blood rays into its mouth.

The awakened Hiderigami turned his head and looked at Gu Yu, who was possessed by the Demonic God. There was a complicated expression on his face. He had never thought that he would be discovered by the Demonic God.

“You've become even stronger. Who knew that a mere wisp of evil thought would possess such tremendous power,” Hiderigami spoke slowly, his hoarse voice echoing throughout the area.

“You were the one who taught me that being emotionless was the only way to make me stronger. I have you to thank for this,” a murderous intent glinted in the Demonic God's eyes. In a flash, he appeared next to Hiderigami, hurling a fist directly at its face.

Since it was facing off against the Demonic God, Hiderigami dared not be too arrogant. It raised its own fist to counter the Demonic God's attack. Their fists collided, emitting a wave of immense energy. Blinding light that was accompanied by a roaring wind spreading out, dispersing the clouds in the sky.

“Do you think that a mere wisp of demonic thought would be enough to kill me? How ridiculous!”

Since it had been discovered, the violence within it was triggered as well. Its long red hair flowed despite the lack of wind as blood-red Qi seeped from its body and surrounded its entire being. The blood-red Qi flowed copiously from its source, painting stripes of red on the ground.

“Roar!”

As Hiderigami roared, the blood-red Qi swirled and condensed in its left fist. It hurled out its Qi-charged fist, causing the Demonic God to be blasted away.

This blow was extremely powerful, plowing a bottomless fissure that was a few hundred feet long along the ground.

Even though Hiderigami had the upper hand right now, he still looked worried.

He knew very clearly that the Demonic God was an underworld deity who was recognized by the Six Paths of Reincarnation. He won't be defeated that easily, despite being a mere wisp of evil thought.

“Damn you, God of the Underworld!”

A terrifying roar that seemed to come from the Nine Nether Regions of the Underworld could be heard coming from the fissure. Then, a gigantic blood-colored hand broke through the earth, appearing from the depths of the fissure.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The earth crumbled again as a gigantic figure climbed out from the ground.

Looking at this gargantuan blood-colored figure that was hundreds of feet tall, Hiderigami's pupils contracted.

“It's not the end yet!” the Demonic God got to his feet as he straightened himself. He then looked at Hiderigami with a mocking look on his face.

These two figures looked at each other for a moment before disappearing at the same time. Then, they once again collided in the middle.

Every hit and strike they made landed forcefully on their opponent. The energy generated from their clashing was channeled to their surroundings. The earth kept giving away as it could not support such pressure.

Sun Qi, who was hovering high above them in the cradle of the Demonic God's black mist, was completely flabbergasted by this scene.

Just like Sun Qi, every single player who was watching the fight was also stunned by the sheer strength they saw, which was beyond their imagination.

“Umm... if the Demonic God really invades us... then what should we do!?”

“I guess we would be bound to an infinite cycle of throwing ourselves against him and dying. Even if we repeated that cycle hundreds of times, I think it's unlikely that we would escape the fate of being killed instantly...”

“That kind of power is truly terrifying, it's practically beyond what I could have imagined...”

“I'm scared to death! When gods fight, us commoners can only shiver in fright...”

“This is indeed a fight between two deities. Luckily I didn't go to the burial grounds today with my friend to farm drops from the bones spirits, or else we'd probably get torn up by the force of their fight. (facepalm)”

“This is way too scary, please... Mr. Demonic God, please don't invade us! Everybody, let's start a thread and bring it to the attention of the developers. If the unthinkable happens, whatever rune warriors, whatever cursed apostles, whatever hidden character classes would still be unable to avoid the fate of being killed instantly (facepalm)”

.....

The battle was still raging on.

Both parties were equally strong, so they have reached a stalemate.

“I call upon the Nine Zombified Snakes!”

Their fists collided again. This time, Hiderigami eye’s flashed crimson as nine huge blood-red snakes appeared behind him.

“Asura’s Eight Arms!”

At this moment, the Demonic God snarled as six arms extended from his back.

Crash! Boom! Boom!

The battle intensified as the nine zombified snakes and the Demonic God’s six arms clashed frenziedly.

The earth caved in further. The burial grounds were utterly ravaged by the ferocity of their attacks, causing lava to gush from the cracks on the ground, which formed magma pillars around the battleground.

In the comments section:

“Oh my god, if they continue to fight like this, the entire burial grounds will disappear.”

“Let’s all put our hands together and pray that they won’t migrate to another place to continue their fight. Please gods, don’t come to the Mansion of the Dead!”

“I have a question... who is the one fighting against the Demonic God? How can he be so strong as well? He is not inferior at all!”

“I guess he’s a deity, too. I heard the Demonic God call him Hiderigami, so it seems like he is the legendary ancestor of the zombies!”

“Oh my god, this is so motivational! If I train for another twenty years on this account, do you guys think I can possess such strength as well?”

“Replying to the above, nothing is impossible! There is a relatively high level of freedom in this game, so you might even come across a miracle and possess such strength in just one year! Look at Invincible\_Loneliness, he was talking about buying soul coins to upgrade to purple equipment in the group chat yesterday. But today, he has turned into the Demonic God! There’s no need for him to get any purple equipment now.”



# Chapter 77 - The Superiority Of The Demonic God

As the news of the majestic fight spread through the game, more and more players tuned into the livestream broadcast. At this point, the broadcast had amassed a whopping 4.5 million viewers, which meant that practically all players of the game were watching.

The comment section was flooded by numerous terrifying comments, as everyone was shocked by the unprecedented scale of the battle.

Other than the players, even the elite of the land of Beiqi were alerted by the Demonic God's presence.

Within the Illusion Zone, a pure white crane froze as it turned to look northwest. It mumbled uncertainly, "I sense the Demonic God's aura. Did he escape?"

Within Evil Nightmare City, the 3,000 Evil Yin Soldiers who were slumbering deep in the palace opened their eyes, which flashed with an eerie green light.

Within the Ascension Zone, the Ghostly King of Snakes, who was devouring a huge boar, started to tremble involuntarily.

In the Void Ocean, thirty thousand meters below the sea, the slumbering Tao Wu opened his eyes. Then, he raised his head and a stream of bubbles escaped from his mouth. It was clear that he was extremely excited.

On the Barren Grassland...

In the Arctic Abyss...

Among the Northern Rocks...

.....

One by one, these elites were alerted by the Demonic God's aura. All of them turned to face the direction of the Burial Grounds, falling deep in thought.

On the Cliffs of Desperation, the white-haired old man pushed the door open. His hump-backed figure faced the Burial Grounds as his murky eyes gradually cleared up.

“I truly hope that after you exact your revenge, you would finally let go of your anger and negative emotions and be a righteous deity. Only then would I be able to fulfill the order of setting you free!”

The Demonic God and Hiderigami were still engaged in battle. As the fight intensified, both parties continued to dish out immense area-of-effect attacks. The scale of destruction wrought upon their battleground caused many players' jaws to drop.

The Demonic God's eight arms held a blood-colored battle axe each, while two of the zombified snakes behind Hiderigami had already been decapitated.

Facing off against such a tough yet persistent enemy, Hiderigami became more and more agitated. He stretched out his hands and drew several Divine Seals in front of him. A blood array appeared in the air behind him, which expanded rapidly and covered his entire being in the blink of an eye.

“Let the sky and earth be awash in blood!”

Upon hearing Hiderigami's enraged howl, the blood array rose into the sky as its surface area increased rapidly. In a few moments, it had spread out to cover the entire sky.

A series of sharp blood pillars appeared within the formation. Then, they aimed themselves at the Demonic God and rocketed toward him.

“Roar!”

The Demonic God raised all eight of his muscular arms as he bellowed at the sky. Then, he started to hurl his arms around, repelling the projectiles that attempted to pierce his skin.

As the number of blood pillars increased, the Demonic God's arms turned into a blur, frenziedly blocking the aerial attacks.

“Great Demonic Seal – red!”

Since the blood pillars were getting too much for him to handle, the Demonic God raised his right leg and stomped forcefully on the ground.

A single horn slowly emerged from his forehead as the scorching hell in his eyes turned into blazing hellfire.

Then, a rapidly whirling ball of purple energy started to gather at the tip of his horn.

“Buzz... buzz...”

As the buzzing sound of energy gathering started to resound through the battlefield, the purple energy ball became larger and larger, until it reached full formation. At that instant, the Demonic God suddenly stopped waving his arms around and aimed his horn at the blood array in the sky.

“Roar!”

A pillar of purple light tore through the sky and collided with the blood array.

At that moment, the sky was shrouded by rays of blinding light. Waves of excess energy radiated throughout the battleground.

“Don't you dare, Demonic God!”

Hiderigami arched his head as he looked at the sky. Endless streams of Blood Qi emanated from his body, rising up into the blood array to provide a steady source of power.

Currently, the Demonic God's eyes were cloaked by a layer of purple energy. He opened his mouth slightly, where more purple energy started to congregate once again.

“Roar!”

Another beam of light was emitted from the Demonic God's mouth. It barrelled through the sky and converged with the first pillar of energy. At that instant, the combined force of both energy pillars generated an unprecedented level of destructive power.

Crack!

The blood array in the sky fractured, with cracks spreading all across it like spiderwebs.

Blood-colored fragments started to fall from the sky turning into a shower of crimson light. Hiderigami's blood array had been shattered completely.

“It's over!” the Demonic God snarled as he raised his head to look at Hiderigami, who was clearly in panic after this turn of events.

“Great Demonic Art – Calamity!”

When the Demonic God's last word fell, a wisp of purple vapor drifted from the direction of the Cliffs of Desperation and dissolved into his body.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The earth started to quake as the Demonic God's skin turned from red to purple. Scales that were carved with mysterious symbols erupted all over his body, while his body mass and height started to increase exponentially. In the blink of an eye, he had surpassed even the underworld deities and turned into a colossal presence that was as intimidating as a tremendous mountain.

Hiderigami was utterly shocked when it saw this scene. It had never imagined that the Demonic God would possess such frightening power

despite being a mere wisp of evil thought. Even when it went all out, it was still unable to defeat him.

In the comments section:

“Oh my god...”

“That kind of power is so shocking that I’m falling into depression...”

“We shouldn’t mess with the Myth Guild in the future, their boss has turned into such a monster! (facepalm emoji)”

“(Blushing emoji) This is so awesome! Watching this battle play out made my blood boil and almost made me bust a nut. Don’t ask me why, it’s just too exciting!”

“Okay, I’ve made my decision! I want to have this kind of power, too. If one year is not enough then I’ll take two years, if that’s still not enough then I’m willing to spend my entire lifetime training just to experience the overwhelming power of a deity!”

“I agree with the guy above, my new ambition is to become a god!”

“The battle’s coming to an end, and it seems like Hiderigami is about to lose. I think the new Invasion of the Demonic God expansion pack is coming soon, let’s all think of a way to survive this...”

“Don’t worry, I have just the perfect strategy! We can try to lure this Demonic God into Tao Wu’s domain, and watch while they duke it out!”

“The guy above is an idiot. He must be autistic, intelligence assessment complete!”

“The guy who suggested that we should let the Demonic God and Tao Wu fight each other, can you tell us how exactly are we luring them into such a situation? (laughing emoji)”

.....

Looking at the newly evolved Demonic God, Hiderigami's eyes filled with fear. He had come to the realization that he would not be able to take on even a weaker clone of the Demonic God.

Deities were still deities, even if they were sealed. The Demonic God was not at his full power, but his current state was not something to be taken lightly.

The titan's gigantic hand started to fall, causing immense wind pressure to weigh down on Hiderigami. Hiderigami raised his head to howl in frustration, as he knew that he would most probably meet his end here.

# Chapter 78 - The Great Emperor Of Dong Yue

As the giant hand was about to smash into Hiderigami, a virtual illusion of a golden cauldron suddenly emerged from the Demonic God's body.

Dong!

The sound of the golden cauldron resounded loudly as it vibrated gently.

“Boom!”

Something unexpected had happened. In a split second, the cauldron's sounds had destroyed the newly formed Great Demonic Red Body. The Demonic God turned pale as he fell from the sky.

“The Great Emperor of Dong Yue!”

The cauldron's sounds made Hiderigami look fearful as well.

If what he felt for the Demonic God was fear, what he felt for the Great Emperor of Dong Yue, who controlled the life and death of the Underworld, must've been terror.

“Bang!”

The Demonic God's body fell and smashed onto the ground.

“Why, why did you stop me!? Why!?” the Demonic God got up from the ground, his eyes ablaze with wild purple flames as he stared at the golden cauldron in deep confusion.

“First she stopped me, now you are doing it as well... why!?”

As the Demonic God's negative aura increased, his physical power gained momentum once again. Staring at Hiderigami, the Demonic God roared once again as his face contorted in anger.

“Great Demonic Seal – Red!”

As his physical power increased, his form began to change again.

“Dong!”

The bell rang again, and the Great Demonic Red Body collapsed immediately again.

“Argh!” the Demonic God roared angrily at the sight of the giant cauldron.

This time the Demonic God did not attack Hiderigami. Instead he swung his fists toward the giant golden cauldron.

“Dong!”

The cauldron rang again, causing the Demonic God to be bound by an invisible power right on the spot. He struggled angrily and bellowed unyieldingly.

.....

Lu Wu, who was watching the battle closely, was stunned by what he saw. He looked toward Bei Li and asked, “Who is this Great Emperor of Dong Yue? Hiderigami looks terrified. Also, how can such a powerful Demonic God lose his battle power just by hearing some cauldron's ringing!”

Bei Li replied with a solemn expression, “He is one of the strongest deities in the Underworld who has power over life and death. Together with the Great Emperor of You Du and the Great Emperor of Feng Du, they are equals. All three deities hold the actual divine powers of the Underworld!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu was shocked. He did not expect the Underworld to have so many tough and powerful deities.



“Wu, the Underworld is infinitely huge. Furthermore, it is split into the east and the west. It is vast and boundless. Even deities like the three great emperors are only rulers over the East Underworld. Do not be too surprised, take it one step at a time. I believe you will achieve such power some day!”

Lu Wu nodded his head in appreciation of Bei Li’s encouragement. However, he could not help but ask curiously, “Then how is this Demonic God related to the Great Emperor of Dong Yue?”

“I do not know the specific details either, but I guess it must have something to do with the Demonic God’s previous lifetime. In his past lifetime, he must have been idolized by the Great Emperor of Dong Yue, otherwise his body would not have bore the seal of the emperor.”

“As to why the Great Emperor of Dong Yue is stopping the Demonic God from exacting his revenge, I have no idea,” Bei Li shook her head in perplexity.

Lu Wu nodded his head in half understanding, and then he looked toward the battleground once again.

.....

Seeing the Demonic God bound, the initially fearful Hiderigami showed expressions of surprise. He did not understand why the mighty Great Emperor would stop the Demonic God.

He definitely did not think that the Great Emperor cared about him. He knew his worth, he was a nobody in the eyes of the Great Emperor. Yet he had to seize this chance to turn the tides.

Hiderigami disappeared from where he stood, and when he reappeared he was behind the Demonic God. The remaining seven blood snakes opened their bloody mouths at the same time and they attacked together in the direction of Hiderigami’s fist as he smashed toward the Demonic God.

“Rumble!” The snakes bit down on the Demonic God’s body at the same time and tore away multiple pieces of blood and flesh. Hiderigami focused

all his energy and penetrated the Demonic God's body with one fist, causing a mist of blood to sprout all over.

“Roar!” Hiderigami opened his mouth revealing his sharp fangs and bit down hard on the Demonic God's neck.

Suddenly the blood of the Demonic God's body faded at a visible speed. On the contrary, Hiderigami's wounds started to mend as he gained blood energy.

Excitement came into Hiderigami's eyes as he felt the power of Blood Qi pump into his body. Little did he expect that his old injuries would begin to heal slowly at that moment.

Hence Hiderigami made another move. The seven blood snakes pounced onto the Demonic God once again and coiled around him at the bite spot.

This time, Hiderigami intended to devour the Demonic God to repair his own body.

Looking at the struggling and weakening Demonic God, Hiderigami's bloodlust grew stronger.

Just as Hiderigami thought that the Demonic God would be fully swallowed by him, the golden giant cauldron disappeared all of a sudden as it morphed into starlight and entered the Demonic God's body again.

The binding from the giant cauldron disappeared as well.

As that happened, Hiderigami felt a fierce surge of power flowing out from the Demonic God's body. Facing the Demonic God's struggle, Hiderigami exhausted all his energy to continue trapping him as this was his only chance of winning.

In the comments section:

“What a surprising twist... the Demonic God seems restricted by external forces, it looks like Hiderigami will win this time!”

“Hiderigami won by cheating, rubbish! What a good-for-nothing!”

“Asking for enlightenment, what is that giant cauldron, is it really that powerful? Is it an artifact? Can we obtain it?”

“Hey buddy, you have too many questions!”

“Finally the artifact has been sighted, this cauldron will be mine!”

“Artifacts can only be obtained by those who are fated to have it, according to my predictions I think I am one of them!”

“To be honest, previously I was overconfident of our Beiqi Army’s powers. After watching this battle, I feel like we have much to improve, too many powerful bosses out there, so scary!”

“What is there to be afraid of, sooner or later, we will have the ability to kill gods, too. Long live the Beiqi Army!”

“Our Beiqi Army is fearless and unstoppable!”

.....

Following the giant cauldron’s disappearance, the Demonic God’s physical strength returned. As he felt the binding on his body, he growled angrily. A bright red head popped out from his shoulder and bit Hiderigami’s neck.

With the bite of this second skull, blood energy poured into the Demonic God’s body once more as it extracted continuously from Hiderigami.

Seeing this, Hiderigami’s eyes glistened with bloodlust as he accelerated his devour of the Demonic God.

The energy from both sides exploded at the same time as they tried to swallow each other.

The situation ended up in a stalemate.

In the comments section:

“Umm... the fighting was pretty intense, but now it looks a little ambiguous...”

“Swallowing one another? Their postures do look shady... hehe...”

“Whose side are you on?”

“To answer the question above, they should die together, I don't think the Beiqi Army could take either one of them (facepalm).”

“I agree, it would please everyone if they just died together!”

“I would like to express my support for the lonely, invincible, and varying Demonic God. At least he looks more handsome than Hiderigami.”

“Dumb comment above, can looks bring food on the table?”

“Obviously Hiderigami is the more handsome one, especially that blood-red long hair of his, he looks so cool!”

The audience who was watching the livestream broadcast started to veer off in their discussion after witnessing the scene.

# Chapter 79 - : North Sea

In the Burial Grounds.

The swallowing contest between the Demonic God and Hiderigami was still ongoing.

But what terrified Hiderigami was that he was losing Blood Qi faster than the Demonic God. If this continued, not only would he fail in devouring the Demonic God, he would be swallowed up whole by the Demonic God instead.

Coming to this realization, intense hatred flowed out of Hiderigami's eyes. Thus he changed his mind. The seven blood snakes let go of their bites altogether. At the same time, his neck was twisted and skull ripped off his body.

A mist of blood sprinkled in the air. A headless Hiderigami took a few steps back. Then, his body got distorted and he flew into the sky in the form of blood light.

“Argh! Hiderigami!”

Seeing this, the Demonic God raised his head and tossed Hiderigami's skull away. At the same time, he jumped up and rushed toward that mist of blood.

He had suffered for hundreds of thousands of years to have the chance to kill Hiderigami today. He could not let Hiderigami escape just like that.

The Demonic God's body approached rapidly as he transformed his right hand into a bloody giant hand in the air and pressed down on the blood mist.

Just as the hand was about to come into contact with the blood mist, a piece of the game's contract appeared in the Demonic God's mind. He stopped mid-air and fell from the sky.

The ability to reincarnate according to the contract had been activated. The three-hour limit to this body's usage was officially over.

As Gu Yu regained control of his own body, he stared at the blood mist unwillingly with regret.

When the Demonic God possessed him, he felt his anger burning inside him. The Demonic God's vengeful hatred toward Hiderigami was far deeper than he imagined.

If he could, Gu Yu was willing to lend his body to the Demonic God until he could kill Hiderigami.

But now everything was too late. The blood mist was already gone and Gu Yu fell heavily onto the ground.

Without the support of the Demonic God, Gu Yu's health bar dropped significantly by half.

.....

In the deepest part of the Cliffs of Desperation.

The Demonic God was bellowing wildly.

He wanted to break through the constraints of the land and continue fighting. He was unwilling to let things end like that!

Multiple golden chains appeared with each struggle of the Demonic God, flickering with glory in the darkness as it locked the land. This was a sealing power that the Demonic God could not resist no matter how much he struggled.

He was so close to victory yet he had failed. How much time did he have to wait for the next chance? Ten thousand years? A hundred thousand years?

The negative emotions in the Demonic God's body skyrocketed once again, causing his body to inflate.

At this moment, the golden chains tightened up all of a sudden, suppressing the Demonic God's power forcefully. It made the Demonic God roar in pain.

At the top of the mountain, a silhouette of an old man emerged slowly. The old man stepped to the side of the pillar pagoda.

Glancing at the black skeletons on the pillar, yearning flowed from the old man's eyes. He caressed the pillar gently.

“Demonic God, control your power!”

As the old man spoke, a force flowed from his arm into the pillar. Immediately, the golden chains stopped constricting.

“North Sea, I do not need your sympathy! Get out of here!” a pair of blood red eyes appeared on the mountaintop.

“I have never pitied you, I even wanted to kill you!” the old man chuckled as he looked at the blood-colored eyes formed by the black mist.

“So many years have passed, I no longer have hatred for you,” the old man spoke once more.

“I do not need friends! I don't! Get out of here!” the Demonic God said fiercely.

“Do not be silly, who will keep you company and talk to you if I am really gone.”

The Demonic God fell silent as he heard this. The anger in his heart simmered suddenly.

“North Sea, let me go and I will give you infinite power!” the Demonic God started to speak again.

“You may bluff anyone and everyone, but did you think you could use your tricks on me?” The old man knocked on the pillar helplessly.

As he had tried these a few times, the Demonic God was used to the old man's rejections. After a moment of silence he opened his mouth again.

"North Sea, please help me!" this time the Demonic God lowered his voice as he pleaded.

"Say it!" the old man imitated Gu Yu's tone.

"Bring the man that I possessed back to me!"

"You want to possess him again?" the old man asked in puzzlement.

"This is what I promised him, I have to keep that promise."

The old man stared at him with eyes widened, "This is not like you at all. A bastard like you would keep his promises?"

The Demonic God glared at the old man, "Will you help or not!?"

"Alright, since you rarely beg me, I will help you this time."

The old man smiled then his body slowly faded and disappeared.

.....

In the Burial Grounds, Gu Yu and Sun Qi, who fell on the ground at the same time, stared at each other.

"Boss? Demonic God?" Sun Qi raised his head and asked carefully.

Gu Yu slapped the back of Sun Qi's head and asked, "What do you think!?"

"You're back, boss?" joy appeared on Sun Qi's face while he discreetly closed the live broadcast that was running.

In the comments section:

"You're a whore, dog! What do you mean by shutting down the broadcast at this point, I still don't know what is going on!"



“Dog you have changed, how dare you shut down the live broadcast. Don’t let me see you out there, otherwise I will tame you!”

“Good job dog, let’s see if I will break your leg when I see you outside!”

“Ah, what happened, why did the Demonic God disappear? Also, Hiderigami seems to have fled. Has Invincible\_Loneliness recovered, or is he still possessed by the Demonic God? Is this going to remain an unsolved mystery?”

The darkened live streaming channel triggered a barrage of scolding in the comment section.

As Gu Yu was about to answer Sun Qi, a flash of white light swept them up from the ground and carried them toward the direction of the Cliff of Desperations.

The sight in front of them went blur and when their vision recovered, Gu Yu and Sun Qi realized that they had appeared in front of the white-haired old man’s wooden house again.

At that moment, the door creaked open.

“What are you doing? Why are you here again?” the white-haired old man looked at both of them in dislike.

The dumbfounded Gu Yu thought for a while and assumed that the Demonic God had summoned him. Therefore he said, “Dog, you stay here. I think I need to take a trip to the top.”

“Eh, do you mean to climb this mountain? Didn’t I tell you not to go?” the white-haired old man retrieved his walking stick from his back and looked ready for a fight.

They were speechless for a moment.

“Old man, you heard me wrong, I meant to say that I left something on the road so I have to go back and look for it. I will leave the dog here with you. I promise not to climb the mountain! ”

Facing the skeptical old man, Gu Yu promised once again that he would not hike the mountain and turned to leave promptly.

After seeing Gu Yu's departure, Sun Qi glanced at the white-haired old man's stare and smiled awkwardly.

“Silly dog, move aside. What are you laughing at?” the white-haired old man raised his leg to kick Sun Qi out and quickly closed his wooden door with a bang.

# Chapter 80 - Inheritance Of The Blood Seed

Glancing at the mountain peak that pierced through the sea of clouds, Gu Yu felt helpless.

He felt exhausted at the thought of climbing it again.

Although he had just spectated the battle between the Demonic God and Hiderigami, his body was still affected and his Attributes Menu showed that he was in a weak state.

Just as Gu Yu sighed and got ready to climb, a cloud of black vapor floated down from the top of the mountain, wrapping him in it, and the next thing he felt was weightlessness.

When the black vapor disappeared, Gu Yu realized that he had reached the top of the mountain, and a pair of evil-looking eyes were staring at him.

“Uhh... Demonic God, I desire power!” Gu Yu said frustratingly.

The Demonic God did not reply to him, but the black vapor suddenly became thicker and then lurched toward Gu Yu.

As Gu Yu felt unsteady, the picture of a bloody sea appeared in front of him and at the center of the bloody sea, a purple seed, nurtured by the bloody sea, shone while being shrouded in dense purple mist.

A bunch of data also came into view at this moment.

[The Demonic God's Apostles]:

Class description: After completing the Hidden Quest, you will be officially recognized by the Demonic God and be given the seed crystal from the

Demonic God's power to master the primary Blood Power. You will then obtain a special energy bar known as Blood Qi.

[Blood Qi Level 1]: After exhaustion, the recovering rate is 1% per minute. Consume Blood Qi for faster recovery.

Class ability: The Demonic God's Apostles, Evil Body, Flame of Blood, Sucking of Blood, Evil Eye Stare.

[Evil God's Apostles]: The inheritance granted by the Demonic God is blessed by the Gods, and health will be restored 1 point per second.

[Evil body – Beginner's level]: When this ability is initiated, 30% of Blood Qi is consumed, an increase of 150% for all attributes lasting for 30 minutes, and derivative abilities can be released.

[Flame of Blood]: With the apostle as the center, Naraka flames are summoned to burn in a large range. The damage diameter is 20 meters. This ability can only be used in the state of Evil Body, exhausting 30% of the Power of Blood Qi.

[Sucking of Blood]: Any blood within the range of 10-30 meters from the apostle can be absorbed into the body through manipulation after this ability is initiated, so as to recover both Blood Qi and health. This ability must be exerted in the state of Evil Body, exhausting 10-50% of the Power of Blood Qi.

[Evil eye stare]: When the Evil Eye Stare is initiated, all the targets that made eye contact with you will be eroded by negative emotions, and there is a chance that disorder, weakness and other negative states will take place. This ability must be used in the state of Evil Body, which exhausts 40% of the Power of Blood Qi.

Recommendation of class development: There is no specific direction for your class development, seek advice from the Demonic God!

While receiving the power from the Demonic God, the artifacts kept reorganizing the body of Gu Yu. Fortunately, this reorganization exhausted

only the inheritance power provided by the Demonic God, while Bei Li only needed to make a body vessel. Even so, it cost Lu Wu 1,000 soul coins.

However the Rune Master template used for transforming Gu Yu was directly stripped away by the artifact, and Lu Wu was not planning to return the material used to mold the body of a Rune Master, so he kept it.

After reorganizing, there was a huge change in Gu Yu's body.

His muscles became bigger like a dragon's, and his body became taller than before. On his back was a tattoo of a pair of flaming evil eyes.

Clenching his fist, he felt the power flowing through his body, which made Gu Yu a little too excited.

“Do you want to become stronger?” the evil eyes stared at Gu Yu, with a tempting voice echoing in his mind.

Gu Yu was shocked, and he thought that he would need to consult with the Demonic God regarding his class development which was shown on the Class Menu. So, he quickly opened his mouth and spoke, “Demonic God, how can I become stronger and more powerful?”

“Do you know that I gave you a Blood Seed? If you can cultivate it successfully, then you will master the Law of Bloody Darkness, which is one of the Laws of the Underworld. Do you understand what this will mean?”

Gu Yu was confused, “What does that mean?”

“If you are able to master any law among the Laws of the World, you will be qualified to be a god. As long as the Great Emperor grants you amnesty, you can become a new god!”

When he heard this, Gu Yu suddenly recalled his memories of the battle between the Demonic God and Hiderigami which almost destroyed the world, to which he became agitated and shouted, “Just name the price!”

The Demonic God showed a questioning look.

Realizing that he had said something wrong, Gu Yu smiled embarrassingly, “Demonic God, you are my boss now, teach me how to be strong!”

“The difficulty of cultivating the Blood Seed is far beyond your imagination. Maybe it will take you hundreds of thousands of years to cultivate and still fail to come up with the Seed of Blood Method, but I can help you to speed up!” the voice of the Demonic God reappeared in Gu Yu’s mind.

Gu Yu realized something and quickly asked, “Boss, I will try my best to do anything that you wish!”

“I have sensed the presence of Hiderigami, he is here! Find him and kill him!”

As soon as the Demonic God finished speaking, a picture appeared in the mind of Gu Yu.

A magnificent city stood on the earth, and above this city was a coffin floating in the sky. The city, however, was empty like a ghost city.

[Hatred That Cannot Be Annihilated (Class Upgrade Quest)]:

Quest description: Go to Evil Nightmare City, kill the weak Hiderigami and complete the instruction given by the Demonic God. There is no time limit for this quest.

Quest reward: Receive a prize from the Demonic God (Class development)

Gu Yu was stunned for a few seconds after he saw his new quest, and then he nodded solemnly toward the evil eyes to indicate his acceptance of the quest.

Although this quest was very difficult, at least there was no time limit, as long as he could continue to level up and grow stronger. Besides, his guild was continuously expanding, so he believed that he had the opportunity of completing the quest.

“Aren’t you afraid?” apparently his attitude made the Demonic God feel surprised.

“What is there to be afraid of, I am not even afraid of death!” Gu Yu chuckled.

“I admire you more and more, I find that you have no fear from the beginning to the end, even when I controlled your body previously, you... are good!” the voice of the Demonic God reappeared.

Gu Yu giggled, “Demonic God, is there anything else that you would like to request? If there is none, could you send me down the mountain?”

The Demonic God did not reply this time, but the black vapor resurfaced and surrounded Gu Yu.

When the black vapor was gone once again, Gu Yu realized that he had arrived at the wooden house.

At this moment, Gu Yu was in a good mood, he did not expect that he could get the inheritance so easily. Nothing could make him happier than this. Sure enough, one would need to roam around in this game to have the chance to find any hidden quest.

Taking a few steps forward, Gu Yu reached out his hand to knock on the wooden door, “Old man, I have come to pick up the dog, please open the door!”

After a while, the door creaked and opened, the old man walked out holding a red-faced Sun Qi.

“Take this silly dog away!”

After he had finished speaking, the old man tossed the drunken Sun Qi out.

“I don’t want to go, I still want to drink, I will not go if I don’t win today!” Sun Qi stumbled as he tried to stand up, walked forward a few steps and fell on the ground again.

“Let’s go, dog!” Gu Yu helplessly stepped forward and picked Sun Qi up.

“I... I am not going to leave, fill it up, we will fight until dawn!”

Sun Qi pushed Gu Yu’s hand away and fell to the ground. Then he stood up unsteadily and put his left hand on his waist. He pointed at the old man with his right hand and said with a red face, “You... you don’t look down on me... I definitely can... drink!”

“It’s kind of fun to see your dog get drunk!” the old man leaned on the door frame and drank the fruit wine from his cup as he chuckled.

“Silly dog, stop it!” Gu Yu who was utterly speechless at the moment tugged at one of the dog legs and carried Sun Qi on his shoulder.

After saying goodbye to the old man, Gu Yu began to descend the mountain while carrying Sun Qi.

Throughout the journey, Sun Qi talked nonsense and fidgeted the whole way. This annoyed Gu Yu so much that he almost could not resist smashing him to the ground and demonstrate his dog-punching skills.



# Chapter 81 - Five Elements

## Warlock

After the battle between the Demonic God and Hiderigami, the players had another goal.

They wished to have the power to cause chaos like the Demonic God and Hiderigami.

The battle was shocking and destroyed the original pride of many players. At this point only did they realize such a horrifying existence.

The players also understood that the two biggest advantages, quantity and immortality, would not play any role in this kind of battle.

It was also this battle that gave the players a greater ambitious prospect and inspired them to continue to become stronger.

At the same time, a large number of mage players in the forum began to complain that the mage had not yet been allowed to have any class advancement. They felt that with the constant class advancements of other professional players, their character class was going down the drain.

Lu Wu originally intended to put the three mage templates into use altogether. However, since the players were so demanding, Lu Wu decided to insert a mage class advancement template completed by Bei Li into the game first.

.....

After this update, the mage players who logged into the game were surprised to find that the mages' class advancement finally appeared.

The display arrived at the familiar scene for class description.

However what surprised the players was that the form of the new character class had changed a lot until the point that it was not even human-like.

Only a human-like form that completely consisted of blue energy stood in the middle of the scene.

[Class description]:

[Five Elements Warlock]: In order to comprehend the power of the five elements of heaven and earth, the body is abandoned for the sake of the truth and therefore incarnated into the spirits of the five elements, controlling the power of the five elements of heaven and earth, and exploring the ultimate meaning of the five elements!

Class specialty: Spiritual bodies of the five elements which are gold, wood, water, fire, and earth can be switched freely to control the five elements of heaven and earth.

Wearing equipment: Five Elements Bracelet

Class requirement: The default class must be a Mage.

After the introduction, the scene became dim and the blue figure moved.

“Water Turret!”

As soon as he said those words, streams of water which were connected to the ground extended out from the Five Elements Warlock’s body, holding him down firmly in place, and a gun barrel made of water slowly appeared in front of him.

Following that, the players were dumbfounded by what happened next. As the body of the Five Elements Warlock began to glow, the blue energy continuously flowed into the gun barrel in front of the body. Suddenly, countless water balls shot out and the sky was covered with a large number of water balls, which rained heavily onto a faraway place.

“Water Dragon Canon!”

Another skill was released. The blue laces connecting with the gun barrel started to glow and the barrel then expanded.

With a loud bang, a roaring water dragon shot out of the gun barrel and crashed into the distance.

“Rumble!” there was a deep pit at the place where it was hit, and the inside of the pit were frozen ice crystals.

Then the screen paused and the skill introduction appeared.

[Body of Water Element]: In the state of water, you can cast yourself as the source of the spell to attack in a large range over a long distance (Attention: No movement is allowed in this form!)

The introduction disappeared, and the scene continued.

This time, the color of the Five Elements Warlock’s spiritual body began to change, and in a swift second it turned into an earthy yellow color.

Under the expectant gaze of all the players, the Five Elements Warlock stretched out his hands and pressed them down. Suddenly, a large amount of soil on the ground was carved out and suspended.

And in front of the Five Elements Warlock, the figure of a berserker also appeared.

“Argh!” at the same time the berserker appeared, he launched an attack toward the Five Elements Warlock.

At this time, the Five Elements Warlock grabbed his right hand forward, “Earth Dungeon!”

Two earth arms appeared from under the berserker’s feet at the moment, firmly grasped onto the feet and fixed them in place. Then the earth tumbled and quickly wrapped him from the feet upwards.

At this time, the lumps of earth floating beside the Five Elements Warlock began to solidify and shaped into sharp earth spears. When the Five

Elements Warlock waved his hand, the spears suddenly shot at the berserker wrapped in the earth.

Blood splashed everywhere as the earth softened and fell from the berserker. The berserker's gaze turned still, and there were several blood holes on the body. It was obvious that he was dead.

[Body of Earth Element]: Power of manipulating the Earth. The comprehensive ability is used for control and self-defense.

The scene continued.

The Five Elements Warlock's body turned into gold color, and his whole body flashed with golden beams that looked extraordinary.

And in front of him, there were five berserkers.

Facing the charging berserkers, streaks of golden pattern extended out from the surface of the Five Elements Warlock's body.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

This time the Five Elements Warlock did not fight back, but allowed the berserkers to smash him.

However, the warlock's defense in the golden form was extremely high. Although the blood count appeared on his head, they were all single digits. Obviously, all the damage had not broken the defense in the golden form.

After a full minute of chopping, the scenes stopped.

[Body of Gold Element]: Gain a strong defense in a short time. This ability inflicts no damage in a metal-free environment. However, in a specific environment with large amounts of metal substances, the ability will become a method of the Gold Element with violent attacks!

.....

The forms of the Water Body, Fire Body, Wood Body, Gold Body, and Earth Body were displayed one by one. The class advancement to a new mage who could change fighting forms at will made the mages who were watching the class demonstration even more excited.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Knocking on wood, what did I say? I said that our mage character class is the best. Have you seen it? The next time a Cursed Apostle approaches me, I’ll release the Gold Body and I’ll be invincible!”

Black\_Witch: “After activating the Gold Body, I’ll watch and laugh at all your efforts. I even want to make a cup of coffee (Smirking emoji)”

Assassin\_Creed replied to Black\_Witch: “Our Cursed Apostle’s Prajñā Scarification is really harmful. In order to break the defense, I’ll stab myself and you’ll have to endure a few stabs yourself (Smirking emoji).”

Watermelon\_Taro: “My favorite is the form of the Water Element. The Water Cannon looked so real, it’s amazing!”

Thunder\_King: “Why don’t they have my favorite Thunder Element (Crying emoji), but my favorite of the five forms now is the Water Element. The mage’s Water Turret looked so cool.”

A\_Mammoth: “Let’s don’t talk about that, I see that you mages finally have a class advancement. Tonight, I shall kill some mages in the field to entertain you all (Smirking emoji).”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “I think the Fire Element is the most handsome. It exerts extremely explosive damage. Although the defense is very low, vulnerability is the exact characteristic that a mage should have! In addition, I am an assassin (Sly smile).”

Experienced\_Mage\_Player: “Obviously the Earth Element is the most handsome, and the feeling of controlling the power of the earth is decisive and refreshing!”

Groot: “I like all the abilities of the five elements~ Spinning!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Anyway, in a few words, the mage is awesome! (Voice cracked!)”

# Chapter 82 - The Gillfish Clan

After the update of the mage's class advancement, there was an inflation of the material prices in the auction house within the game.

At the same time, there was a new NPC created to assist mage class advancements. It was called the Master of Disintegration.

The conditions for the Five Elements Warlock to undergo class advancement were more special. Players were required to find materials of the five elements and bring them to the Master of Disintegration for disintegration, in exchange for the Points of Five Elements needed for class advancement.

As long as the items corresponded with the elements, the players could obtain the respective Points of Five Elements from the disintegration.

For instance, by bringing a regular piece of wood or a handful of grass to the Master of Disintegration, the items could be disintegrated into only a few Points of the Wood Element. Only when a total of 10,000 Points of the Wood Element were accumulated, the player could fulfill the mission requirements for the state of the Wood Element.

It was the same for the other elements.

However, materials like soil, logs or minerals could only provide very few Points of Five Elements. It would take ages if not an eternity to accumulate the target number of points if one relied solely on these materials for class advancement.

This was necessary not only for class advancements, but also for the class upgrade of the Five Elements Warlock at a later stage. Materials of different elements were needed as a foundation to solidify the body that had already been transformed to withhold the five elements.

Consequently, the prices of the spiritual materials that could contribute a huge amount to specific attribute points increased tremendously.

Due to the specialty of this cultivating-type character class, Lu Wu decided to decrease the difficulty level of requirements for class advancements. As long as the players could accumulate enough points needed for one of the elements, they could activate the class advancement process.

Of course, after the class advancement, they could only transform into one state which corresponded to the collected element points.

The game also had its fair share of rich players. The materials in the auction house were quickly sold out. With this, many players had their bodies reformed to have the element states of the Five Element Warlock. They were full of pride and glamour as they walked on the streets.

At the same time, it gave rise to an opportunity to develop the oceans in the game.

.....

The Void Ocean.

The gloomy sky overlooked the howling winds of the ocean. A black warship was going against the waves, sailing straight ahead.

On the hull of the warship, there was an illustration of a monster with one horn drawn with plant juices. With a closer look, the monster looked quite similar to the Demonic God.

On the ship were about ten people, wearing similar red outfits and white capes with the same hideous portrait of a dark embodiment of the Demonic God.

It was the first time the Demonic God Warship set sail since its creation. The ten members of the guild from earlier knew each other from the forum. After they found out about their similar interests, they voluntarily started the guild.



As for the illustration used by the guild, they paid to have it specially designed and drawn onto the warship. They were deeply shaken by the power of the Demonic God after watching the fighting video of the Demonic God. So, they started worshipping him and even used him as a symbol of their guild.

Yet, at that moment, they were tumbling around trying to hold on to any stable object on the ship. Their complexions were as pale as paper, and needless to say, they looked especially beaten up.

“Boss... vomit!”

The person who spoke was a chubby guy. Before he could say anything, he had thrown up.

“Fatty, you better hold it in. This is the Demonic God Guild’s first sail, we must look handsome... vomit!”

As a respected leader of the guild, An Sheng too could not help but vomit as soon as he opened his mouth.

Once he started, no one could keep it together anymore. Everyone on the ship began to puke as well.

One could tell that everyone on the ship was very young, even though they had plenty of best quality equipment. Despite that, they had no experience with the towering waves and howling winds on the sea. After a few hours of sailing, they had reached their endurance limits.

“Boss, look, there is an island! There is an island!” Fatty was in the middle of throwing up when he saw an island not far away. He instantly squealed in excitement.

With that in sight, An Sheng dragged his body to the edge of the ship and took a look at the island nearby.

“Pull in to shore! Pull in to shore!”

An Sheng finally regained some energy and immediately sped up the warship. He changed the direction of motion and started directing the warship towards the island.

When the crew of the Demonic God Warship received the order, they all cheered and started working. The warship slowly changed direction and was led toward the island.

Upon the sight of being able to go ashore, the members of the crew shed tears of joy. It was truly a tortuous journey on sea.

As the warship approached the island, some of the crew members were already rushing down the ship ladder. The first thing they did was lie down on the sandy beach, with the feeling of escaping a near-death experience in their hearts.

“Boss, the next upgrade for the warship must be stability. It definitely should not be just about the looks. I really cannot stand it anymore,” Fatty was still traumatized from the incident.

The other members of the guild nodded in agreement. It was obvious that this journey had left them with a bad impression.

After resting for a while, a few of them stood up and started observing their surroundings.

Right at that moment, Seven pointed his finger toward somewhere far. He said excitedly, “Look! There’s a village with people in it!”

Their gazes followed his finger and there they saw a small fishing village filled with wooden houses.

Every house in this fishing village had dried fish hanging on their doors. At that instant, some weird-looking people armed with fish forks and sticks started walking out from the fishing village.

They were similar to humans, yet very different.

Their faces had a green tint with three cracks of fish gills by the sides of their faces. Everyone was well built to fight with thick waists and broad shoulders. They were manly and gave off an intimidating aura.

When they saw An Sheng and the others staring at them, the Gillfish Clan raised their weapons and started yelling, as if they were trying to scare them away.

With this in sight, An Sheng and the others armed themselves, too. What a joke, they were not scared of a fight.

Their actions then angered the Gillfish Clan. Suddenly, a swarm of ferocious people barged out from the village and charged toward them.

“Prepare for battle!” An Sheng demanded at the top of his lungs. His members were ready.

Then, they were dumbfounded. From the jungles by the beach, out came hundreds of people of the Gillfish Clan, defending themselves with long spheres.

“Oh shit, run!”

When they saw the amount of people from the Gillfish Clan, their original desire to fight till the last drop of blood extinguished immediately. They ran the other direction with all their might, toward the other side of the seashore.

Apparently, they underestimated the Gillfish Clan. With their strong and fit builds, they caught up with the members and surrounded them in just ten minutes.

The war started abruptly. The only thing that An Sheng and the others did not expect was that the people from the Gillfish Clan were skilled fighters. They were well-equipped with excellent gear and weapons but they were still defeated by a mess of sticks.

Surprisingly, the Gillfish Clan were not trying to kill them. Instead, they tied them up and brought them back to the fishing village.

.....

The sky was filled with bright stars. Darkness stretched across all nooks and crannies of the village yet it was a happening night. With the fishing village well-lit with fire torches, the people sang and danced around a campfire. Laughter and joy filled the air.

An Sheng and the others, who were tied up right at the heart of the fishing village, found it difficult to blend in with the happiness. They realized that they were about to be eaten.

Still in their battling states, they could not exit the game. They had never felt this suffocated before.

# Chapter 83 - Mental Breakdown

Looking at the cauldron in the middle of the village, An Sheng and the others seemed to be in despair.

An Sheng then glanced at the fat guy next to him who was staring into space and said, “Excited? We just arrived and are now about to get cooked.”

The fat guy was speechless.

“We must take revenge!” after a moment, the fat guy said in grief.

“Yes! We must take revenge. I have never been eaten in my entire life. They are the first who dare to eat me and they must pay for it!” an immature young man spoke with a sad and aggrieved expression on his face as if he had suffered great insult.

As expected, their clothes were soon stripped off and they were carried into the cauldron. Fortunately, they were all male. Hence, it was not too embarrassing.

But, one thing surprised the warriors of the Gillfish Clan – the pieces of equipment and weapons suddenly disappeared when they were taken off their bodies.

An Sheng and the others were savagely beaten as the warriors of the Gillfish Clan were infuriated for not being able to find the equipment after searching for a long time.

This made An Sheng and the others swear as they had never suffered such great injustice.

They would pay them back for this.

However, this was just the start. They almost cried at the grievance they next encountered.

At that moment, a shirtless burly man went to the fat guy with a sack. He then grabbed a handful of green powder from the sack and handed it to the fat guy.

What?

“Ura!”

The burly man glared at the fat guy and pushed the green powder in his hand toward the fat guy’s mouth.

For fuck’s sake... I would definitely fight this guy to death if I were not tied by a rope.

It was fine for wanting to cook him, but how dare they let him eat the seasonings. Don’t they know that one can be killed but not humiliated?

“Bastard! Go to hell. Bah!” this was now the only means the fat guy could retaliate.

Upon seeing the fat guy’s reaction, the tough guy stuffed the seasonings in his hand back into his pocket and lifted the fat guy out of the cauldron.

After the fat guy took a beating, he who had first decided to fight back was badly battered. He then tearfully swallowed all the seasonings.

Looking at what the fat guy had encountered, the others who were also in the cauldron trembled and swallowed the spices that were handed to them without hesitation as they were afraid of being beaten up mercilessly again before they died.

These green powders were made of some unknown plant. It would melt in their mouth and slide down their throat along with the saliva, improving their appetites.

The fragrance then spread from their stomach up to the lungs and the entire body through breathing, making their entire body suffuse an exquisite aroma.

However, this made them even sadder!

“Ura!”

The tough guy of a different race nodded with satisfaction. Then, he took out a handful of red powder from another pocket and sprinkled it on the heads of An Sheng and the others. A piquancy taste entered their trachea through the nostrils, causing them to sneeze.

“Damn you... I will remember this. Just you wait... I will fucking kill you guys.”

They yelled in sorrow but they could not resist.

As time went by, bubbles emerged in the cauldron. The water temperature had finally reached the boiling point.

Bloody hurting words sprang on their heads and soon their blood volume dropped to the point of death. All of them lost their consciousness and slipped into the cauldron. In the end, they turned into black smoke and were withdrawn by the artifact.

The Gillfish Clan was bewildered at the sight of this.

Where’s our food?

Dragon Metropolis. A fat guy took off his virtual helmet and slammed the table.

“I’m so pissed. I will teach you all a lesson since you guys dared to eat me!”

Upon saying that, Liu Pang entered the guild’s chat group and typed a line of words:

“Revenge! We must take revenge!”

An Sheng: “I’m furious, too. Let’s hire a few experts from the forum. Gather more players and avenge once we are resurrected!”

Seven: “A real man is sure to take revenge and we shouldn’t wait to take revenge!”

Sun Xucheng: “I have never suffered such grievances since I was a kid. My brother is a member of the Great Dragon Guild. I will borrow some men from him.”

Lu Yuan: “I will take a look at the forum and hire some people. Let’s find some people and gather at the resurrection point after three hours! Let’s revenge!”

A revenge operation had just begun.

Late at night, the Demonic God’s Warship sailed off the coast again.

This time was different as there were more than a hundred people on the battleship.

An Sheng, Fatty, and the others had spent a lot of money on this operation. They had hired professional players in order to avenge them being cooked.

After zooming in on the map at the upper right corner, An Sheng confirmed their location and began to reverse the sailing direction of the Demonic God’s Warship.

Luckily, they had been to the Fallen Fish Island and the fog on the map had dispersed. Thus, they could still feel their way.

An Sheng and the others had learned their lesson. Before departing, they had purchased some materials from the auction house in order to improve the sailing stability of the Demonic God’s Warship. Thus, the battleship had improved greatly in terms of its stability and speed that it did not cause them to suffer from seasickness again.

It could be said that their revenge this time was imperative.

Looking at the island that was getting closer on the map, strong hatred filled the eyes of An Sheng and the others.



The thought of them being abused previously sent shivers down their spine.

As the battleship had been upgraded, they arrived at the island that they resented in less than two hours.

“Ready to fight!” the fat guy stood up and said with a livid face.

Clatter. A group of people who were well-prepared at the back stood up.

As the Demonic God’s Warship was docking, An Sheng pointed at the fishing village which was not far away and yelled, “Kill them! Destroy the village!”

Upon hearing this, everyone yelled and rushed down the stairs, heading toward the village.

“Kill!” the fat guy rushed to the forefront of the team.

The arrival of the fat guy and the others soon alerted the Gillfish Clan in the fishing village.

“Beep!” a loud horn blew in the fishing village.

Realizing that the village was under attack, the Gillfish Clan immediately picked up their weapons and rushed out of the fishing village.

Meanwhile, the fat guy quickly fixed his gaze on the member of the Gillfish Clan who hit him hard that day. He took the lead by jumping toward the man and threw him to the ground. He then slapped him in his face.

“How dare you hit your Fatty Master! How dare you hit your Fatty Master!”

The fighters of both sides soon clashed with each other.

This time, all the players showed their power. They used various powerful skills to turn the Gillfish Clan upside down, causing them to suffer a crushing defeat.

Just as the players thought that they were about to win, the horn sounded again.

One by one, heads emerged out of the jungle at the side and they immediately joined the battle.

The members of the Gillfish Clan were increasing and it soon achieved thousands, close to ten thousand people. This stunned the players.

They had always abused others by number and this was their first time being suppressed in number.

However, the players found something strange in the battle – the members of the Gillfish Clan were not killing them. Instead, they would only smash them to the ground, then a group of people would swarm to tie them up.

After holding on for a while, all the players were badly battered and were being pressed onto the ground.

After being carried back to the fishing village, there were ten more cauldrons in the village. There were also thousands of members of the Gillfish Clan looking on. Half of the Gillfish population on the island was here.

Seeing that there were so many new faces in the fishing village, An Sheng realized that the clan in front of him was not the only alien staying on the Fallen Fish Island. Apparently, there were still other villages.

# Chapter 84 - Legend Of The Fallen Fish Island

Looking at the huge cauldrons, the sorrow in the hearts of An Sheng and the others were indescribable.

They were resentful by the thought of them having to get tortured again and regretted not being killed in the battle.

“Bro, what are they trying to do?” a hired player asked curiously.

Next to him, a fat guy with a badly bashed face snorted and blood spurted out of his nose. He then turned to glance at the hired player.

“Have you seen those cauldrons? It will be really exciting. You need to be prepared!”

The hired guy was speechless.

“Why are there so many aliens?” one of the members of the guild, Seven, could not help but question.

“It will be such a waste if they can’t finish the food. Hence, they invited their relatives from next door to eat with them!” the fat guy heaved a sigh.

Everyone was dumbstruck.

Just as all of them were nervous, an old man of the Gillfish Clan walked out of the crowd.

He came to the players and examined them carefully. From time to time, he would pinch their faces as though he was choosing pork.

The players got bent out of shape. A player even struggled and spat at the old man on the spot.

The warrior was then carried out of the crowd by three burly men of the Gillfish Clan. He was savagely beaten up and his face became swollen.

Upon seeing this, shivers ran down their spine. They sympathized with the strongman who was dying on the ground. At the same time, they were fortunate for not acting impulsively.

Punishing someone as a warning to the others was certainly effective. This time, none of the players dared to fight back. Their faces were covered with rage as the old man of the Gillfish Clan pinched their faces in turn.

After the inspection, the old man of the Gillfish Clan went to the center of the village and knelt down. He was also muttering words that they did not understand.

Seeing this, everyone from the Gillfish Clan knelt down with their hands facing the sky as if they were worshipping.

“What are the idiots doing?” Seven asked curiously again.

“According to my years of gaming experience, they should be thanking god for the food given!” the fat guy said at the back. Upon hearing this, all of them could not remain calm.

“Ura!” the old man seemed to be done with his prayers. He shouted at the sky and the crowd cheered. Then, all of them dismissed, began to raise the cauldrons and set fire.

Everyone was at a loss for words.

After walking through the procedures of bathing, eating green powder, and sprinkling seasonings, the faces of the hired players turned blue. They had not been told that they would be eaten if they lost the game. This was too much. This was too brutal.

However, they could not fight against their fate of being eaten. They were powerless and could not do anything but swear.

At that moment, all of them secretly swore to take revenge.

The number of people who wanted to take revenge had once again increased.

Looking at the hired players gritting their teeth, An Sheng and the others were inexplicably comforted. Sharing the pain could indeed reduce suffering.

The fat guy seemed calm now. He was clear about the cooking procedures of the Gillfish Clan. This time, he did not resist as he had learned his lesson. He even bit a few slices with his mouth when the Gillfish Clan put the ingredients into the pot.

After chewing and swallowing it, the fat guy suddenly opened his eyes widely.

“Oh my god, this thing tastes great!”

Upon hearing this, several players from the surrounding cauldrons bit a few ingredients to have a taste of it. They showed surprising expressions after tasting it.

“Delicious!”

“It tastes good. What is this?”

“This red fruit tastes great!”

Looking at the insensitive crowd, An Sheng’s temples were twitching. Why are they eating it? Don’t they feel ashamed?

“Not to mention. It does taste good!” Seven who was next to An Sheng chewed the fruit which was about the size of a lychee and told him earnestly.

An Sheng did not want to talk as he felt ashamed. Where was their anger and their intention to take revenge?

I’m not going to collude with them.

But, the water temperature was rising slowly. Seeing them eating joyfully, An Sheng boringly bit a piece of leaf that was floating on the water and chewed it.

“Damn, it’s indeed delicious!”

Seven was speechless.

Looking at the disdain in Seven’s eyes, An Sheng simply continued eating. Since the Gillfish Clan could eat them, they could also eat their ingredients.

“Asshole, don’t grab my fruit,” Seven was enraged as he saw An Sheng open his mouth and took away the fruit which he was about to eat.

After the players were done eating and drinking, they lay in the pot and looked at each other, waiting for the arrival of their doomsday.

“Brothers, I have a suggestion. We just pretend to know nothing and don’t tell anyone regarding the things that happened today,” looking at the crowd, An Sheng burped as he said.

Upon hearing this, everyone seemed to be in embarrassment. They nodded in agreement with An Sheng’s suggestion as the situation they encountered today was embarrassing.

An Sheng was already preparing to fool more people for the next battle in his mind. He believed that with more manpower, they could defeat the Gillfish Clan.

The water temperature gradually increased and blood words began to appear on the players’ bodies.

The players’ camp was once again wiped out.

As the players died, their bodies turned into black smoke and were withdrawn by the artifice again.

Upon seeing this, the Gillfish Clan who was initially excited stared at the empty cauldrons, doubting their life.

After their death, An Sheng and the others became busy. They were preparing to bring another group of people to take revenge.

However, before this, he got an idea and posted a post on the forum:

“I’ve found the Son of the Sea. There are many Sons of the Sea on this island.”

A screenshot of the coordinates on the map in his game was also provided below the post.

Originally, this kind of post would be ignored. After all, rumors often appeared on the forum. However, the post was inexplicably being pushed to the top.

Seven\_Seven: “Yes, this is the island. I have seen the Son of the Sea on this island!”

I’m\_Not\_Fat\_At\_All: “Me too! I didn’t expect the thread starter to find it too! Don’t you know how to keep it a secret? I wish to return after I become stronger.”

Blood-stained\_World: “Heartache. I thought I was the only one who knows about this secret. But, you made it public. I hate you, thread starter!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “What! The Son of The Sea? Oh my god! Let’s go!”

Peppa\_Boar: “It’s mine! It’s mine! I will set off now! The Son of the Sea is mine!”

Hence, a huge wave of fooled players began to march toward the island of the Gillfish Clan.

The tragedy of them being eaten continued. However, all of them chose to remain silent and secretly pinned An Sheng’s post to the top.

Another wave of fooled players set sail.

# Chapter 85 - The Distressed Gillfish Clan

Thousands of members of the Gillfish Clan sat on the shore with weapons in their hands, gazing blankly at the sea.

They did not go fishing in the sea or hunting in the jungle today as they knew that those creatures would arrive at any time.

It had happened countless times, and the constant visits of the players had caused them to lose their cool.

From being grateful to the Sea God in the beginning to cursing the gods now, no one knew the ups and downs that they had been through.

Ever since the legend was spread across the forum, saying that the Son of the Sea was found at the Fallen Fish Island, innumerable players had sailed here according to the coordinates they had.

Meanwhile, all the players who had suffered the inhumane torture had somehow reached a consensus and chose to hide the truth. Then, they quietly hyped the deceiving post in the forum, hoping that the other players would join in on the suffering.

This became the greatest deceit in the history of Battle Online.

However, this had caused a great inconvenience to the humble and honest Gillfish Clan. The arrival of incessant batches of players were starting to exhaust their hospitality.

As they expected, a warship came into view in the distance.

The gamers on the ship were moved by the scene and some of them even shed tears.



“I see it... I see it! That’s the Fallen Fish Island that was mentioned in the forum,” the players on the warship exclaimed in excitement, as though they had foreseen themselves reaching the peak of life after they had successfully obtained the Son of the Sea.

“The members of the forum were right. The natives on the island are really welcoming. Look! They are standing at the shore, waving at us!” they made a joyful remark when they saw the members of Gillfish Clan who were actually waving their weapons in protest by the shore.

As they were approaching the island, the players stood on the deck of the warship and waved back at the Gillfish Clan gleefully.

The members of the Gillfish Clan were flustered by the players’ reactions.

They were especially bewildered when they saw the creatures’ smiling faces. Are these creatures insane? They obviously know that they are sending themselves to an early grave. Yet, they act so imprudently. How did they gain their courage?

After the warship docked at the port, the players were beaming as they disembarked the warship. Then, they walked toward the members of Gillfish Clan, who were running at them enthusiastically.

.....

In a certain crystal palace under the Void Ocean.

Confused, the Sea King stared at the elder who was groveling at his feet.

“You are saying that there’s a kind of creature that has been coming to the Fallen Fish Island to die every day, and you can’t take it anymore?”

“That doesn’t sound right. The Gillfish Clan doesn’t have many resources. You should be welcoming them to sacrifice their lives at your place instead. Only with sufficient food can you expand your tribe, too.”

The elder of the Gillfish Clan raised his head and wiped away his tears, “My King, but we can’t eat them. They will disappear after we briefly cook

them.”

The Sea King was puzzled.

He had no idea what was happening either.

He would not be bothered with such a trivial matter if the Gillfish Clan had not pledged loyalty to him and selected ten of their strongest warriors to join his navy every year.

Upon listening to the the complaint of the Gillfish Clan’s elder, the confused Sea King interrupted him,

“Tell me, what do you want to do?”

The elder of the Gillfish Clan calmed himself down, “My King, can you send someone to protect us? If this continues, our clan will really be doomed. We haven’t been eating for the past few days. They will come in the morning, evening, and even at midnight. We haven’t been hunting for other food for days.”

The elder of the Gillfish Clan involuntarily teared up again when he recalled his recent experience.

Looking at the poor elder, the Sea King heaved a sigh and waved his hand, “Big Hammer, bring along a group of people to protect the Gillfish Clan. Meanwhile, investigate the opponent’s background.”

The humanlike tiger shark, with the name of Big Hammer, nodded. It threw a contemptuous glimpse at the elder before it exited the crystal palace and assembled his subordinates.

Then, Big Hammer followed the elder of the Gillfish Clan back to Fallen Fish Island.

With Big Hammer’s help, the Gillfish Clan was finally put to ease. They began to hunt and pick fruits as usual. Their daily lives resumed. For the first time, they were so grateful for their everyday life.

Big Hammer and the warriors were stationed at the territorial waters near the Fallen Fish Island. They were rather satisfied with the hospitality provided by the Gillfish Clan.

However, before long, they got distressed again.

Just as the elder of the Gillfish Clan predicted, the players attacked them several times during the period of Big Hammer's stay.

Everytime, the players would run into the Sea King Navy led by the Big Hammer, and none of them could escape from death.

In the beginning, Big Hammer had some fun with it. However, as he encountered more and more players, he quickly became exhausted.

He did not get to sleep at all as the ceaseless attacks came erratically. Big Hammer could finally understand what the Gillfish Clan was going through.

It's as if they are here for a suicide mission. They are walking to their graves with a smile while waving at me politely. Am I not ferocious enough to scare them?

Eventually, Big Hammer and the others could not take it anymore.

However, it did not end here. As the post of Battle Online on the forum reached tens of thousands of views, the visits of the players became increasingly frequent. Big Hammer could not take it any longer. It ordered its navy to return to the crystal palace to seek help.

The Forum of Battle Online: "I've found the Son of the Sea. There are quite a number of them on the island."

The 33,412th comment:

I'm\_Not\_Fat\_At\_All: "The number of views has reached 30,000... I reckon it's time to reveal the secret. (hilarious)"

Crayon\_Shinchan: "The power of the deceived ones is strong enough, and we are fully capable of taking revenge now. Shall we disclose the secret?"

Beef\_Noodle: “Yes. Let’s do it. Let’s tell them the truth. We have enough people already. Our capacity is sufficient to make an extermination possible.”

A\_Salted\_Fish: “I hate you, bastards. Do you know what I went through? (Gritting teeth)”

Cat\_Slave\_XiaoMei: “We’re finally revealing the truth! I almost perished trying to keep the secret! OP, I really want to kill you!”

Adorkable\_XiaoBai: “We’re going to stop tricking people? Knowing that I’m the last batch to be tricked, I feel so aggrieved that I can’t share this kind of pain with others.”

As many players fell into the trap, the size of the crew increased. Fatty and An Sheng, together with the others, decided to disclose the truth. They had also prepared to assemble the resentful players and form a troop to go to Fallen Fish Island to take their final revenge.

# Chapter 86 - The Expedition Of The Players

After the truth was revealed, the forum was swamped by new responses. Many players, who had missed the opportunity due to the absence of a ship, were wild with joy.

Meanwhile, the players who had been duped, had turned the air blue by swearing at the original poster.

The comments on the original thread:

“The members of the Gillfish Clan are so welcoming. They even made me stay for a meal when I visited! I love them!”

“The hospitable Gillfish Clan prepared a large pot of food to serve us. We’re so happy! (Smile)”

“I love this island. I found a lot of spiritual materials there, and I was so close to getting the Son of the Sea!”

“I love Fallen Fish Island so much. The people there are very loquacious. All of them are talented, and I’ve gained a lot of knowledge from them. Go and have fun! You will never regret it!”

“I would definitely like to revisit the place. It is definitely a treasure trove. You will regret not going!”

However, the style of the comments changed immediately after the truth was unveiled.

“This is excellent. I can finally swear at the OP and his family members on this post. I’m so happy.”

“Do you know that I was cooked alive... you tricksters. I will not believe in love anymore.”

“Well, I have written down all the 13,241 lies before this. I’m going to spend some time memorizing them, and repay them once the operation is over!”

“I was so excited to visit the island, but I wanted to cry after I found out the truth. Anyway, here’s a middle finger for everyone who commented before.”

“That’s such a well-planned lie. Didn’t they say that we, the Beiqi Army, are family? I always treated you as my family, but you used me to feed the Gillfish Clan? I’m furious!”

“Gillfish Clan: Come to my bowl now. Don’t argue anymore. I’m going to eat ten of you today. (Hilarious)”

“Gillfish Clan: Come on, stop it or you will be extinct after we consume all of you. (Hilarious)”

After the secret was disclosed, all the deceived players jotted down the name of a certain guild.

It was the Demonic God Guild which was founded by a group of youngsters. The resentful players recorded the name of the guild in their notebooks, preparing to give them a devastating blow after the operation of vengeance.

However, An Sheng and the others were rather happy at this moment as they saw more players arriving at the shore to join their operation.

The plan had certainly worked. It did not cost them a penny to assemble their troops. An Sheng and Fatty were pleased with their intelligence.

Before long, 20,000 players had arrived at the shore. Warships and Specter Ships, which were extravagantly decorated, were gathered to form a huge fleet.

“Let’s go, brothers! Today, I will exterminate the village and destroy the clan!” Fatty excitedly waved the battle axe in his hand, appearing extremely pleased.

The warship left the coast and sailed toward Fallen Fish Island.

Meanwhile, on Fallen Fish Island, Big Hammer had once again brought in a thousand warriors from the Sea King Navy and dozens of sea monsters.

Facing the ceaseless harassment from the players, Big Hammer was close to losing his temper. Therefore, he decided to implement a shift system. Although the job would remain tiring, it would not be insufferable as they were all granted with brief breaks.

Big Hammer felt at ease as his crew had grown bigger. After he assigned 300 people for the shift, he was ready to have a great sleep.

However, right after Big Hammer fell asleep, he was awakened by a quake.

Grumpily, he opened his bloodshot eyes. He slapped his servant, who had also woken up, and threw him to the ground.

“Damn it! Don’t you know that I’m sleeping!?”

“They’re here again!” the servant cried with a hint of despair painted across his face.

Slap!

Once again, Big Hammer slapped the boy who had just gotten to his feet, causing the servant boy to fall to the ground again.

“I’ve sent 300 warriors and 20 sea monsters. Yet, you want me to be there personally? Are you trying to completely exhaust me!?”

“There are so many of them this time. We will not be able to defend the island!”

Big Hammer's expression turned somber upon listening to the boy's words. Immediately, he got out of his bed, left the coral, and swam toward the surface of the sea.

When he emerged from the water, Big Hammer quickly found the fleets that were sailing toward them from a distance.

At the sight of this, his eyes widened in shock.

Do you really not want me to sleep? I have just strengthened my defense. Yet, you sent more members for this suicide mission? Is this the right thing to do?

You're clearly bullying me. I need to save my own pride as well!

Big Hammer despaired. At this moment, he hated the Gillfish Clan for involving him in this saga. Now, he had to go through the whole ordeal which initially just belonged to the Gillfish Clan.

He clenched his teeth as he pondered the situation. Then, Big Hammer dove into the sea and woke all his subordinates up.

Soon, the Sea King Navy, which was formed by thousands of soldiers, emerged from the sea at Big Hammer's heels. There were also dozens of sea monsters glaring menacingly at the players from a distance.

Looking at Big Hammer and his troops that were blocking their path, the players' warships approached them at a constant speed. Together, the warships formed a steel barrier as they sailed toward Big Hammer.

"Take them down!" Big Hammer roared in anger. He dove into the water, leaving his shark fins visible on the surface of the water. He charged forward and broke the waves of the ocean.

Upon witnessing this, the rest of the Sea King Navy followed Big Hammer and dove into the water before they rushed toward the players.

Unfortunately, the players were completely different from before. As Big Hammer and its team approached the players, they discovered that there



were many more ships behind the fleet. The number was far beyond their expectations.

However, Big Hammer did not think that the Sea King's Navy would lose. Therefore, he still took the lead and charged toward their opponent.

He collided with a moving black warship and created a hole at the bottom of the ship. Seawater quickly gushed into the ship.

Big Hammer continued to attack and hit several warships successively.

Just as he expected, the warships were weak. Big Hammer put on a disdainful expression before he decided on his next target, a blue warship, and charged toward it.

Unfortunately, his next chosen target was the Great Dragon Warship that was owned by Chen Ziyu, who had girded his loins to avenge his members.

On the ship, Chen Ziyu smiled as he watched Big Hammer ferociously charging toward his direction.

His ship was upgraded with the materials that were specifically meant to improve the rigidity of the ship. He was not afraid at all.

“Great Dragon! Brace yourself!”

Following Chen Ziyu's order, a deafening dragon roar sounded from the ship. Immediately, the surface of the ship began to sparkle as if it was plated with a coat of metallic protection.

Bang! At that moment, Big Hammer arrived before the ship and violently hit the warship's naval ram.

The Great Dragon Warship that was in the armor form shook vigorously, and the gleam of the armor was dimmed, but unscathed.

Big Hammer gently massaged his swollen head before he curled into a ball.

At this moment, he felt a sharp pain in his head. It was excruciating!

How can this be so hard? This is not the same as the warships from before! Big Hammer grimaced in pain under the water.

At the same time, Chen Ziyu began to counter the attack. He reached out to pat the steering wheel, “Great Dragon, kill him!”

Buzz... Roar!

Accompanied by the loud road, the Great Dragon Warship extended its claws that were covered with scales toward Big Hammer.

# Chapter 87 - To Experience What We Went Through

At that time, there were only a handful of guilds that were capable of building warships with special abilities. That wouldn't be a problem to fight against the small sea monsters. However, they were evidently no match for a commander of the Sea King Navy like Big Hammer.

But Big Hammer had picked the wrong opponent this time. The Great Dragon Warship contained the strength of the entire Great Dragon Guild. Big Hammer cannoned himself into the warship twice and ended with an agonized grimace on his face.

He did not insist on fighting the Great Dragon Warship. Instead, he swam forward, ready to change target and continue his destruction.

However, he was unable to just leave as Chen Ziyu did not allow him. The dragon hands extended from the bottom of the ship and quickly seized him.

As Big Hammer struggled against the restraint, he noticed that the five mages on the warship began to transform and turned into Water Turrets.

In the ocean, the water element would be significantly empowered. Five enormous Water Dragons were blasted from the cannon before they charged toward Big Hammer.

Boom!

A huge wave was triggered. The attack had made Big Hammer light-headed. It was suffering from excruciating pain as blue-colored blood oozed from his wound.

Big Hammer was intimidated. Obviously, the power of the Great Dragon Guild was way stronger than any of the other players that he had seen before. The fear of death overtook him.

However, the power of the Great Dragon Guild had not been fully manifested yet. Two silhouettes leapt down from the Great Dragon Warship, encircled by the shadow of the Night Killer.

Shadow Step, which was the iconic skill of the Assassins, had been activated. The two figures turned into phantoms, and at the speed of light, charged toward Big Hammer. Simultaneously, two bloody blades were thrust into Big Hammer.

Big Hammer, who had long lost his fighting ability, was stunned as he watched the bloody blades penetrate his body. Then, his body was slowly dismembered into pieces.

After they withdrew the shadow of the Night Killer, the two assassins took a step on the water before they hopped onto the warship.

Xue Li said, “Boss, mission accomplished!”

Wang Damang replied, “They are so weak!”

Chen Ziyu chuckled before he added, “Go ahead and help the other players to destroy the rest of the Sea King Navy!”

They nodded before they took a glimpse at the battlefield.

At that moment, many warships had been destroyed. This was a common sight for players who often sailed the ocean. After all, a majority of the players’ warships had not been upgraded, and the default rigidity of the warship would not be sufficient for the ship to withstand the attack.

However, when they encountered creatures like the sea monsters, although the ship would be destroyed, they would usually hit the monsters directly. After all, It wouldn’t matter as their warships could repair themselves. Therefore, the players did not fear the damage.

When a warship was severely damaged and sank into the sea, it would be recalled by the channel. They would then pull out their weapons, and engage in naval warfare with the warriors of the Sea King Navy.

Soon, all the sea monsters were annihilated by the players. Then the players set their eyes on the warriors of the Sea King Navy.

With a greater number of members and better skills, the players rapidly slaughtered the warriors.

The naval battle continued for approximately an hour and ended when most of the Sea King Navy was killed and the remaining warriors chose to flee for their lives.

The sea had turned dark blue after the bloodshed.

The players had obtained absolute victory for this small-scale team battle.

.....

At the Steel Hammer Army Hall in the Crystal Palace.

“Big Hammer died?” looking at the extinguished Soul Orb, Steel Hammer widened his eyes.

He had only one son. The death of Big Hammer infuriated Steel Hammer, bringing it to roar in grief.

“General... my condolences,” a humanlike creature in a tortoise shell rushed forward to comfort him.

“Condolences? What kind of condolences? Have you ever lost your son? Do you know how I feel!?”

The tortoise instantly fell silent. It had no idea how to answer the question.

“Kill Gui Liu’s son!” Steel Hammer, who had nowhere to vent its rage, shouted as he could not help but feel angry at the sight of the tortoise.

“After his death, relegate him as the Junior General of the Steel Hammer division of the Sea King Navy,” Steel Hammer added before he ended his sentence.

Gui Liu was dumbstruck by Steel Hammer's words. He did not expect that his words of consolation would lead to the death of his own son.

"I feel better now. How does it feel to have your son dead?" Steel Hammer asked as he looked at the silent Gui Liu.

Gui Liu was rendered speechless.

After Steel Hammer had sent his order, Gui Liu led the tiger shark, who was assigned to execute the death penalty, to his house.

Upon his father's return, Gui Liu's son welcomed him gleefully.

"Dad, you're home. Did you bring me any toys today?"

Gui Liu looked at his son, and tears flowed down his cheeks, "My child, I have brought you both good news and bad news. Which one do you want to know first?"

Gui Liu's son pondered the question, "What's the good news?"

"You have been installed as the Junior General of the Steel Hammer division of the Sea King Navy!"

Upon hearing this, Gui Liu's son was wild with joy, "Then, what's the bad news?"

"You have to be mentally prepared to receive the bad news!" Gui Liu shed tears of remorse as he stared at his son.

.....

At the same time, a greater war had broken out on Fallen Fish Island.

20,000 players fought fiercely with the Gillfish Clan.

However, the players had the upper hand as they significantly outnumbered the Gillfish Clan, causing the clan to be only able to defend themselves bitterly.

As the members of the clan fell, the elder of the Gillfish Clan stood at the center of the village. He trembled as he murmured under his breath.

He did not know if his clan was cursed by the Sea God, causing his clan to end up being targeted by such a horrifying race.

The killings continued. The ground was blanketed by the corpses of the Gillfish Clan members, while the fallen players turned into dark smoke and were sent back to the channel. This put great pressure on the Gillfish Clan as there seemed to be a constant decrease in their number, while the number of their opponents remained the same.

The trumpet was constantly blowing in the fishing village. The other tribes of Gillfish Clans continued to send help. However, the Gillfish Clan was still weaker and had a lesser number compared to the players' enormous troops.

Eventually, the Gillfish Clan was forced to retreat to the fishing village.

“Kill them and bring out their cauldron. Don't they love cooking? Throw them into the cauldron today. Steam, fry, and cook them all,” the resentful Fatty yelled in excitement.

Seven heard this and was stunned, “They are all humanlike. Are you sure you will have the appetite to eat them?”

Fatty rolled his eyes, “I just want them to experience the despair that we went through.”

After hearing this, the players recalled being controlled by the Gillfish Clan. The memory had brought a hint of fear to their eyes.

The time for revenge had finally come, and it was their turn to take charge this time!

# Chapter 88 - Steal Hammer

At Fallen Fish Island.

Smoke clouded over the fish village while the water was boiling in the big cauldrons. The players were busy carrying the firewood and making fire.

“Seasoning... there’s no more seasoning!?” the displeased Fatty shouted, who could not find the seasoning.

The members of the Gillfish Clan were helpless as they were all tied up. Seasoning? Do you really have no idea who finished the seasonings?

However, the players did not actually plan to eat them. They only wanted the Gillfish Clan to get a taste of their own medicine.

The annihilation of the village was very successful. As the players tortured the Gillfish Clan, they also seized some fresh fruit and set the village on fire before they left.

When the players went to the shore to prepare for their embarking, they noticed an enormous wave in the distance before many sea monsters began to emerge from the water.

“Brothers, get ready to fight!” commanded Chen Ziyu as he put on a somber face.

The size of the Sea King Navy was clearly bigger this time and the players dared not take this lightly. They immediately hopped on the ship and sailed the warship toward their opponent.

From afar, Steel Hammer was burning with anger at the sight of the players’ warships.

Without much hesitation, he knew that they were the culprits who killed his son.



To avenge his son's death, Steel Hammer had assembled the entire Steel Hammer division. It was eager to find out who had the audacity to provoke the Sea King's Navy in the Void Ocean.

“Kill them all!” Steel Hammer yelled furiously before the sea monsters sped up as they charged forward.

After hearing the command, the warriors roared in unison before they accelerated forward.

The players did not fret as they confronted the Sea King Navy that was led by Steel Hammer as their own fleet continued to move onward.

In fact, the players had always thought that it was merely a matter of time before a war between the Sea King Navy and Beiqi Army broke out. They had always talked about the Sea King Navy on the forum.

Hence, the players were completely fearless even when they came without any preparation.

This time, however, the players' headcount did not give them any advantage over the Sea King Navy which was led by Steel Hammer. Immediately after the violent exchange commenced, a few of their battleships were destroyed.

Countless sea monsters began to climb onto the warships from all directions before the warriors, aided by the sea monsters, jumped onto the decks. Then, they began to battle the players individually.

The players on the ships' decks had a slight advantage, but those who fell into the water had a tough time defending themselves.

After all, the Sea King Navy was far more adept with fighting in the water compared to the players, who could hardly perform at all under the water.

Upon seeing this, Chen Ziyu got a little perturbed. They had certainly provoked a strong opponent.

Steel Hammer was the most vicious enemy during a battle. His ability was definitely unfathomable. Chen Ziyu decided to crush him with the Great

Dragon Warship to relieve the stress of the other players.

The Great Dragon Warship, which was in the armor form, crashed into Steel Hammer, and caught it by surprise, causing it to flip backward.

“How dare you hit me?” Steel Hammer said as he regained his footing. He widened his eyes and bent his body before he charged toward the Great Dragon Warship.

Bang! Steel Hammer was thrown backward by the collision. The glimmer of the armor on the Great Dragon Warship was dimmed. The bow was slightly raised as the ship slipped backward.

“Come again!”

Steel Hammer’s bullheadedness was triggered and he refused to admit his defeat. He summoned all his energy before he charged toward the Great Dragon Warship again.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Chen Ziyu and his members felt as though they were on a swing as they were continuously pushed backward by the ceaseless attacks. They were in a daze.

They could not comprehend why Steel Hammer only aimed at their strong bow, instead of all the other weaknesses of the ship.

Steel Hammer’s head was buzzing after the repeated bangs. However, his headstrong personality did not allow him to give up, bringing him to throw himself at the Great Dragon Warship over and over again.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The members of the Great Dragon Guild were rocked by the collisions.

“This retard is the commander of the Sea King Navy?” flustered, Wang Damang glanced at Steel Hammer as he raised his doubt.

“Tsk tsk tsk, doesn’t it hurt? I can feel the pain just by looking at him,” Chen Ziyu shook his head and said.

“Let him do as he likes!” Xue Li made a nonchalant comment.

The members of the Great Dragon Guild were rendered speechless.

After dozens of thumps, Steel Hammer’s head was buzzing. He grit his teeth in agony.

“I’m going to break you!” Steel Hammer gathered all his strength and charged at the Great Dragon Warship once again.

Crack!

The golden armor on the Great Dragon Warship shattered immediately, while the ram at the bow was also broken by the great force. The entire warship had suddenly lost its defence system.

At the sight of this, Chen Ziyu glowered as he shouted, “Let’s get into the water and finish him!”

Upon the command, the members of the guild quickly grabbed their weapons and dove into the water. Chen Ziyu’s red ruby glimmered as he took a leap forward and threw a punch at Steel Hammer.

Thud!

His punch penetrated the water and hit Steel Hammer’s head.

The impact landed on Steel Hammer’s head before it threw Steel Hammer away by force. At this moment, Steel Hammer’s body was covered in blood as well.

Chen Ziyu was a little terrified. This is why the monster has been relentlessly throwing itself at the warship. His skull is so tough!

At this moment, Steel Hammer was slightly dizzy. The previous collisions had made him extremely sick, and the blow from Chen Ziyu had certainly

caught him off guard. He felt as though his brain had been stagnated into a halt and he could no longer distinguish the directions.

However, confronting Wang Damang and the others, Steel Hammer subconsciously swung his arms.

Steel Hammer had always had great strength. Just as Wang Damang and the others got nearer to him, they were sent flying. After all, they were no match for him.

When Chen Ziyu came back alongside his men, he noticed that in the distance, Steel Hammer's Sea King Navy had arrived at the scene to aid their leader.

Upon seeing this, Chen Ziyu realized that they were in a quagmire before he hurriedly shouted in the regional channel.

“Withdraw! Save as many warships as possible!”

Although the warships could fix themselves, the repair required a long time. If they insisted on proceeding with a quick repair, they would require a lot of wood. Therefore, Chen Ziyu acted decisively and ordered the players to retreat immediately. Meanwhile, he could also put the marginally damaged Great Dragon Warships into the channel.

Chen Ziyu was prestigious among the players. The players, whose battleships had not been destroyed, immediately sailed away.

Surrounded by the Steel Hammer's navy, the players who had fallen into the water fought for their lives.

However, they were very close to defeat and their final defense was merely a futile attempt before their deaths. Eventually, the players were surrounded and killed by the enemy.

“Boss, a few ships are trying to run away!” a warrior of the navy said as he pointed at the players who were trying to escape.

Steel Hammer shook his head violently. He could not hear his subordinate at all. At that moment, it felt as though the world was spinning, and he was losing it.

# Chapter 89 - An Manman

During the battle with the Steel Hammer's navy, the players had lost about a hundred warships of the guild level and hundreds of Specter Warships.

The players had experienced the power of the Sea King Navy through this battle, and had also realized that they had a long way to go before they were able to confront the Sea King Navy.

However, the price of the materials in the auction house had increased again due to the naval war. Consequently, many players could not afford to purchase the spiritual materials they needed.

At this instant, a post caught everyone's attention.

“Are you looking for spiritual materials? Come and log at North Rocks. The Tree Demons here all contain spiritual materials.”

Two videos were attached to the post.

In the first video, several players were fighting a Tree Demon, and they managed to kill the Tree Demon owing to their perfect teamwork. The dead Tree Demon left behind a branch that was glowing in emerald green.

At the bottom of the video was a screenshot of the item's attributes.

[Tree Demon Wood (Level 2 spiritual material)]: The body essence of the Tree Demon can be used for many purposes, such as healing and alchemy.

In the second video, a few players were summoning a private Specter Ship, and placed the Tree Demon Wood next to it.

The Specter Ship was seen slowly drawing in the Tree Demon Wood before a chewing sound echoed within the ship. The experience bar that was floating above the deck of the Specter ship in the video began to glide forward.

At the end of the video, the player who posted the video made a comment.

“Aren’t you all looking for spiritual materials? There are so many Tree Demons and spiritual materials at the North Rocks. What are you waiting for? Young men who want to make boats, grab your axe and chop down the trees!”

The technical post had created a commotion among the players. The post was followed by positive comments from players, complimenting the original author.

This time, the players turned their target toward North Rocks before the start of the naval war. Many players put in a strenuous effort to cut the trees and upgrade their ships.

.....

That day, Lu Wu was feeding Bei Li when he received an unexpected phone call.

Aside from messages that were demanding a payment option, Lu Wu would usually not receive any calls on his phone. He was a little surprised when his phone rang at this time.

After he took out his phone from his pocket, a woman’s picture appeared on the phone screen. The name ‘An Manman’ was displayed.

At the sight of the name, the image of a cheerful teenage girl came to Lu Wu’s mind.

An Manman and Lu Wu were neighbors in childhood and their families shared a close relationship. Therefore, they had been good friends since they were young.

However, An Manman’s family was offered an opportunity and they moved out of Indigo City when Lu Wu was in primary school.

Coincidentally, An Manman and Lu Wu ended up in the same university again before they discovered their past friendship during an off-game

meetup.

Lu Wu and An Manman were polar opposites, but they made a pair of good friends. An Manman was also one of the very few friends of Lu Wu.

“Hey, Dog Daddy! Are you asleep yet? Let’s have some fun if you’re still awake!” a clear and sweet female voice sounded from the other side of the phone.

“What fun can we possibly have? It’s midnight already,” Lu Wu was flustered.

“Brother, I’m finally here in Indigo City, and I called you as soon as I got off the plane. I’m going to punch you if this is how you’re going to speak to me!” An Manman lowered her volume on purpose as if she was threatening him.

“Where are you? I’ll come and pick you up,” Lu Wu glanced at his watch. Although he was bewildered, he agreed to meet up with her.

Lu Wu did not have many friends, but he cherished every one of them. When he found out that An Manman was in Indigo City, he decided to catch up with her.

“I’m right in front of the cinema next to the airport. Hurry up. I’m really hungry and waiting for you to treat me to a great meal!” An Manman laughed on the other end.

“It’ll take me more than two hours to get there. It’s better for you to occupy yourself with something else first.”

“Okay! I’ll wait for you!”

After he hung up the call, Lu Wu looked at Bei Li, who was glaring at him. He felt a sudden menacing aura.

“I want to come, too!” Bei Li said as she stared at Lu Wu.



“I’m going to pick up a friend. We’re not going to a theme park...” Lu Wu explained.

“I’ll protect you from danger!”

Upon hearing her words, Lu Wu turned expressionless.

He knew about Bei Li’s power. Apart from doing research and eating, Bei Li was a poor warrior. He could not say for sure who was going to protect who later.

“Stay here and wait for my return!” Lu Wu comforted the irritated Bei Li before he left the house.

Lu Wu had to grab a taxi since he owned no vehicle.

He quickly hopped in a taxi. The driver was quiet as music was playing on the radio, reminding him of many nostalgic moments.

In fact, An Manman did not invent the name Dog Daddy without a good reason.

They went to the same kindergarten. During that time, an incident left a lasting impression on An Manman.

And that incident haunted Lu Wu for the rest of his life.

When they were in kindergarten, the teachers were teaching them to avoid any physical contact between opposite genders. They were told that they would get pregnant if a boy kissed a girl.

At that time, Lu Wu believed the teacher unreservedly.

One day, Lu Wu accidentally kissed a pregnant dog in the kindergarten while he was playing with it. The next day, the female dog delivered a puppy.

Witnessed by An Manman, Lu Wu vowed to the female dog and the puppy, “As long as I have food, you will never be hungry! I swear on my life!”

The vow had become one of Lu Wu's biggest jokes to An Manman. It was also the most embarrassing event that he would always try to forget but couldn't.

Two hours later, Lu Wu arrived at the cinema before he gave An Manman a call.

"Manman, I'm here. Where are you?"

"Dog Daddy, give me another ten minutes. The movie's reaching its climax!" the uncaring An Manman said. Meanwhile, Lu Wu could hear the noises from a fight in the movie over the phone.

Lu Wu was frustrated as it had taken him two hours to reach here. Yet, An Manman was watching a movie.

However, since An Manman had come all the way to Indigo City, he decided to keep this grudge for later.

Approximately fifteen minutes later, the audience began to exit the cinema as the movie had ended.

A tall woman, who was wearing a beautiful smile, waved at Lu Wu as she held a bucket of popcorn in her left hand.

Greeted by a familiar face, Lu Wu smiled and walked up to her.

"It's been a long time since we last met, Dog Daddy. It seems like you haven't changed much," An Manman grinned ear to ear as she looked at Lu Wu.

"You've grown prettier but unfortunately your personality hasn't changed," Lu Wu replied with a sarcastic smile.

A wave of familiarity washed over them causing the estrangement that grew from their prolonged separation to gradually fade away.

Knowing that An Manman had not had her dinner, Lu Wu searched for a nearby eatery.

However, it was already three in the morning. Other than the cinema, all the shops were already closed. They had no choice but to find a restaurant as they walked around the city.

They laughed heartily as they recalled the funny incidents that happened in the past. They enjoyed this moment greatly.

“Oh yes... what movie did you watch just now?”

An Manman tossed some popcorn into her mouth. She replied as she chewed on the popcorn, “The Avengers. It was released not long ago, and it’s pretty popular. But, I wasn’t moved by it because I couldn’t really grasp the movie.”

“Perhaps it’s because you haven’t watched the other Marvel movies. That’s why you can’t grasp the movie,” Lu Wu chuckled.

“Perhaps. But, I have a question. If the villains are so powerful, why didn’t Superman and Batman join the Avengers during the fight?”

Lu Wu was dumbstruck.

He read An Manman’s face and realized that she was not joking. Therefore, he had to explain.

“They are movies from different companies. One is Marvel and the other one is DC.”

“The job to save the earth depends on which company they work for? Can’t they work together?” An Manman was surprised, too.

Lu Wu was tired of explaining. He was talking about reality, and An Manman clearly thought that he was talking about the forces in the movie.

Nevertheless, Lu Wu explained the relationship between Marvel and DC in detail, and An Manman finally understood the situation.

They continued walking like this, and their journey was filled with laughter.

In the end, they couldn't even find a food stall, so they decided to skip the meal.

Initially, Lu Wu intended to let her crash at his place as there was still an empty room available.

However, An Manman told him that she had an important appointment tomorrow. Disappointed, Lu Wu did not persist.

After sending An Manman back to the hotel where she had reserved a room, the weary Lu Wu headed home.

# Chapter 90 - Tournament Collaboration

The next day, in a meeting room at Platform173 headquarters...

“You want to collaborate with Battle Online Corporation for a tournament live stream?” Wu Guoyi asked An Manman, who was sitting across the table.

“Yes, President Wu. For now, you are the only person that has any connection with the Battle Online Corporation. This is why I am reaching out to you to discuss with Battle Online Corporation about the live streaming rights for the tournament,” An Manman looked earnestly at Wu Guoyi.

The main reason for her to take a trip to Indigo City was to get the live streaming rights of the Battle Online Corporation’s tournament.

Recently, several videos became viral on various video hosting platforms.

These videos were recorded by the Battle Online players during their gameplay.

One of the most popular videos was the Christmas Battle Event.

The video was paired with energetic background music, showing countless players fighting fervently and fearlessly against their enemy. Even though it was only through the screen, it made its viewers feel the burning anger and persistence in the hearts of the players.

Moreover, this particular video had received over a million views on various websites and had attracted a large number of new players.

It was precisely through her market research on Battle Online’s gaming video, that the company An Manman worked for, Shark Streaming

Platform, decided to seize this opportunity to obtain Battle Online's live streaming and commentary rights.

Although the popular online game had not been updated with popular events such as battle arena or guild wars, she had a feeling that it would be all too late if she waited for the updates to be launched before proposing this collaboration.

As of now, Battle Online had garnered an unprecedentedly high rating within the gaming community. For this reason, her father had asked An Manman to come to Indigo City and ask Wu Guoyi for help to discuss the collaboration details with the Battle Online Corporation.

Looking at An Manman, Wu Guoyi went silent for a moment, "Since your father is an old friend of mine, I will be frank with you."

An Manman listened while nodding her head.

"Even though Battle Online has not released any tournaments yet, I can firmly say that once it does, its impact will not be weaker than the popular games like Atlantis. What's more, its popularity could even surpass Atlantis. If you want to buy live streaming and commentary rights, I'm afraid the cost will be very high!"

Wu Guoyi himself had been discussing with Lu Wu about their collaboration several times in the past, so he knew Lu Wu's take on this matter very clearly.

He sensed that Lu Wu did not care about profits, but instead wanted to focus on developing a good game.

And this was something that Wu Guoyi admired so much about him.

Since he was also one of the players of the game, he was well aware that if they launched the gaming credit top-up function, the profits generated would be phenomenal.

Wu Guoyi believed that if he himself were to make the decision, he would definitely not be able to resist this temptation.

However, since the beginning of the game's development until now, there was no hint of making soul coins an in-game purchase. This was something that he could not figure out. He just could not grasp what was on Lu Wu's mind.

This was why he was not confident in An Manman's proposal for the collaboration.

Having heard Wu Guoyi's advice, An Manman spoke after a moment of silence, "President Wu, I would like to talk face to face with the person in charge of Battle Online."

Wu Guoyi nodded when he heard her request, "If that is the case, then I'll make an appointment for you. However, I could not guarantee that he will meet you!"

An Manman smiled faintly, "Thank you for your help, Uncle Wu."

.....

Lu Wu let out a sigh as he looked at Bei Li. She was lying on the bed, snacking while sneaking side glances at him from time to time, "Li, if you're eating then eat properly. Why are you looking at me like that?"

Bei Li propped up her upper body, with her mouth still chewing, "Spring is just around the corner, I wanna see how animals change during their mating season!"

Lu Wu was left speechless by her statement.

"She is just a friend. We haven't been in contact for a long time now..."

Lu Wu sighed. In all honesty, there was really nothing going on between him and An Manman; both of them were really just regular friends.

At that moment, Lu Wu's cell phone rang.

Picking up the call, Wu Guoyi's voice came from the other end, "Brother Lu, are you free now? I would like to treat you for lunch."

Lu Wu looked at Bei Li, who had now turned her ear to his direction in an effort to eavesdrop, and he felt a wave of helplessness in his heart.

"Brother Wu, I am kind of busy lately. I'll buy you a meal next time when I am free."

Hearing this, Wu Guoyi went straight to the subject, "Have you considered launching a tournament mode?"

Lu Wu was stunned for a moment.

In fact, he too was thinking about holding a live stream for the game's tournament.

Apart from the guild war that had been planned previously, he was also developing a battle event for individual players as well as a leaderboard of the players and other features.

These were the new competitive tournament features in development that Lu Wu was going to add.

Lu Wu had always paid extra attention to gaming tournaments.

In the development of games, competitive tournaments had played one of the most crucial roles in gaining publicity. Not to mention, it could also increase the popularity of the game itself.

This was well reflected in the earliest games. Each event had attracted a large number of players to cheer for their favorite team.

However, holding official tournaments required detailed and complicated preparations such as the venue, commentators, and opening ceremonies. Although there were official gaming platforms that only stream tournaments, which could also be used to run a tournament, the impact was way weaker and the necessary conditions were still not up to par yet.



Nonetheless, Lu Wu wondered about the reason why Wu Guoyi would bring this topic up. As far as he knew, Platform173 did not have any involvement in the live streaming of tournaments.

“What does Brother Wu mean by that?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“Have you heard of the Shark Streaming Platform?”

“Of course. This streaming platform is one of the three major live game streaming platforms. I used to watch the local and international tournament commentaries on that platform.”

The moment Wu Guoyi mentioned the Shark Streaming platform, Lu Wu had more or less guessed the reason.

“They would like to talk to you regarding the contract for the Battle Online tournament’s legal rights. It is up to you to meet them or not, I am just asking on their behalf,” Wu Guoyi replied.

As soon as Lu Wu heard it, he was excited. After all, he was already planning to launch the first season of the guild wars that he was developing. Moreover, Shark was one of the three major local live streaming platforms, so they already have high traffic on the website, which could help to promote the game. The company was highly experienced in hosting tournaments, which was exactly what he needed.

“Let’s meet, Brother Wu!” after a moment of thought, Lu Wu gave a simple yet clear answer.

Wu Guoyi was stunned with Lu Wu’s change of attitude. He did not expect this reaction as Lu Wu’s attitude had always been very chill.

Apart from developing the game, he had never cared about profits, but now, it seemed that he suddenly had a change of heart.

“Well then, let’s have lunch together. I’ll inform her about it and will book a table at the Palace Hotel. When you reach, just come to the table.”

Lu Wu gave his swift approval.

As he hung up the call, Lu Wu noticed Bei Li was staring blankly at him.

“I want to tag along!”

# Chapter 91 - Son Of The Sea

In a private room, Palace Hotel.

Lu Wu and An Manman were staring at each other.

“Dog Daddy, so you are in charge of Battle Online?”

Lu Wu smiled embarrassingly after hearing that, he did not expect An Manman to be the one who wanted to meet him.

“So, it’s on?”

Lu Wu nodded, “Since it’s you, why not!”

“What about the conditions?”

“Uncle An has always treated me well. On top of that, you are my friend. Besides, cooperating with you will help me promote my game, so no conditions required. My only request is for you to bear all the expenses and arrange the venue for every tournament.”

Lu Wu’s thoughts were very simple because he had a higher pursuit, money was of lesser importance to him now, which might even be less important than soul coins. He was satisfied as long as he had enough money to use.

“No problem!” An Manman replied with a smile.

Wu Guoyi who was sitting aside had his eyes wide open. They were only there for less than five minutes but they had already settled everything.

“There must be something fishy!” Bei Li, who glanced back and forth between An Manman and Lu Wu, murmured.

When they heard it, the atmosphere turned awkward instantly.

“She is just a child, she didn’t mean it, I hope you don’t mind...” Lu Wu explained to An Manman in an awkward tone.

“When did you have a child!” An Manman shuddered inexplicably while looking at Bei Li, and Bei Li felt her murderous aura.

“She’s not my child, her name is Bei Li, she is my friend,” looking at An Manman’s suspicious gaze, Lu Wu explained while bracing himself.

After listening to Lu Wu’s explanation, Wu Guoyi’s gaze on him changed, too.

He clearly remembered that Lu Wu said that Bei Li was his sister, so how did she become a friend now? Fishy.

“Why are all of you looking at me like this?”

Looking at the apparent distrust of An Manman and Wu Guoyi, Lu Wu felt that they seemed to have misunderstood something.

“Little girl, where are your parents?”

Looking at the delicate and cute Bei Li, An Manman bent down and asked softly.

“Parents? All gone!” Bei Li calmly replied.

An Manman was silent.

An Manman thought that Bei Li was an orphan, and was suddenly full of empathy, and she could not help wanting to hug her, but Bei Li dodged it nimbly.

“Fair competition, no sneak attacks are allowed!” Bei Li raised her fist and put on a fighting posture.

Lu Wu pulled Bei Li to his side, and he got a headache while looking at the grumpy Bei Li, “Enough! This is not a fight, don’t talk nonsense!”

Seeing the suspicious faces of An Manman and Wu Guoyi, Lu Wu could only give the explanation that he had already fabricated, saying that he met the pitiful Bei Li somewhere. Then, his sympathy overflowed so he adopted her.

Fortunately, the two did not delve into it. An Manman also knew Lu Wu's character and she knew that he would not commit such stupid things that would put him behind bars for three years so she overlooked it.

Later, while having a meal, An Manman took the initiative to talk to Lu Wu about the issues in future tournaments.

Lu Wu had nothing to hide about this, and he proactively told her about the Guild War that he was preparing.

After hearing that, An Manman said that she would arrange the commentators and opening for the tournament when it commenced. It was also a kind of appreciation to Lu Wu for authorizing the streaming rights to her without conditions.

However, Wu Guoyi seemed to be the most excited person after hearing this news.

He was also the president of one of the guilds. How could he not be thrilled to hear this insider information? Although it did not show on his face, he was already secretly planning on the next development of his guild and was ready to make a splash in this Guild War.

After dinner, everyone got along well, especially Lu Wu and An Manman who were already close friends. They often talked about the past while they were eating.

However, on the other hand, Bei Li was eating silently at the side. From time to time, she would look up and see the two chatting happily, and then she would turn her grief and resentment into appetite again and started gorging on the dining table.

The Insect Island, Void Ocean.

The ten-member team of the Demolition Guild was hiding quietly in the bushes, observing the situation outside through the gaps between the branches and leaves.

There was a strange land that shone with an emerald light about a 100 square meters wide, several dozen meters away from the bushes. Many beast-like creatures patrolled the field, guarding this Spiritual Field.

Among the many spiritual materials planted in this Spiritual Field, the most attractive one was the strangely shaped fruit in the middle of the field.

[Son of the Sea]: A mysterious fruit blessed by the sea, an epic treasure of limitless value. One could get the blessing of the Underworld Sea God and randomly gain a talent-level ability after eating this fruit.

Several people hiding in the bushes showed greed in their eyes when they saw this epic treasure.

This was already their third time landing on the Insect Island.

The numerous direct confrontations previously ended terribly and they returned empty-handed, but they were unwilling to share this secret. This time, only ten people came and snuck in here. They wanted to see if there was a chance to steal the Son of the Sea.

After five hours of observation, they found out that there would be a rotation of orc guards on the Spiritual Field every two hours, with a gap of two minutes in between, so they were ready to take action quickly when the guards changed shifts.

They waited for another few moments, and the orcs patrol began to head east.

And at this moment, Liu Chai and the others jumped out of the bushes and ran toward the Son of the Sea frantically.

As expected, there were no orcs who blocked them in those two minutes. They easily picked the Son of the Sea, and at the same time, they ran

around the Spiritual Field crazily.

[District Announcement: Congratulations to Liu Chai for winning the Epic Treasure, Son of the Sea]

Liu Chai showed his ecstatic face when he saw the announcement.

“Woof, woof!” suddenly, a puppy came out of nowhere ran to Liu Chai’s side and rubbed its head on the edge of his pants.

“Go away!” Liu Chai kicked the puppy away.

He hated dogs the most, his husky had cost him a lot. If it was not his wife’s favorite, he would have cooked the dog and ate it long ago.

The dog which he hated was Sun Qi from the Myth Guild.

The two guilds already had several conflicts because of resources. Sun Qi, a dog that could heal its whole group, gave him a headache. The few times he lost was because of this damn dog.

So from Liu Chai’s point of view, dogs were not a good thing!

However, this kick had caused them trouble. When the puppy landed, it began to whine. The orcs of another shift heard it and rushed toward them in the Spiritual Field.

“Run!” Liu Chai screamed loudly and shoved the Son of the Sea into the Artifact Channel.

He knew the mighty power of these orcs, they were no match for them.

But when Liu Chai turned around and took a glance, he suddenly saw the puppy’s property menu which was not far away.

[Gou Dan]: The son of the Insect Island’s owner, in its juvenile phase.

Seeing the puppy’s introduction, Liu Chai stared at it for a while. Then, he hugged the puppy and ran.

The orcs guarding the Spiritual Field were extremely powerful fighters. With just a few steps, they almost caught up to Liu Chai and others. The slower guild members were immediately knocked down to the ground by the orcs.

When Liu Chai realized that there was no way of escaping the orcs, he turned around and lifted Gou Dan, choking its neck, “Don’t come any closer!”



# Chapter 92 - Sea Spirit Body

“Don’t come over, or I’ll kill the dog!”

Liu Chai threatened the approaching orcs while holding Gou Dan and staring at them.

This method worked seemed to work. The expression of the orcs changed and they looked very shocked when they saw Gou Dan being held by Liu Chai.

“Give me the Son of the Sea and let go of the young master, then I’ll let all of you go!” the orc leader looked ferocious.

“Dream on!” Liu Chai yelled decisively.

“Don’t you forget that your partners are in our hands now.”

While the orc was speaking, he gestured to his comrades behind his back. Then, several orcs behind him quickly pulled Liu Chai’s partners up from the ground, and they also placed their hands on their necks. Both parties were in a confrontation.

“How dare you threaten me!?” Liu Chai glared down at Gou Dan in his hands, and then he reached out his hand toward Gou Dan’s ‘little earthworm’ and pinched it.

“Owwwww!” Gou Dan wailed with a heartbreaking cry.

The orcs trembled when they saw him doing that, “Don’t do that to the young master! What do you want?”

“Let them go!”

“We’ll trade, you gotta hand over the young master and the Son of the Sea!” the orc leader growled.

“Son of a bitch, I’m gonna break it right now!” Liu Chai threatened them again while staring at Gou Dan who was already rolling his eyes.

The orc leader showed a struggling expression when he looked at Gou Dan. Both the young master and the Son of the Sea were very important, so he was troubled when he was forced to make a decision.

After a moment of confrontation, the orc leader gave them a stern look, “I will give you another chance! Our boss, Xiao Tian, has more than one child, but you and your partners have only one life, you have to think about it carefully!”

All the nine hostages were terrified when they heard that.

In their opinion, how could their lives be worth more than the Son of the Sea? It was crazy to threaten the boss with their lives.

“Fucker, how dare you threaten me? I’m not scared of threats at all. Come on, I’ll count to three, then we’ll just do it together!” Liu Chai said while staring at them.

The few orcs were nervous upon hearing what he said, but they did not heed Liu Chai’s warning.

In their point of view, the reason Liu Chai’s team came here was to get the Son of the Sea.

If he had killed the young master now, then he would not be able to escape from the island and take the Son of the Sea outside anyway. After all, they did not know the existence of the Artifact Channel and still thought that the Son of the Sea was still in Liu Chai’s inventory.

“One!” Liu Chai started counting.

Although the orcs were anxious, they did not think that Liu Chai really dared to kill the young master, so they remained unmoved.

“Three!”

Crack!

Liu Chai strangled Gou Dan's neck, and Gou Dan's body hung down naturally, losing motion.

Lu Chai skipped counting the number two, which caused the orcs to be unable to respond immediately. Even more unexpected was that Liu Chai really killed Gou Dan.

Liu Chai made an inviting gesture after throwing Gou Dan's lifeless body away, "What are you waiting for, brothers!?"

The orcs were stunned. How could he be so nonchalant toward matters of life and death?

When his men saw this, they just silently reduced their levels of pain perception, and turned around to look at the orcs who were still dumbfounded, "Brothers, just end it quickly, thank you!"

The orcs were startled.

After being stunned for a moment, the orcs were utterly angered, they killed the nine of them on the spot, and then they glanced at Liu Chai.

Liu Chai also reduced his pain perception level after seeing that, and then he smiled, "Do it however you like, if I cry in pain then I am a loser."

At this time, Liu Chai was in such a good mood, as he had already gotten the Son of the Sea. He had already started imagining his bright future after he respawned.

.....

Three hours later, at the Mansion of the Dead.

The several who respawned went online and Liu Chai took out the Son of the Sea with excitement and ate it in front of his followers who revealed envious expressions.

[Congratulations to player Liu Chai for getting the first talent ability in the server, the Sea Spirit Body]

At the same time, the announcement was published in the district, the data and information of the talent ability were displayed in front of Liu Chai.

[Sea Spirit Body (Talent ability)]:

Description: Under the blessing of the Sea God, you will get the passive ability called the Sea Spirit Body, the special ability called the Sea of War, and the sealed ability called the Tidal Sacrifice.

Sea Spirit Body (Passive): Restores 1% of maximum health every 2 seconds (improves as your level increases)

Sea of War (Special ability): When this ability is turned on, all members of the same faction gain a 5% movement speed bonus, healing 2 health points per second. Duration: 10 minutes. Area of Effect diameter: 100 meters.

Tide Sacrifice (God Body): Unawakened

(Note: Talent abilities will evolve as the player grows. Devouring more Sons of the Sea will accelerate growth)

Seeing the introduction of the power of talents on the property menu, Liu Chai felt exhilarated.

He did not expect this ability to be so powerful. His new class was the Rune Master, which had a high health percentage, to begin with. Now with this Sea Spirit Body, he could be considered as a human tank.

What made him even more excited about this talent was that it even came with a battle aura.

Although this ability was not as powerful as that dog's, it scaled with player level.

Liu Chai could already imagine how strong his guild would be with this talent. He could not help laughing out loud.

“Boss, look at this,” several members of the Demolition Guild took out several spiritual materials from the Channel while they were jealous of Liu Chai.

[Derived Spiritual Rice (Level 5)]: The special spiritual material cultivated under the nourishment of the Spiritual Field and the breath of the Son of the Sea. Due to the special nature of this spiritual material, it cannot be used on ghost ships and refining medicine.

(Note: It is highly recommended to sell it to the shop, the price is 500 soul coins per plant)

Liu Chai’s eyes widened when he saw the introduction of this spiritual material.

He initially thought that the Son of the Sea was the best thing in the Spiritual Field, and he did not even pay attention to other spiritual materials at all.

He never thought that there was such a good thing. He regretted that he was too anxious at that time and got so few of them.

This was a Level 5 spiritual material. It was the highest level of spiritual material that the players could ever find at this stage.

However, Liu Chai was a little frustrated that this spiritual material had no practical use, and it could only be sold to shops.

However, since it was a special spiritual material, and its description even explained its purpose, Liu Chai could not do anything about it. So he asked his followers to take out all of their Derived Spiritual Rice and put them all on sale in the shop.

Lu Wu and Bei Li, the masterminds behind all of these were relieved when they saw Liu Chai sell all of his Derived Spiritual Rice.

When Liu Chai and others got the Son of the Sea, Lu Wu and Bei Li had already noticed them.

While they targeted the Son of the Sea, Lu Wu and Bei Li were also targeting the Derived Spiritual Rice, nurtured and cultivated by the Son of the Sea.

According to Bei Li, these orcs were not growing Sons of the Sea at all, but they relied on the Son of the Sea to grow the special Spiritual Rice in the Spiritual Field.

Although this spiritual rice was all Level 5 spiritual materials, they had the potential to evolve to become King Level spiritual materials.

Lu Wu did not plan to grab these spiritual materials from Liu Chai's hands initially, but Bei Li was anxious, so she quickly modified the panel data. This made Liu Chai and others think that this spiritual material was really useless, and they chose to sell it to the shop.

“Li, what exactly is this spiritual material used for?” Lu Wu was curious. He had just spent a huge sum of 6,000 soul coins to buy these herbs.

Bei Li smiled sheepishly.

“I've told you before that if you want to be a deity like the Emperor of Dongyue, then you must start high. Ordinary spiritual materials have too little effect on you, but the Derived Spiritual Rice is different; it's a special spiritual material that is equivalent to the king level. This means that your cultivation is about to begin!”

Lu Wu was shocked.

His smile gradually revealed his excitement, “Then what are you going to let me cultivate? Are there any exercises to become a deity?!”

Bei Li nodded solemnly, and slowly pulled out a little booklet that Lu Wu was very familiar with.

# Chapter 93 - The Dark Emperor Code

Bei Li flipped through the small booklet seriously. Then, she pointed at a pitch-black page and said sternly, “You should cultivate this!”

Lu Wu stared at her blankly.

“It’s pitch black, what am I going to learn?” Lu Wu was helpless.

“Hehe...” Bei Li laughed ominously as she tore the black paper from the booklet. Then, she touched the paper with the battle subring.

All of a sudden, the black paper diminished gradually, until it disappeared.

“Be prepared, I am going to transmit it to you!”

A huge stream of data flowed into Lu Wu’s mind as Bei Li finished her words.

Other than the endless streams of data, several Primordial Beasts appeared in front of Lu Wu. They were growling, and all of them looked like mountains that could penetrate the Earth as if they were Gods in Heaven.

“The Dark Emperor Code, which comprehended the Law of the World with the body of beasts, condensed all of the Immortal Dark Body, as the Great Dark Day!” Bei Li’s voice arose in Lu Wu’s mind.

“Wu, choose one of the Divine Beasts in your mind as your starter enlightening beast!” once again, Bei Li’s voice appeared in Lu Wu’s mind.

Hearing this, Lu Wu focused his mind and started to pick one from all of the beasts after he heard what she said.

In Lu Wu's point of view, these Divine Beasts were equipped with extraordinary powers. All of them were extremely mighty. At the moment, he was unable to decide which one to choose to be his starter enlightening beast...

At this moment, Bei Li's voice appeared again, "Faster, Wu!"

When he heard this, Lu Wu felt his heart tighten and he glanced at all of the Divine Beasts one more time. Then, he focused his mind on the Divine Beast with snowy white fur and a shining body.

"Suan Ni!"

The black paper appeared in Lu Wu's mind and it burned up quickly. Then, the Divine Beasts faded gradually from the world.

Lu Wu felt like his body was burning. He felt sultry and tried to open his eyes. However, he realized that his eyelids were out of his control.

The torrid feeling remained for a while, and Lu Wu's throat felt dry.

After a while, a sudden burst of chill hit him. Then, Lu Wu discovered that he could control his body as usual, and he slowly opened his eyes.

However, Lu Wu found that it was unpleasant immediately, why is everything bigger now?

"Gee, you are so cute!" Bei Li crouched down while looking at Lu Wu who had turned into a white cat as she smiled squintingly.

Lu Wu was quiet.

After that, Bei Li took a mirror from the table and passed it to Lu Wu.

"Look at yourself, you are so cute!"

Lu Wu's jaw dropped when he saw the white cat in the mirror. "What have you done to me, bastard?"



“It was the enlightening beast, and this was the starting body state that you have chosen!”

Lu Wu almost fainted when he heard this.

After listening to Bei Li’s lengthy explanation, only did Lu Wu understood that he had to stay in this shape for some time before regaining his original body. Lu Wu heaved a sigh of relief, but deep down, he was unhappy.

However, Lu Wu also realized that his surrounding was exceptionally clear in this body, and he felt stronger than before.

Lu Wu began to walk around to make himself adapt to his body.

He attempted to move his limbs, but he fell after he took a stride using his front limbs. Lu Wu was unable to move properly as he was still unfamiliar with his new body. He could only move forward by running and tumbling forward. Lu Wu was grimacing in pain, and he could not help meowing. Meow. Meow. Meow.

Again, he stumbled. Lu Wu was going to get back on his feet, but he felt his body become lighter and his eyesight was improving tremendously.

“Why?” Lu Wu was puzzled, he stared at Bei Li that lifted him up.

“You are so adorable!” Bei Li held Lu Wu tightly in her arms and rubbed him strongly while she spoke.

What the heck...

Lu Wu cried without tears. This was so miserable, I never thought that I would have to experience this one day.

“Oh yeah, it’s time for your meal. You could regain your original body sooner by eating this Derived Spiritual Rice,” Bei Li placed Lu Wu back onto the ground and a plant of Derived Spiritual Rice appeared from the channel when she reached out her hand to grab it.

Then, Bei Li picked out a few grains from the plant, put them in her palm and put them close to Lu Wu's mouth.

“Come, eat this quickly!”

“It's enough! Don't be mean to me!” Lu Wu felt that his pride was challenged when he saw Bei Li's longing expression to feed him.

“Eat it, quick, it will help you to grow,” once again, Bei Li pushed the Derived Spiritual Rice to Lu Wu.

Deep in his heart, helpless Lu Wu was full of anger, but he lowered his head and swallowed all of the rice into his stomach.

This Derived Spiritual Rice was converted into the spiritual fog once consumed. They spread all over Lu Wu's body. Lu Wu could not help shivering, and he felt a wave of relaxation.

“Oh yes, Wu, you should exercise more frequently to speed up the absorption of soul energy. Show your effort to regain your human shape sooner!” Bei Li made a cheering posture as she said this.

Lu Wu was still expressionless, he felt like his life as a cat... no... as a human was hopeless.

This could not be true. Why should a macho man like me be fearful of this little girl? She cannot eat me anyway, can she?

Thinking about this, Lu Wu lifted his paw, slapped the ground and growled fiercely.

However, Bei Li laughed and gave him a pat on his head, and all his ferociousness disappeared.

Once again, Lu Wu felt like he took a big hit. He got up, found a corner and rolled into a ball. Then, he began to weep silently.

Life as such is terrible, this is just the beginning, when will it end?

.....

The next day, early in the morning.

Lu Wu lay on the bed, asleep with all of his limbs sprawled out. Suddenly, he felt like he was shaken.

Having stayed up late at night to think about his life, Lu Wu opened his reddened eyes and came across Bei Li's sweet smile. Desperately, he reached out his paw to slap away Bei Li's hand.

“Knock it off, let me sleep!”

“Wu, I had told you yesterday that you require more exercise to enhance the absorption of soul energy,” Bei Li tried to pull Lu Wu out of the bed.

Lu Wu ignored her, he shut his eyes after waving his paw lazily.

Seeing Lu Wu who was trying to sleep in, Bei Li curved up her lips. She took out a grain of Derived Spiritual Rice as big as a cherry tomato from the Artifact Channel and threw it at Lu Wu's head.

“Go, fetch your rice!”

Lu Wu's nose twitched when the Derived Spiritual Rice flew over his brain. Since he started cultivating, Lu Wu was always hungry. A strong desire came over his body when he smelled the flavor of the Derived Spiritual Rice. He hopped from the bed and held the rice in his mouth, but his eyes were still shut.

Snap!

Bei Li held Lu Wu in her arms before he could land.

“You should go for some exercise now!” Bei Li brought Lu Wu who struggled to escape to the doorstep. She opened the door and threw Lu Wu outside. Then, she closed the door with a bang.

A few moments later.

As she could not hear anything outside, Bei Li cautiously opened the door.

“Hi! How are you, Li?” Lu Wu greeted Bei Li while squatting on the ground.

“Bang!”

The door was shut again, leaving Lu Wu to brace the wind by himself.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Open the door, open the door, I want to go home! I am hungry, I wanna eat some rice! I want to eat something! Open the door!

There was no response from inside despite Lu Wu’s continuous knocking.

# Chapter 94 - These Days Are Unbearable

It was the third day of Lu Wu's beast form cultivation.

“Wu, here's the super lovely cat food that I have prepared for you! Come and give it a try.”

The noise from the kitchen interrupted Lu Wu's thoughts. At the same time, a strange smell that made Lu Wu feel his palpitation came from the kitchen.

Curiously, Lu Wu hopped down from the sofa and trotted toward the kitchen.

Lu Wu saw a plate of awful food with hot steam that was black-green in color. Besides, it was covered with a layer of brown cheese.

Immediately, he wagged his tail and prepared to escape.

While running, Lu Wu showed a desperate expression, Oh no, oh no, she is abusing me more and more now, these days are unbearable!

Lu Wu was even more upset when he was caught back to the dining table by Bei Li before he could run any further.

“Wu, this is a delicious meal that I have prepared especially for you, how could you not taste it?” Bei Li said in an angry tone while she petted the expressionless Lu Wu.

If you are such a good cook, why don't you try it yourself first? What's the fun in abusing me?

Lu Wu glanced at the cookbook labeled Cat Food Collection that was unfolded on the table. He first looked at the pictures of the delightful dishes

in the cookbook, then he moved his sight to the steaming appalling meal. Lu Wu swore under his breath.

After that, Bei Li helped Lu Wu to wrap a triangular handkerchief around his neck, then she pointed at the food with anticipation, “Eat!”

Wait and see, I would spank you until you cry once I recover my original body.

At this moment, Lu Wu seriously doubted that Bei Li wanted him to cultivate the Dark Emperor Code deliberately.

However, beggars can't be choosers, it was better for him to bend than to break. Lu Wu gave up opposing her. He stood in front of the food with a definite look and bowed down his prideful head gradually.

Once the food entered his mouth.

Ew...

Lu Wu bent his back involuntary and vomited all of the food from his mouth.

He had his share of bad food before this, but this was the first time he had such terrible food. The moment when the food melted in his mouth, went down to his stomach and contacted the gastric juice, his stomach started to jerk. His stomach sent signals to his brain, forcing him to spit it out.

Moreover, Lu Wu suspected that he would have died of food poisoning if he did not do so.

Bei Li was astonished when she watched Lu Wu's fearful look, “It was tasty, wasn't it?”

Don't you have any freaking idea? Lu Wu did not have the strength to complain anymore.

Bah! Bah! Bah!

Lu Wu spat out all of the remaining liquid in his mouth, but it was still disgusting. He hopped down from the dining table and came beside the water bowl prepared by Bei Li to gargle.

It was so close! I almost lost my life, Lu Wu was suffering from PTSD.

The dense Bei Li noticed something after witnessing Lu Wu's responses and she smiled embarrassingly. After that, she picked up some of it with a pair of chopsticks and put it into her mouth, puzzled, "Is it really that bad..."

"Bah!"

Lu Wu gloated when he saw Bei Li gargling continuously at the sink.

Deep in his heart, he felt good about it.

However, Lu Wu's smile solidified quickly.

Once again, Bei Li spat the water out from her mouth. Her face was pale but she looked at Lu Wu with a firm look, "Wu, this was an accident, I will do better next time!"

The bad news came abruptly, causing the cat to get slightly caught off-guard. The secretly triumphant Lu Wu was petrified in a flash.

It seemed like the danger of food poisoning would still exist. Unconsciously, Lu Wu made a sorrowful expression.

Finally, Lu Wu had to rely on the Derived Spiritual Rice to assuage his hunger. However, the rice was not enough to fill him. In addition, according to Bei Li, a Level 5 spiritual material should not be consumed excessively. Or else, the soul energy would overload his body without being absorbed, and this would be harmful to his body.

Therefore, other than cultivating by consuming the Derived Spiritual Rice, one had to go through the high-intensity physical workout, too.

After explaining this to Lu Wu, Bei Li reached out for a cat teaser from her shopping bag.

Lu Wu was speechless.

Come on, you better kill me now, this life is too difficult to live, Lu Wu had lost all hope.

Becoming a kitty cat? That's fine. But a cat teaser? Is this a workout? This is challenging my pride.

I am the King of Beiqi with a few million men following me, how could I lose my dignity like this!

All of a sudden, Bei Li approached him and lifted him up and put him on the digital scale in the living room. Then, she pointed at the figure on the scale and said, "You see, you got fatter again. The Derived Spiritual Rice would have a huge effect on you although it cannot make you full. And now, you are obese because you've eaten too much of it."

Lu Wu stared at the figure with a poker face. He would rather die due to obesity than being tantalized by a cat teaser.

Bei Li was out of means. She even demonstrated a set of cat gymnastics herself, but Lu Wu was totally expressionless. In the end, Bei Li could only abandon this plan.

After that, Lu Wu found a corner to shrink quietly and begin to doubt his life.

Why did I want to cultivate, wasn't it better for me to live as a human being?

Such a routine made him feel like he was really a pet cat.

After feeling miserable for a while, Lu Wu focused his mind and entered the game to numb himself, who was physically and mentally injured.



He was worried that he would take things too hard and run away from home.

Recently, the usually deserted Rocks seemed to come alive.

Waves after waves of players came here to chop down the trees. Moreover, they came in enormous crowds without end. Many Tree Demons fell into the hands of players and became the spiritual material to upgrade their ships.

Then, groups of player teams started to invade the North Rocks from the outside.

Along the journey, the players would greet each other cordially when they met,

“Hi, did you come to log? What a coincidence!”

“Hey, bro, we meet again! You are here again today! Good luck!”

“Bro, what level is your ship? Oh, Level 3? Then you might need to work harder.”

Within a few days, the crazy logging by the players had startled the Rock Ghost King, and he was furious.

From his point of view, he had treated the new forces in Beiqi well. He did not take action on them although they had occupied the Mansion of the Dead and Liuli District.

However, he never thought that the players would provoke him even though he didn't do anything. In addition, they treacherously formed an enclosed circle around his domain. They intended to take his North Rocks away bit by bit.

Such an act had challenged the limits of the Rock Ghost King, and he could not bear it anymore.

Right now, he planned to counterattack. He would like to declare to the newcomers that he was the true owner of the North Rocks.

# Chapter 95 - Counterattack By The Rock Ghost King

The Rock Ghost King was finally provoked after the frequent attacks by the gamers. He then started preparing his army for a battle against the gamers to demonstrate his power.

After obtaining the news, Du Yan who was acting as Lu Wu's spy headed back to the Mansion of the Dead to pass the information to Lu Wu before he got exposed.

Lu Wu was not surprised by the Rock Ghost King's plan.

His plan was within Lu Wu's expectations after he got to know the gamers' actions.

Cha Na, the Ghost General was no match for the Rock Ghost King in terms of commanding and personal strength. The Rock Ghost King was clearly stronger than Cha Na.

Lu Wu did not intend to confront him with violence at that moment because he believed that the Rock Ghost King wouldn't dare attack the Mansion of the Dead as he would risk losing his power and his army. After all, the location was disadvantageous for him and Lu Wu believed that the Rock Ghost King was well aware of the pros and cons.

Lu Wu would not fear even if the Rock Ghost King really attacked him.

Since Lu Wu was well-equipped with battle artifacts, he could move all of the important buildings into the inventory if the Mansion of the Dead was destroyed. Also, he would not give the Rock Ghost King any chance for spawn camping by releasing a maintenance notice by that time to get all the gamers offline.

The Rock Ghost King was not planning to go all out as expected by Lu Wu. Instead, his plan was to eliminate some of the gamers by the tactic of suppression while showing off the strength of the North Rocks.

He did not want to take the risk since he had no idea of how strong Beiqi's new power was.

Hundreds and thousands of gamers were still looking for materials to upgrade their ships at the peripheral area of the North Rocks when a shocking scene occurred right in front of them. The land quaked when green brilliant rays appeared from the deep jungle and covered the whole peripheral area of the North Rocks in the blink of an eye.

Many ordinary trees were getting deformed and distorted before they were uprooted.

Numerous Tree Demons appeared from the surrounding area and gathered together before they started assaulting the gamers along with the Enchanted Trees.

The gamers attacked back when they encountered the countless Enchanted Trees and Tree Demons.

However, this was only the start of the war. More powerful creatures such as Ancient Tree Demons and steel zombies advanced toward the periphery of the Northern Zone once they received orders from the Rock Ghost King.

There were only 30,000 players at the Northern Zone at that time. They were defeated and had to retreat when faced with the enormous troops.

However, the Rock Ghost King was not going to let the gamers off easily. He sneered coldly and five enormous ancient trees floated mid-air beside him before they were smashed toward the gamers from behind. Then, they rooted in the earth and formed a barrier to block all the players.

The Ancient Tree Demons remained unmoved despite the gamers' attacks. They waved their arms formed from branches and a large number of players were thrown off with each wave.

The gamers only realized that all the Ancient Tree Demons had been surviving for more than ten thousand years and their strengths were almost equivalent to that of the Ghost General after checking their attributes.

With the strong suppression, there was no way for the gamers to escape.

One of them shouted in the forum, “Shouldn’t we at least kill several Tree Demons to get some spiritual materials? We have no way to get out of here anyway.”

The others were stunned for a while upon hearing that. They immediately realized that they had nothing to lose since they were all going to die. They could at least gain something out of this by obtaining some spiritual materials.

Therefore, the gamers who were focused on attacking the Ancient Tree Demons changed their targets to the Enchanted Trees and Tree Demons in front of them.

The Rock Ghost King’s smile froze as he witnessed the scene.

The counterattack from the gamers was beyond his expectation.

The Rock Ghost King got anxious and he could not sit still anymore. He rose into the air to see what was going on more clearly.

His gigantic body which was almost 100 meters in height landed right at the center of the gamers who were preparing to counterattack.

Boom! All the gamers who were situated within 100 meters from the Rock Ghost King collapsed onto the ground due to the massive concussive force.

The presence of the Rock Ghost King was domineering and oppressive.

However, the gamers didn’t show any signs of fear, which was unexpected to the Rock Ghost King. All of them turned around and stared at him with desire. Some of them were even wiping off their drool subconsciously.

[Rock Ghost King]: An ancient giant tree that has been cultivating for over 100,000 years located at the North Rocks. He mastered the highest level for wooden spells and the rules of nature. His cultivation level is in the middle to a Ghost King's. He could be transformed into a King Level Herb after death.

“How great is this, it's the legendary King Level Herb. Show your health bar! My ship is hungry for you.”

“Kill him, just kill him! Just leave a small bundle of his wood for me when he's dead!”

“I can almost see my future estates, yachts, pretty ladies... Get him!”

“It's the King of Trees. Will my ship become an aircraft carrier if I upgrade it with this?”

“An aircraft carrier? It can even be a spacecraft!”

The gamers were all staring at the Rock Ghost King with craving.

All of them were aware of how valuable a King Level Herb was, even one small wood chip would be precious. Blinded by their desires, they started attacking the Rock Ghost King.

The Rock Ghost King stood motionless despite the siege by the players. All of the attacks were like tickles for him and did not harm him substantively.

However, the Rock Ghost King felt awkward from the gamers' stares.

Even his subordinates would look at him with dread and reverent expressions. Why are these creatures so excited to see me and get this insane? Don't they know who I am? The Rock Ghost King?

Although he did not understand what they were thinking, their actions provoked him and he was furious.

The Rock Ghost King twisted his stem and his branches started extending crazily. The area around him was being shrouded by countless branches.

Many of the gamers were lifted by the branches and were strangled in the air.

That was the moment when the Rock Ghost King demonstrated his valiant strength as the overlord of the Northern Zone.

The gamers launched their attacks again and again. However, they were pointless as their opponent was equipped with enormous potential. All the gamers were wiped out by the Rock Ghost King not long later.

However, the Rock Ghost King was confused once the battle was over.

A Conjurator? A Rune Warrior?

The skills demonstrated by the gamers were all familiar to him. These skills had been diminished from the Land of Beiqi since a long time ago, so why are they emerging again now? The Rock Ghost King had a hunch that something was going on in Beiqi.

# Chapter 96 - Special Spiritual Material Quest

The video of the battle with the Rock Ghost King was uploaded to the official web forum within a short time and it sparked enthusiasm among many of the players.

The strength demonstrated by the Rock Ghost King might not be as terrifying as the Demonic God, yet it gave the players an opportunity to witness the overwhelming power of a ghost king level monster.

When faced with the siege of over tens of thousands of gamers, the Rock Ghost King relied on his ability to form a wood element territory to massacre everyone. As the Rock Ghost King unleashed his move, the players were made aware that Rock Ghost King was close to invincible inside his territory, unlike Cha Na who was defeated merely because he was exhausted by a huge number.

However, the gamers did not retreat out of fear after the battle. Under the great temptation of spiritual material, the players had yet again formed small teams of their own on a quest to look for the Tree Demons in the North Rocks.

However, the Rock Ghost King was well-prepared this time around and had sent three Ancient Tree Demons to guard the outskirts of the North Rocks.

All gamers who were headed that way were butchered by the Ancient Tree Demons on the spot as they were powerless against them.

The gamers started discussing new approaches in the forum after hitting a wall. After all, killing the trees was the only way for ordinary players to upgrade their ships in the game.



Watermelon\_Taro: “\*slams table\* They wouldn’t even let us kill the trees now. This is so frustrating! I’m already this poor but they won’t even give me the chance to make hard-earned money. When are we going to go and kill this Rock Tree for good? I’m so mad!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “Sit down, pinhead. How many times do I have to tell you this? The Rock is a horrible development and we can never defeat it with our current strength.”

Strike\_Gold: “Now is not the time to start a war. We should all focus on getting enough rest, preserve our strength and continue to improve our abilities. The Rock Ghost King will be vanquished sooner or later and we mustn’t be hasty. We will be doomed if we followed Cha Na’s footsteps!”

Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “I might have found a great place with lots of advanced spiritual materials, but I’m contemplating whether to share that piece of information with everyone or not. The thing is, I can’t finish all of them.”

Peppa\_Boar replied to Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “What are you waiting for? Hurry up and tell us! Have you forgotten that the Beiqi Army is a family?”

Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers replied to Peppa\_Boar: “Aren’t you from the Myth Guild? That was not what you said when you were attacking me with a sword!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Have you guys forgotten? The Ghost Mountains lead to the North Rocks. As long as we don’t enter from the front, we could still get away untouched after killing a few trees stealthily. \*laughing emoji\*”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Awesome, that’s a great idea! Who’s joining the team to stealth and kill the trees? It’s better to have an assassin!”

Watermelon\_Taro replied to Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “My poor ass found another way to make some hard-earned money, thank you, little missy!”

Muah~”

Assassin\_Creed: “The frontline is selling wood chips from the Rock Ghost King. The highest bidder gets them. Includes screenshot-”

[Rock Wood Chip (Level 5 spiritual material)]: Wood chips fallen from the Rock Ghost King contain strong wood element spiritual power.

Invincible\_Loneliness replied to Assassin\_Creed: “Bruh, that’s so cool. I’m getting that but I’m curious, how did you get it?”

Assassin\_Creed replied Invincible\_Loneliness: “It’s a long story. It was really a close call. I avoided the crushing branches with Shadow Step and approached the Rock Ghost King with agility from my Shenfa. Then, I aimed my dagger at the Rock Ghost King’s weak point and I made a sudden flat cut to obtain this baby. Oh, I died right after that. (laughing emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Assassin\_Creed: “Pinhead, do you want me to play a song for you as tribute? (laughing emoji)”

Assassin\_Creed replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “As the person with the poorest judgment in this forum, you are the pinhead acknowledged by everyone okay? (laughing emoji)”

A\_Mammoth: “Everyone should follow what Xueli suggested and take a detour from the Ghost Mountain. It’s impossible to win head-on against those ghost general level Ancient Tree Demons without a few thousand players.”

Young, Wild & Free: “Actually, we could all explore the ocean to find resourceful islands. I mean, look at Demolition Guild who got the Son of the Sea, aren’t you all envious?”

Ultraman\_Tiga: “Speaking of which, what special ability do you get after consuming the Son of the Sea? I’m really curious, why are they being so secretive? Why not just show it?”

Monkey\_King: “Maybe the guild master of Demolition Guild is brewing his power, preparing to surprise everyone. (laughing emoji)”

After further discussion, the players finally found a way to sneak in to kill the trees. Thus, the teams embarked on their journey to the Ghost Mountains, took a detour from there to the North Rocks and went on with their plan to make hard-earned money to upgrade their ships.

Lu Wu did not stop the gamers as Du Yan told him that the Rock Ghost King was being very cautious of the new force from Beiqi because he could not estimate the full force of the gamers’ army. Therefore, they dared not make any drastic moves.

The gamers’ courage in embarking on their journey into the North Rocks sent a clear message to the Rock Ghost King.

We’re not afraid of you!

This made the Rock Ghost King even more cautious than ever!

Lu Wu had already made preparations in case these gamers’ actions evoked a large scale war. This war was unavoidable since the Rock Ghost King was already a piece of delicious meat in the eyes of the gamers. Of course, the later they were to start the war, the more advantages the gamers would have.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu announced a new quest in the game.

[Special Quest: Collection of Special Spiritual Material]

Quest Overview: There are many peculiar islands in the Void Ocean and there are spiritual fields that could nurture special spiritual material on these islands. Explore the ocean and find the spiritual fields to collect spiritual materials.

Quest reward: Players will be rewarded with a generous amount of soul coins upon selling the spiritual materials in shops.

However, Lu Wu did not mention the coordination of Insect Island in this quest out of two considerations.

Insect Island was discovered by the Demolition Guild and since they had decided not to share it with the others, Lu Wu would not announce it to the public as well.

He would upset the members of the Demolition Guild by announcing the existence of Insect Island. Looking at the bigger picture, this should also be a privilege deserving of an explorer.

As for the second reason, it was because Xiao Tian was one of the four generals that served the Sea King with the capability close to that of a ghost king level. It was too early for the gamers to fight head-on with Xiao Tian with the little force at sea that they possessed at the moment.

Of course, Lu Wu announced the quest so that he could train himself.

He still needed a huge amount of spiritual rice currently to boost his body's growth so that he could take the form of a human again.

This was an extremely tormenting stage for Lu Wu.

Firstly, he could never get full. Normal foods consumed by him were useless as they were digested too quickly.

Yet, spiritual rice was correlated to spirit energy and it would upset Lu Wu's stomach with too much intake. So, he had to refrain from overeating and this caused Lu Wu to be unable to get full every single day.

As for the food made by Bei Li, Lu Wu tried it once and said that he would rather die than having to eat it ever again. He was afraid that he might get food poisoning before he could take on a human form.

However, Lu Wu could gradually feel the changes in his body as the days passed.

Even though he was still in beast form, his reflexes and body strength had clearly improved and his soul had also evolved through training. It could be

said that his training paid off.

At least Bei Li could no longer beat him up!

# Chapter 97 - Demolition Traders

Void Ocean, Insect Island.

A ferocious and huge werewolf with fangs was circling the spiritual fields.

Staring at the holes in the spiritual fields, Xiao Tian was quaking with anger.

He could not believe that someone would dare to rob him of his treasures under his watch and they were even bold enough to murder his child.

Even though those thieves were killed, his most precious Son of the Sea was missing and this filled him with rage.

Furthermore, the Son of the Sea did not actually belong to him, it was merely borrowed from the Sea King.

His purpose of borrowing it was to nourish the spiritual fields on Insect Island with its divine powers so that he could grow special spiritual materials.

Yet now, with the Son of the Sea lost, he did not know how to tell the Sea King.

“Boss, the whole island has been searched but there is still no sign of the Son of the Sea,” an orc spoke as he dashed toward Xiao Tian.

Xiao Tian’s eyes darkened upon hearing that.

He always knew the temper of the Sea King. Despite the fact that he was one of the Sea King’s four main generals, he would still be severely punished by the Sea King if he were to lose the Son of the Sea.

“Keep looking! Investigate which clan those thieves belong to in the Void Ocean. I’ll wipe out their whole clan if I find out who they are!”

Fury blazed in Xiao Tian but he had no place to vent.

At that moment, another orc rushed toward him from a distance.

“Boss, a few ships have arrived. The people from the ships said that they are merchants from a faraway land and they are here to trade items with us.”

“Sea merchants?” Xiao Tian went blank upon hearing that.

Indeed, it was the Sea Trading Association from the Underworld Sea and this association was founded by powerful people that were on par with the Sea King or beings that were stronger than the Sea King. After sailing through oceans to acquire treasures and spiritual materials, they would sell these items to other cultivators at a higher price during the Treasure Auction, which would be held on a specific time.

However, Xiao Tian was unsure of the reason why the sea merchants came to his Insect Island. There should not be anything that they needed here.

“Go and have a look!” Xiao Tian headed toward the harbor of Insect Island as he spoke.

At the same time, Liu Chai and his men waited for Xiao Tian’s arrival patiently at the harbor of Insect Island. They were wearing white armor that covered their whole bodies and their faces were hidden behind masks.

“Boss, do you think that we’re exposed?” one of them whispered to Liu Chai.

Upon hearing that, Liu Chai glared at him, “Why should we be afraid? They will not be able to recognize us when we look like this. Just distract them for now, we’ll find a way to get the spiritual materials later.”

His men nodded in agreement and continued waiting in silence.

Even though the Demolition Guild had gone into various battles with Insect Island, Liu Chai and his men never revealed the existence of their

battleships. Therefore, they had come up with this armor to disguise themselves.

Xiao Tian's massive figure appeared with an overbearing aura shortly after, hundreds of muscular orcs tailing behind him.

As Xiao Tian approached them, he took a glance at the battleships before speaking to Liu Chai who was standing in front, "Which trading entity are you from and why are you here?"

Liu Chai who had been devising his lines replied immediately, "We are from the Demolition Traders and we're here to trade items!"

Even though Xiao Tian had never heard of the name of this trading entity, he did not find anything odd. He nodded and asked, "What do you want?"

"Rumor has it that there is Derived Spiritual Rice on Insect Island and we, coincidentally, need this spiritual material. Is the island owner, Xiao Tian, willing to sell them?"

"You guys are well-informed, I do have Derived Spiritual Rice here on Insect Island but what are you guys going to trade it with?" Xiao Tian narrowed his eyes.

Xiao Tian understood just a little about the Sea Trading Association. He knew that after purchasing his Derived Spiritual Rice, they were going to sell it for a much higher price. Therefore, he had an impulse to make some profit out of it, too.

Liu Chai, who was well-prepared, waved his hands. Noticing his motion, his subordinates carried two boxes from the battleships hurriedly and opened them in front of Xiao Tian.

A distinct herbal smell of spiritual material gushed out when the first box was opened.

The second box was loaded with over ten sets of purple class quality equipment.



Xiao Tian stepped forward to examine the two boxes before standing up and said, “The best spiritual material from this box is just Level 5 but the quality of the equipment in the other box isn’t bad. However, aren’t these goods a little too disappointing for a member of the Sea Trading Association?”

“Cough...”

Liu Chai cursed internally. It cost him dearly to assemble all this equipment, yet it seemed like they did not live up to Xiao Tian’s expectations.

“Lord Xiao Tian, we have come a long way so we traded off most of our goods. Therefore, we are only left with these, currently. How many blades of Derived Spiritual Rice can you trade with us?”

Xiao Tian did not suspect anything. However, he found it hard to pay any attention to the goods in front of him.

In spite of that, since these people had traveled a long way and they were members of the powerful Sea Trading Association, he could not help but give them something. After thinking it through, he spoke, “Alright, I’ll give you four blades of Derived Spiritual Rice. Leave these goods here!”

Upon hearing the good news, delight flashed across Liu Chai’s eyes as he expressed his gratitude, “Thank you, my lord. I will definitely bring better merchandise to trade with you in the future.”

Xiao Tian nodded upon hearing that. He took it as a chance to bond with a member of the Sea Trading Association.

“Follow me!”

Liu Chai signaled behind him before following Xiao Tian onto the island.

He tagged along behind Xiao Tian to the inner region of the island guarded by orcs and crossed a long bridge weaved from vines. Liu Chai and the others were surprised to find that there were many more spiritual fields in

the inner region. He spotted that the Sons of the Sea were planted in every single spiritual field and this was shocking to him.

While on the way, Liu Chai counted and noticed that there were four spiritual fields. If he were to include the spiritual field on the outer region of the island, there would be a total of five spiritual fields.

All of these are soul coins! Liu Chai could feel his heart pounding against his ribcage.

Liu Chai only realized how lucky he was when he noticed how heavily guarded the inner region of the island was compared to the outer region.

Liu Chai speculated that he could get away with stealing the Son of the Sea previously because the spiritual field on the outer region was not relocatable and no one would ever dare to mess around the territory controlled by the army of the Sea King, the overlord of the Void Ocean. Therefore, they had let their guard down.

Liu Chai and the others followed Xiao Tian to a ring-shaped bay. Xiao Tian stopped and commanded his subordinates, “Go and harvest 24 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice.”

After giving his order, anticipation flashed across Xiao Tian’s eyes, “My honorable guests, is it possible for your trading entity to accept a bounty quest? I’m searching for someone!”

# Chapter 98 - Xiao Tian'S Request

Liu Chai was dumbfounded upon hearing the bounty quest Xiao Tian spoke of.

To be honest, all the information he had on the Sea Trading Association was from a sea tribe during an island exploring trip.

As far as they knew, the Sea Trading Association was a massive joint organization. The association members travel around the sea to gather spiritual materials and treasures. The association members had a similar trait – each of them would definitely own a Specter Ship.

Upon finding out the trait of the members from the Sea Trading Association, Liu Chai got the idea of swindling by disguising as a trading entity.

However, he had no clue of anything regarding bounty quests which made him speechless for a moment.

Liu Chai pondered and said, “Lord Xiao Tian, what is your request?”

“It’s a rather infuriating matter to say. Truthfully, a treasure was found missing here on Insect Island. I would like to ask for the Demolition Traders’ help to find out which clan is the force behind the thieves!”

In Xiao Tian’s opinion, the Sea Trading Association had a strong background and their information-gathering network was spread around most territorial waters. If they would be willing to take up the quest, finding the thieves would be an easy task.

After all, he needed to find the Son of the Sea to be able to answer to the Sea King.

Liu Chai pretended to be calm while listening to Xiao Tian’s explanation but he was actually on cloud nine.

“Lord Xiao Tian, what kind of precious lost treasure needs our help? The reward we request will be over the odds!”

“The Son of the Sea!” Xiao Tian answered with a grim expression.

“What! How could it be the Son of the Sea? How dare the thieves steal a treasure as precious as such!” Liu Chai exclaimed.

“Indeed, would your trading entity be willing to take up this bounty quest? You only need to find out which clan the thieves belong to. As for the rest, I will take care of it myself!”

“There is still one thing which I do not understand. Why have you not designated men to guard a treasure as precious as the Son of the Sea? I could understand if it was snatched, but to have it stolen, I am indeed puzzled.”

Liu Chai nearly laughed out when he was asking the question but he held it in.

Xiao Tian’s face turned green as he listened to Liu Chai’s question.

He had definitely made sure that his precious treasures like the Sons of the Sea were guarded by his army. In fact, his few strongest orcs were the ones on shift to guard the treasures. However, no accidents had happened throughout the years and this led the orcs to let down their guard, which resulted in the situation today.

“The spiritual field is located at the edge of the island and I was being careless. Will the Demolition Traders be willing to accept this task?” instead of explaining further, Xiao Tian took a deep breath to calm himself down.

“So, about the reward...”

“You’ll get 20 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice as the deposit. You’ll get another 30 strands if you can find out which clan is behind it!” Xiao Tian was reluctant to offer the reward but he did it anyway.

He was well aware of the consequences of losing the Son of the Sea. He was also aware that members of the Sea Trading Association were all avaricious, they would not put any effort into a job if the reward was scanty. Therefore, Xiao Tian had no choice but to grit his teeth and make a good offer.

Liu Chai was overjoyed as he heard the reward that Xiao Tian was willing to offer.

He initially thought that they were only using the identity of a sea merchant to make a deal with Xiao Tian. By the time they were supposed to hand over the goods, he would find a chance to have them snuck away and let Xiao Tian lose everything.

As for their own safety afterward, Liu Chai and the rest were ready to risk their lives just to pull a fast one on Xiao Tian when they went after him. They never thought of leaving this place alive anyway.

However, Liu Chai wanted those 50 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice more than the four blades now.

The orc who went to grab the spiritual material returned soon after and handed the bag of Derived Spiritual Rice to Xiao Tian.

Xiao Tian opened the bag to have a quick glance before handing it over to Liu Chai.

“Will you take up the task? Here are 24 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice with 20 being the deposit. I will pay you with 30 more blades after the job is done!”

“Alright! We, the Demolition Traders will definitely bring you the thieves within three days!” Liu Chai said confidently.

Xiao Tian nodded.

As a matter of fact, Xiao Tian’s trust toward Liu Chai came from the huge Specter Warship which he had parked in the harbor.

The most obvious trait which could determine the ranking of a member of the Sea Trading Association would be their transportation mode.

Ordinary members of the Sea Trading Association would usually own a Specter Ship as their transport.

The Specter Warship Liu Chai had was usually owned only by members with higher rankings in the Sea Trading Association.

The crafting of a Specter Warship would require a high price as an abundance of materials would be needed and the warship would have outstanding power after completion. This made Xiao Tian think that a highly-ranked member like him would not pocket merely 20 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice.

However, little did he know, under Bei Li's settings, these Specter Warships were merely empty shells, not end products. It would require players to gather materials and build it up all on their own.

Liu Chai was thrilled as he stretched out his arms to receive the Derived Spiritual Rice from Xiao Tian. He then put up a message in the guild live chat channel.

“Brothers, hand over the goods to them. You can't make an omelet without breaking eggs! I shall gain more benefits from Xiao Tian.”

His men placed the two boxes down after receiving his orders.

Xiao Tian was delighted to hear Liu Chai's guarantee. He thought that he still had a chance to retrieve the Son of the Sea with the help of the Sea Trading Association's powerful information-gathering network.

After the deal was done, Liu Chai and his men returned to the harbor calmly while an orc led the way.

The spiritual fields and spiritual plants they saw along the way made them envious and they strived to take over this piece of land one day.

Liu Chai and his men removed their masks and burst out laughing after boarding the battleship and after having traveled a certain distance to make sure that those from Insect Island could no longer watch what they were up to.

“Xiao Tian is such an idiot, 24 spiritual materials! We’re rich! We’re rich!”

“Boss, why must we hand over those two boxes? The equipment and spiritual materials cost us a fortune,” one of the men exclaimed with distress.

“What a fool, that was a trap. Didn’t you hear what he said? We can have another 30 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice if we could find the thieves!”

“Where do we find the thieves?” he was dazed.

“Aren’t you and I the thieves that he’s looking for?” Liu Chai burst into laughter. He was already plotting his next move in his mind.

# Chapter 99 - The Excited Fool

The next day in the Void Ocean, Insect Island.

A Specter Warship was sailing toward the island from the sea afar. Liu Chai informed the orc who was guarding the harbor the intention of their visit upon their arrival.

Xiao Tian hurried over to the harbor as soon as he received the news.

Looking at the familiar figures of Liu Chai and his men, Xiao Tian was rather buzzed.

He knew that the Demolition Traders would not have returned the next day if the thieves who stole the Son of the Sea were not found.

“Have you found the thieves who stole the Son of the Sea?” Xiao Tian looked at Liu Chai and asked agitatedly.

Liu Chai nodded calmly, “Not only did I find the thieves, but I have also seized them for you.”

Liu Chai waved his hand toward his back while he spoke. Three players with heavy armor were then brought down from the battleship.

Looking at the three players who were chained up before him, Xiao Tian could not believe his eyes.

How could the thieves who stole the Son of the Sea be caught so easily? That was rather effortless. He thought the Demolition Traders came back with some news, it was totally unexpected to him that they had already caught the thieves.

“Boss, they should be it, there shouldn’t be any mistakes. They look quite similar to the thieves, they should belong to the same clan,” an orc who had blood stains all over his body and a badly beaten face stood out and said.



Xiao Tian looked at the three chained up players with a cold expression upon hearing what his subordinate said.

“Are you the ones who stole the Son of the Sea? Answer me!”

Xiao Tian went ahead to punch one of the players on his chest while asking.

Xiao Tian did not use much power on his punch, yet the player spat out blood, wailing in agony.

Watching how his underling, who had his sense of pain sealed away, making up such a good act, Liu Chai nodded with satisfaction silently.

These underlings were the few rather quick-witted ones from his guild. They were specifically chosen by Liu Chai to deceive Xiao Tian and to swindle the remaining 30 blades of spirit materials.

Xiao Tian then extended his hand to pull that player’s hair to lift his head, “Answer me! Are you the ones who stole the Son of the Sea?”

With a painful expression, the player spat a mouthful of blood toward Xiao Tian’s face, “It’s me, so what?”

Xiao Tian’s face got purple with rage upon hearing the player’s confession. However, he sensed that something was off right when he was about to continue questioning.

The player admitted too eagerly as if he had been waiting for him to question him.

This made Xiao Tian’s heart sink. He asked again, “There must be someone behind this, you must be a scapegoat. Tell me, who is the one behind the theft of the Son of the Sea?”

Upon hearing Xiao Tian’s question, Liu Chai could not help but send another message in the guild live chat channel.

“That’s right, let him suspect you. It would be best to let him think that there is a big organization behind you, you better put up a good act!”

The player looked toward Xiao Tian and laughed upon hearing what Liu Chai ordered, “What are you talking about? It’s just us. We snuck onto the island from the seaside and hid next to the spiritual field for a few hours. I took the opportunity to steal the Son of the Sea when the guards were changing shifts. My partner who stayed off was killed!”

“Oh, right, I even killed your son. What was his name again? Gou Dan, right?” the player continued with a sneer.

Xiao Tian was outraged. He raised his arm and slapped the player’s face until it was badly mutilated.

“It’s really you! How dare you, tell me where the Son of the Sea is now!”

Seeing how the player had provoked Xiao Tian’s anger, Liu Chai went on to send a message again on the guild live chat channel.

“Good one, carry on with your acting! You will have your share of the spiritual material!”

The player who was slapped was overjoyed as he heard that but he remained to look feeble.

“Son of the Sea? Too bad, it is already sold off by our boss. Do you want it? Go look for him by yourself!”

The player’s words provoked Xiao Tian to a great extent. He would have just killed the players off with one slap if they did not hold any clues.

“I knew it, there is someone behind this. Tell me who is your boss and I will let you off!” realizing how stubborn the player was on keeping his mouth shut, Xiao Tian changed his mode of questioning.

“You should worry about the other four Sons of the Sea on Insect Island instead. Trying to look for our boss? In your dreams!”

The player’s words gave Xiao Tian quite a scare as it made him realize that the organization behind the theft of the Son of the Sea seemed to be plotting their next steal. What made him even more distressed was the fact that this

person could even point out that there were four Sons of the Sea remaining on the island accurately.

A theft with plots and plans? A thought came across Xiao Tian's mind.

Xiao Tian was further enraged. He was not sure of what organization was behind it nor who would go this far in targeting him. Thinking of how they might plot to steal the remaining four Sons of the Sea, Xiao Tian felt uneasy and alerted at the same time.

He could still explain himself in front of the Sea King if only one Son of the Sea was lost. Although he might get beaten up badly, he could still keep his life.

However, Xiao Tian was clear that his only chance of survival was to flee from the Void Ocean if the remaining four Sons of the Sea were to be stolen as the Sea King would never let him off easily.

Xiao Tian was eager to find out who was the one plotting against the theft at that moment.

“Do you really think that I have no other ways to deal with you? We have plenty of means of extortion on Insect Island. You better speak the truth if you don't wish to suffer,” Xiao Tian refused to give up asking.

Yet, the three players remained stubborn as if they would rather die than give in.

Looking at the situation, Xiao Tian waved his hand and ordered his subordinates to detain those three players in the inner region of the island.

Xiao Tian cupped his hands before his chest showing a sign of respect toward Liu Chai after the three players had been taken away.

“The Demolition Traders really do live up to their name, you have my respect. If I may ask, can you take up another request from me?”

Liu Chai laughed in the guild live chat channel upon hearing those words.

“Brothers, look at that fool, he really fell for it! He even uttered nonsense about the Demolition Traders living up to its name as if he really knows! Ha! Ha! Ha!”

The guild members could not contain their laughter as they all cheered in the live chat.

“Lord Xiao Tian, to be frank, we have mustered a great deal of our guild’s information-gathering network. We found traces from the smallest clue and even went ahead to catch the thieves personally...”

Xiao Tian immediately understood what Liu Chai was trying to say and raised his hand to stop him from continuing although he had not finished speaking.

“100 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice. Find the mastermind behind this. I, Xiao Tian, will pay you the reward you deserve!”

Xiao Tian’s offer got the Demolition Guild members’ hearts pumping up.

Liu Chai nodded while acting calm.

“Since Lord Xiao Tian is so sincere, the Demolition Traders will definitely do our best!”

Xiao Tian had a smile on his face upon hearing what he said. He then took over the 30 blades of Derived Spiritual Rice prepared earlier from the hands of one of his subordinates and handed it over to Liu Chai.

“I, Xiao Tian, look forward to the Demolition Traders’ next visit!”

# Chapter 100 - Joint Operation

Liu Chai was all prepared to con Xiao Tian again.

Sure enough, having to worry about the safety of the four remaining Sons of the Sea he had in his hand, Xiao Tian got fooled again. He eagerly wanted to find out the person behind the robbery.

To his surprise, Xiao Tian was willing to give out a hundred pots of Derived Spiritual Rice as the bounty, which were worth as much as 50,000 soul coins. Liu Chai was very tempted by such a huge sum of money.

However, following his discussion with members of his guild, he came up with a new idea.

After careful consideration, he looked up Gu Yu on his friends list and added him.

Shortly after, a notification popped up, showing that his friend request had been accepted.

Gu Yu: “Why the sudden friend request? Does this mean that you are ready to accept my suggestion and merge your Demolition Officers into our Myth Guild?”

Liu Chai: “You wish! My guild is now stronger than ever, crushing your people is just a matter of time. Don’t be too arrogant!”

Gu Yu: “So? What’s the point of adding me? (laughing emoji)”

Liu Chai: “There’s this profitable deal that I can’t handle alone, do you want in?”

Gu Yu: “What kind of deal? Please don’t tell me that you want to sell soul coins to me, too. Anyway, I can take your entire stock if that’s your intention. (laughing emoji)”

Liu Chai: "..."

Liu Chai: "I found an island full of advanced spiritual materials, but its defense forces are extremely powerful. I want you to cooperate with me, and once it's done, we can split the prize!"

Gu Yu: "Fifty-fifty? (laughing emoji)"

Liu Chai: "Just so you know, there are four Sons of the Sea on this island. It's your honor that I'm offering you this opportunity. So come if you wish, you should know that you are not my only option!"

Upon hearing about the presence of the four Sons of the Sea, Gu Yu lost his usual composure in an instant: "Yes! Yes, I'm in! Where are you now? I'll go to you, let's sort this out face to face!"

.....

After getting Liu Chai's current location, Gu Yu rushed toward the coast of Liuli along with a few other guild members.

The Sons of the Sea were Epic level treasures, something that could only be obtained by luck. Hence, the offer was extremely attractive, even for someone like Gu Yu. He would never let such a chance slip away.

Upon meeting each other, Liu Chai shared all the information he had about Insect Island with Gu Yu, including how he obtained one Son of the Sea, and his subsequent tricking of Xiao Tian.

Gu Yu was staggered by what Liu Chai did on Insect Island.

But at the same time, he was quite excited. He had never thought that such a land full of treasures would exist. Now, he finally knew where Liu Chai had acquired his Son of the Sea.

"So how are we going to do this?"

Liu Chai nodded, "My idea is pretty simple. When the time comes, all of you will act as the masterminds behind the theft of the Son of the Sea. I will

then report your coordinates to Xiao Tian so that he would lead his army to surround you. We, the Demolition Officers, together with those that I have invited as support, will be the main force launching the attack on Insect Island, raiding the Field of Spirits when its defenses are at its weakest.”

After giving it some thought, Gu Yu felt that the plan was indeed workable, but there was just one thing that did not make sense.

“But from what you have told me, Xiao Tian’s army is tremendously powerful. The orcs that are left behind to protect the island should be very hard to defeat as well. Won’t it be tough for us to sweep into the island merely with the strength of the Demolition Guild?”

At this exact moment, numerous silhouettes appeared at a distance.

“Who said that you are the only one invited?” Wu Guoyi laughed as he walked toward them steadily, his signature greatsword strapped to his back.

“The Son of the Sea! I love it, I’m calling dibs!” Ye Xue’er also approached them at a steady pace, along with hundreds of her subordinates.

“Finders keepers, I want one, too!” Chen Ziyu’s voice came from the other side.

“You called so many people?” Gu Yu stared at Liu Chai, looking disappointed.

“Just as you said, the defense of Insect Island is extremely formidable! To be safe, we must unite all our forces. Once we have taken Insect Island, each guild will take twenty percent of the loot. As there are only four Sons of the Sea, the Demolition Guild will take one, and the remaining three will be distributed among the four guilds by means of drawing lots!”

“Since you already have one, why can’t you just be generous and let us split the remaining four?” Sun Qi, who was squatting beside Gu Yu, could not help but interrupt.

Liu Chai shrugged, “Being the initiator, it’s only natural for me to have dibs. I will leave it to you guys to decide whether you still want in, or not.”

Upon hearing this, the other four fell silent. As for now, only Liu Chai knew the location of Insect Island, thus he was in a position of power. After reconsidering the proposition, everyone decided to agree on the terms.

Following that, the five of them immediately started a discussion right there on the beach, plotting their plan of action.

As the result of an hour-long debate, they decided that the strongest guild among them – the Myth Guild, should be the bait. The other guilds would storm Insect Island after Xiao Tian led his army out.

Following the finalization of their plan, all five guilds started gathering manpower through their guild’s live chat channel, assembling players who were scattered around various areas.

To ensure maximum efficiency in their cooperation, the five guilds were connected to the same channel for easier communication, and to prevent unforeseen circumstances during the operation.

When they were all set, Liu Chai led his men to board their Demolition Warship, setting their course for Insect Island. Trailing far behind them were the Avengers Warship, the Guardian Angels Warship, and the Great Dragon Warship.

The members of the Myth Guild, on the other hand, headed directly toward the deserted Fallen Fish Island. Their plan was to camp there, getting themselves ready to face Xiao Tian’s army, which would be arriving at any possible moment.

For the first time ever, five guilds, with the combined strength of almost 5,000 people, started their coordinated strategic alliance.

.....



Arriving at Insect Island once again, the orcs were now able to recognize Liu Chai. Rather than being wary of him, they announced his arrival to Xiao Tian right away.

Xiao Tian quickly made his appearance at the pier.

“Any news?” Xiao Tian asked, his face lit up in anticipation.

Liu Chai nodded while pretending to be calm. “Good news, Island Owner Xiao Tian! We have discovered the forces behind the theft! However, I wasn’t able to capture them for you as their troops numbered around tens of thousands of people.”

Liu Chai had deliberately reported about ten times more than the actual number of the Myth Guild’s garrison, so that Xiao Tian would lead more manpower off the island.

“Terrific!” exhilarated by the news, Xiao Tian took two steps forward and patted Liu Chai on his shoulder.

“Where are these people? I will go and capture them personally! It’s just tens of thousands of people. Even if they have millions of men on this Void Ocean, we the Sea King Army, are still the ones in charge!”

Knowing that the wire-pullers had been found, Xiao Tian seemed to be elated.

He was not afraid of the strength of his enemy at all. The real pain in the neck was the fact that he could not find out who was behind the theft.

“This force must have come from the outer territorial waters as they are now stationed on Fallen Fish Island. If you want to catch the masterminds, time is of the essence. They seemed to have noticed me when I was scouting them out, so they might shift their base to a new island at any moment.”

Xiao Tian nodded, “Good! I, Xiao Tian, hereby express my utmost appreciation for the assistance provided by the Demolition Traders. Wait for

me here, I will reward you with a hundred pots of Derived Spiritual Rice after I have captured the masterminds.”

Liu Chai nodded calmly, “By the way, Island Owner, I must remind you that this force is highly mysterious. Besides that, their strength is unfathomable. You have to be careful.”

At this, Xiao Tian put on his serious face.

“I am aware of this, too. I have tried every single trick I had on the three thieves you brought here. Still, we weren’t able to extract any useful information out of them. I can’t figure out what creatures they are. The thing that surprised me the most was that once they were dead, they turned into black fog and disappeared, not leaving a soul behind. This is absolutely unbelievable!”

Liu Chai nodded, “To ensure that the thieves can be taken down, do you need us to lend you some troops from our side?”

Liu Chai certainly did not intend to lend out his people, but he wanted to provoke Xiao Tian by consistently emphasizing that the hidden forces on Fallen Fish Island were indeed incredibly powerful.

Nevertheless, Xiao Tian was as confident as ever.

“On this Void Sea, we the Sea King Army, have never feared these foreign forces! Even a dragon would still need to show us its respect! I can handle this!”

“Guards, assemble the Orc Army! Follow my lead out to the sea and we shall capture the culprits behind the scene!”

# The Boss

## Behind The Game

*by Slashing Blade*

W E B N O V E L

